Γ. ΓΙΑΝΝΑΚΟΠΟΥΛΟΥ

ΑΓΓΛΙΚΑ ΓΙΑ ΟΛΟΥΣ

ΑΠΟ ΤΟ ΑΛΦΑ ΩΣ ΤΟ PROFICIENCY ΤΟΥ MICHIGAN

Michigan
Press

Π. ΚΟΥΤΣΟΥΜΠΟΣ Α. Ε.

Γ. ΓΙΑΝΝΑΚΟΠΟΥΛΟΥ

ΑΓΓΛΙΚΑ ΓΙΑ ΟΛΟΥΣ

ΑΠΟ ΤΟ ΑΛΦΑ ΩΣ ΤΟ
PROFICIENCY
ΤΟΥ MICHIGAN

ΤΟΜΟΣ Β

Michigan
Press

ΕΚΔΟΤΙΚΑΙ ΒΙΟΜΗΧΑΝΙΚΑΙ ΕΠΙΧΕΙΡΗΣΕΙΣ
Π. ΚΟΥΤΣΟΥΜΠΟΣ Α.Ε.
ΧΑΡ. ΤΡΙΚΟΥΠΗ 17-19, ΑΘΗΝΑΙ, ☎ 36.33.738

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 174

I was playing football last evening.
He was writing a letter in the afternoon.
She was singing a song in the morning.
We were walking to the theatre last Sunday.
You were reading this book yesterday.
They were repeating the sentences many times yesterday.
You were waiting for Mary during breakfast.
She was flying to Athens last Tuesday.
I was studying my English lesson last night.
They were driving carefully last year.
You were waiting for the teacher.
He was repeating the vocabulary.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 175

I was not playing football last evening.
He was not writing a letter in the afternoon.
She was not singing a song in the morning.
We were not walking to the theatre last Sunday.
You were not reading this book yesterday.
They were not repeating the sentences many times yesterday.
You were not waiting for Mary during breakfast.
She was not flying to Athens last Tuesday.
I was not studying my English lesson last night.
They were not driving carefully last year.
You were not waiting for the teacher.
He was not repeating the vocabulary.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 176

Was I playing football last evening?
Was he writing a letter in the afternoon?
Was she singing a song in the morning?
Were we walking to the theatre last Sunday?
Were you reading this book yesterday?
Were they repeating the sentences many times yesterday?
Were you waiting for Mary during breakfast?
Was she flying to Athens last Tuesday?
Was I studying my English lesson last night?
Were they driving carefully last year?
Were you waiting for the teacher?
Was he repeating the vocabulary?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 177

We have seen that movie.
That man has cut his hand.
She has torn her new blouse.
The meeting has begun already.
They have been here for six months.
I have written three letters to him.
Charles has brought his friend with him.
Elizabeth has finished the work already.
The Smiths have bought a new house here.
He has fallen on these steps several times.
He has been in this country for a long time.
They have left several messages for him.
The girls have thanked Mrs. Wilson for her help.
He has sold that old car.
He and the boys have reached Houston, Texas already.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 178

The boys have told him about it.
The students have done that lesson.

Charles has had his lunch already.
She has given it to her sister already.
She has forgotten the name of the song.
Betty and Pat have done the homework already.
We have followed their directions carefully.
I have heard that song several times.
His English has improved a great deal.
Mrs. Wilson has spoken to Mary about it.
I have flown in an airplane only two times.
Mr. Brown has taught English for ten years.
We have spent a great deal of money already.
She has copied all of the words into her notebook.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 179

They use that one.
They used that one.
They will use that one.
They have used that one.

We do it together.
We did it together.
We shall do it together.
We have done it together.

He needs a new one.
He needed a new one.
He will need a new one.
He has needed a new one.

They have enought time.
They had enough time.
They will have enough time.
They have had enough time.

We pay many bills.
We paid many bills.
We shall pay many bills.
We have paid many bills.

I do all of the lessons.
I did all of the lessons.
I shall do all of the lessons.
I have done all of the lessons.

He sits in the dining-room.
He sat in the dinig-room.
He will sit in the dining-room.
He has sat in the dining-room.

Mr. Wilson has two cars.
Mr. Wilson had two cars.
Mr. Wilson will have two cars.
Mr. Wilson has had two cars.

Mrs. Brown translates books.
Mrs. Brown translated books.
Mrs. Brown will translate books.
Mrs. Brown has translated books.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 180

They do not use that one.
They did not use that one.
They will not use that one.
They have not used that one.

We do not do it together.
We did not do it together.

We shall not do it together.
We have not done it together.

He does not need a new one.
He did not need a new one.
He will not need a new one.
He has not needed a new one.

They do not have enough time.
They did not have enough time.
They will not have enough time.
They have not had enough time.

We do not pay many bills.
We did not pay many bills.
We shall not pay many bills.
We have not paid many bills.

I do not do all of the lessons.
I did not do all of the lessons.
I shall not do all of the lessons.
I have not done all of the lessons.

He does not sit in the dining-room.
He did not sit in the dining-room.
He will not sit in the dining-room.
He has not sat in the dining-room.

Mr. Wilson does not have two cars.
Mr. Wilson did not have two cars.
Mr. Wilson will not have two cars.
Mr. Wilson has not had two cars.

Mrs. Brown does not translate books.

Mrs. Brown did not translate books.
Mrs. Brown will not translate books.
Mrs. Brown has not translated books.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 181

Do they use that one?
Did they use that one?
Will they use that one?
Have they used that one?

Do we do it together?
Did we do it together?
Shall we do it together?
Have we done it together?

Does he need a new one?
Did he need a new one?
Will he need a new one?
Has he needed a new one?

Do they have enough time?
Did they have enough time?
Will they have enough time?
Have they had enough time?

Do we pay many bills?
Did we pay many bills?
Shall we pay many bills?
Have we paid many bills?

Do I do all of the lessons?
Did I do all of the lessons?
Shall I do all of the lessons?

Have I done all of the lessons?

Does he sit in the dining - room?
Did he sit in the dining - room?
Will he sit in the dining - room?
Has he sat in the dining - room?

Does Mr. Wilson have two cars?
Did Mr. Wilson have two cars?
Will Mr. Wilson have two cars?
Has Mr. Wilson had two cars?

Does Mrs. Brown translate books?
Did Mrs. Brown translate books?
Will Mrs. Brown translate books?
Has Mrs. Brown translated books?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 182

She has read that article.
Has she read that article?
She has not read that article.
I have been there before.
Have I been there before?
I have not been there before.
We have eaten there.
Have we eaten there?
We have not eaten there.
I have lost my new pen.
Have I lost my new pen?
I have not lost my new pen.
He has heard the good news.
Has he heard the good news?
He has not heard the good news.
The Smiths have bought a new house.
Have the Smiths bought a new house?

The Smiths haven' t bought a new house.
I have flown across the Atlantic.
Have I flown across the Atlantic?
I have not flown across the Atlantic.
We have learned many new words.
Have we learned many new words?
We have not learned many new words.
They have had a good time.
Have they had a good time?
They have not had a good time.

ΑΡΝΗΤΙΚΗ ΔΙΑΤΑΓΗ

Ἔχουμε μάθει ὥς τώρα τὴν Προστακτικὴ στοὺς τρεῖς τύπους της. Ἂς τὰ ἐπαναλάβουμε:

1) Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ δώσουμε **διαταγή**, χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος, χωρὶς ὑποκείμενο, π.χ. : write = γράψτε.

2. Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ἐκφράσουμε **παράκληση**, βάζουμε μπροστὰ τὴ λέξη **please**, π.χ. : please, write = παρακαλῶ, γράψτε.

3. Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ διατυπώσουμε προτροπή, βάζουμε μπροστὰ τὴν ἔκφραση **let's**, π.χ. : let's write = ἂς γράψουμε.

Αὐτὰ γιὰ τὴν Προστακτικὴ στὸν καταφατικό της τύπο.

Ἂς δοῦμε τώρα, τί γίνεται καὶ μὲ τὸν ἀρνητικὸ τύπο αὐτῆς τῆς ἐγκλίσεως: Ἔχουμε κι ἐδῶ τοὺς τρεῖς τύπους, τὸν τύπο τῆς ἀρνητικῆς διαταγῆς, τὸν τύπο τῆς ἀρνητικῆς παρακλήσεως καὶ τὸν τύπο τῆς ἀρνητικῆς προτροπῆς.

Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ σχηματίσουμε μιὰ **ἀρνητικὴ διαταγή**, χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴν ἔκφραση don't (ντοντ) πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος, π.χ.:

don't write = μὴ γράψετε.

Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ μιλήσουμε μὲ περισσότερη εὐγένεια ἢ ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ **παρακαλέσουμε** κάποιον γιὰ κάτι, προτάσσουμε τὴν ἔκφραση please, π.χ. :

please don't write = παρακαλῶ, μὴ γράψετε.

Τέλος όταν θέλουμε νὰ **προτρέψουμε** νὰ μὴ γίνη κάτι, βάζουμε μπροστὰ στὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος, δηλαδὴ μπροστὰ στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο, τὴν ἔκφραση let's not, π.χ. :

let's not write = ἂς μὴ γράψουμε.

Νὰ τώρα μερικὰ παραδείγματα, γιὰ νὰ γίνουν περισσότερο κατανοητά, ὅσα εἴπαμε πιὸ πάνω :

Examples:

Don't wait for him; he is sleeping = μὴ τὸν περιμένης, αὐτὸς κοιμᾶται.
Please don't wait for him; he is sleeping = παρακαλῶ, μὴ τὸν περιμένης, αὐτὸς κοιμᾶται.
Don't forget your ticket (τίκετ) = μὴ ξεχάσης τὸ εἰσιτήριό σου.
Please don't forget your ticket = παρακαλῶ, μὴ ξεχάσης τὸ εἰσιτήριό σου.
Let's not forget our tickets = ἂς μὴ ξεχάσουμε τὰ εἰσιτήριά μας.
Don't practice your French (φρεντch); practice your English = μὴ ἐξασκεῖς τὰ γαλλικά σου, ἐξάσκησε τὰ ἀγγλικά σου.
Let's not practice our French; let's practice our English = ἂς μὴ ἐξασκήσουμε τὰ γαλλικά μας, ἂς ἐξασκήσουμε τὰ ἀγγλικά μας.
Don't talk (τοκ) about the lessons; talk about dresses (ντρέσιζ) = μὴ μιλᾶς (μὴ κουβεντιάζεις) γιὰ τὰ μαθήματα, μίλησε γιὰ φορέματα.
Please don't talk about the lessons = παρακαλῶ , μὴ μιλᾶς γιὰ τὰ μαθήματα.
Let's not talk about the lessons; let's talk about dresses = ἂς μὴ μιλήσουμε γιὰ τὰ μαθήματα, ἂς μιλήσουμε γιὰ φορέματα.
Don't listen to the radio; it is late = μὴν ἀκοῦς ραδιόφωνο, εἶναι ἀργά.
Let's not listen to the radio; let's watch the television = ἂς μὴ ἀκούσουμε ραδιόφωνο, ἂς παρακολουθήσουμε τὴν τηλεόραση.
Please, don't stay at home; let's go to the movies = παρακαλῶ, μὴ μείνετε στὸ σπίτι. Ἂς πᾶμε στὸν κινηματογράφο.

ΟΙ ΤΥΠΟΙ ΤΟΥ OTHER

Τὸ **other** (άδερ) = ἄλλος -η -ο, εἶναι μέσα στὴν πρόταση ἄλλοτε ἐπίθετο κι ἄλλοτε ἀντωνυμία.

Ὅταν τὸ other εἶναι ἐπίθετο, βρίσκεται πάντοτε μπροστὰ ἀπὸ ουσια-

στικό. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ εἶναι ἀμετάβλητο, δὲν παίρνει δηλαδὴ **-s** στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, π.χ. :

the other boys = τὰ ἄλλα ἀγόρια

Ὅταν ὅμως δὲν βρίσκεται μπροστὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικό, ἀλλὰ ἀναπληρώνει τὸ οὐσιαστικό, τότε εἶναι ἀντωνυμία. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ παίρνει **-s** στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, π.χ. :

the others = οἱ ἄλλοι

Οἱ ἐκφράσεις **the other** και **the others** ἀναφέρονται σὲ ὁρισμένα πρόσωπα ἢ πράγματα. Ἀντίθετα ἡ ἔκφραση others, χωρὶς ἄρθρο, φανερώνει πρόσωπα ἢ πράματα σὲ γενικὴ ὅμως ἔννοια.

Ἡ λέξη **another** (ενάδερ) εἶναι συνδυασμὸς τῶν λέξεων an καὶ other. Τὸ another φανερώνει κάτι περισσότερο ἢ καὶ κάτι τὸ διαφορετικό. Ὄχι ἁπλῶς ἄλλος -η -ο. Ὅπως κι ἡ λέξη other, ἔτσι κι ἡ λέξη another εἶναι ἄλλοτε ἐπίθετο κι ἄλλοτε ἀντωνυμία. Ἰσχύουν δὲ καὶ γι' αὐτὴν ὅσα εἴπαμε γιὰ τὴ λέξη other. Δηλαδὴ καὶ τὸ another εἶναι ἐπίθετο, ὅταν προηγῆται οὐσιαστικοῦ, ὁπότε μένει καὶ ἀμετάβλητο. Εἶναι δὲ ἀντωνυμία, ὅταν δὲν προηγῆται οὐσιαστικοῦ, ὁπότε παίρνει ἕνα **-s** στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό.

Examples :

There are three boys in this picture; one boy is Kostas, the **other** boys are Tom and George = ὑπάρχουν τρία ἀγόρια σ' αὐτὴ τὴν εἰκόνα. Τὸ ἕνα ἀγόρι εἶναι ὁ Κώστας, τὰ ἄλλα ἀγόρια εἶναι ὁ Θωμᾶς κι ὁ Γιῶργος.
Ἐδῶ το **other** εἶναι ἐπίθετο, γιατὶ προηγεῖται τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ boys. Γι' αὐτὸ μένει ἀμετάβλητο.
There are three boys in this picture; the first boy is Kostas, the others are Tom and George = ὑπάρχουν τρία ἀγόρια σ' αὐτὴν τὴν εἰκόνα. Τὸ πρῶτο ἀγόρι εἶναι ὁ Κώστας, τὰ ἄλλα εἶναι ὁ Θωμᾶς κι ὁ Γιῶργος.
Ἐδῶ τὸ **others** εἶναι ἀντωνυμία, γιατὶ δὲν προηγεῖται οὐσιαστικοῦ. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ πῆρε **-s** στὸν πληθυντικό.
I have one ticket for the game; I need another ticket (ἢ another one) for my sister = ἔχω ἕνα εἰσιτήριο γιὰ τὸ μάτς. Χρειάζομαι ἀκόμη ἕνα εἰσιτήριο (ἢ ἀκόμη ἕνα) γιὰ τὴν ἀδελφή μου.
Ἐδῶ ἡ λέξη **another** δείχνει: κάτι περισσότερο (ἀκόμη ἕνα εἰσιτήριο).

One boy ran with the ball; another boy threw the ball; another kicked the ball = ἕνα ἀγόρι ἔτρεξε μὲ τὴ μπάλα, ἕνα ἄλλο ἀγόρι πέταξε (ἔρριξε) τὴ μπάλα, ἕνα ἄλλο κλώτσησε τὴ μπάλα.

Ἐδῶ ἡ λέξη **another** σημαίνει: κάτι διαφορετικὸ (ἕνα ἄλλο ἀγόρι).

Some people walked to the game; **other people** went by bus; **others drove** = μερικοὶ ἄνθρωποι πῆγαν μὲ τὰ πόδια στὸ μάτς. Ἄλλοι ἄνθρωποι πῆγαν μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο. Ἄλλοι ὁδήγησαν.

Ἐδῶ οἱ λέξεις **other** people καὶ **others** ἀναφέρονται σὲ πρόσωπα, ὄχι ὅμως ὁρισμένα, ἀλλὰ σὲ γενικὴ ἔννοια. Στὴν πρώτη περίπτωση (other people) τὸ other εἶναι ἐπίθετο, γιατὶ προηγεῖται οὐσιαστικοῦ, κι ἔμεινε ἀμετάβλητο. Στὴ δεύτερη (other) εἶναι ἀντωνυμία καὶ πῆρε **-s** στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό.

What do you know about the other students in your class? = τί ξέρεις γιὰ τοὺς ἄλλους μαθητὰς στὴν τάξη σου;

One student wants to be a doctor; another student wants to be a lawyer and another wants to be a chemist; I don't know much about the others = ἕνας σπουδαστὴς θέλει νὰ γίνη γιατρός. Ἕνας ἄλλος σπουδαστὴς θέλει νὰ γίνη δικηγόρος κι ἕνας ἄλλος θέλει νὰ γίνη χημικός. Δὲν ξέρω πολλὰ γιὰ τοὺς ἄλλους.

ΜΕΤΑΦΟΡΙΚΑ ΜΕΣΑ

Στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα μπροστὰ ἀπὸ ὅλα τὰ μεταφορικὰ μέσα μεταχειριζόμαστε τὴν πρόθεση **by**, π.χ.:

by train = μὲ τραῖνο
by plane = μὲ ἀεροπλάνο
by taxi (ταέξι) = μὲ ταξὶ
by car = μὲ αὐτοκίνητο κ.λ.π.
by boat (μπόουτ) = μὲ καράβι
by bus = μὲ λεωφορεῖο
by ferry boat = μὲ πορθμεῖο

Μόνο γιὰ δυὸ μεταφορικὰ μέσα δὲν χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴν πρόθεση **by**, ἀλλὰ τὴν πρόθεση **on.** Αὐτὰ εἶναι :

on foot = μὲ τὰ πόδια
on horseback = μὲ ἄλογο

Προσοχή :

α) Οἱ Ἄγγλοι δὲν λὲν «μὲ τὰ πόδια», ἀλλὰ «μὲ τὸ πόδι» (on foot).

β) Οἱ Ἄγγλοι λένε on horseback (hόρσμπαεκ), δηλαδὴ πάνω στὴν πλάτη τοῦ ἀλόγου κι ὄχι on horse, δηλαδὴ πάνω στὸ ἄλογο.

Examples :

With what do you like to travel? μὲ τί σ' ἀρέσει νὰ ταξιδεύῃς;
I like to travel by car = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ ταξιδεύω μὲ αὐτοκίνητο.
Mary went to school by bus = ἡ Μαίρη πῆγε στὸ σχολεῖο μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
Some students went to the game by bus and others on foot = μερικοὶ σπουδασταὶ πῆγαν στὸν ἀγῶνα μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο κι ἄλλοι μὲ τὰ πόδια.
Mr. Galanis went to Athens by plane = ὁ κ. Γαλάνης πῆγε στὴν Ἀθήνα μὲ ἀεροπλάνο.

ΑΝΩΜΑΛΑ ΡΗΜΑΤΑ

say (σέϊ)	**said** (σεντ)	**said** (σεντ)	=	λέγω
choose (τchouζ)	**chose** (τchόουζ)	**chosen** (τchόζεν)	=	διαλέγω
find ((φάϊντ)	**found** (φάουντ)	**found** (φάουντ)	=	βρίσκω
get (γκετ)	**got** (γκοτ)	**got** καὶ **gotten** (γκοτ καὶ γκότεν)	=	παίρνω
can (κaεν)	**could** (κουντ)	—	=	μπορῶ
think (θινκ)	**thought** (θόουτ)	**thought** (θόουτ)	=	σκέπτομαι
put (πουτ)	**put** (πουτ)	**put** (πουτ)	=	βάζω, θέτω
take (τέϊκ)	**took** (τουκ)	**taken** (τέϊκεν)	=	παίρνω
wear (γουὲρ)	**wore** (γουὸρ)	**worn** (γουὸρν)	=	φορῶ

VERY -TOO

Ἡ λέξη **very** (βέρι) σημαίνει «πολύ». Ἡ λέξη **too** (του) ἔχει περισσότερες ἀπὸ μιὰ σημασίες.

Ὅταν τὸ **too** βρίσκεται στὸ τέλος μιᾶς προτάσεως, καὶ μάλιστα ὕστερα ἀπὸ ἕνα κόμμα, σημαίνει «ἐπίσης». Θὰ τύχῃ ὅμως τὸ **too** νὰ τὸ συναντήσουμε καὶ μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Τότε ἡ σημασία του ἀλλάζει καὶ τὸ μεταφράζουμε: «πολύ, πάρα πολύ», ὅπως καὶ τὸ very.

῾Υπάρχει ὅμως μιὰ σοβαρὴ διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὶς δύο αὐτὲς λέξεις, τόσο σοβαρὴ ποὺ πολλὲς φορὲς ἡ πρόταση μὲ τὴ μιὰ λέξη σημαίνει τὸ ἀντίθετο ἀπὸ ὅ,τι σημαίνει ἡ ἴδια πρόταση μὲ τὴν ἄλλη λέξη.

Τὸ **very** φανερώνει ἕναν ὑψηλὸ βαθμό, ποὺ εἶναι ὡστόσο ἐπιθυμητὸς καὶ δεκτός. Ἔχει δηλαδὴ καταφατικὴ ἔννοια, ἀναφέρεται σὲ κάτι, ποὺ τὸ θέλουμε καὶ τὸ παραδεχόμαστε.

Ἀντίθετα τὸ **too** μέσα στὴν πρόταση (μὲ τὴν ἔννοια «πολὺ») φανερώνει μιὰ ὑπερβολή, ἕναν πολὺ ὑψηλὸ βαθμό, ποὺ δὲν εἶναι ἐπιθυμητὸς καὶ δεκτὸς στὸν ὁμιλητή. Ἔχει δηλαδὴ ἀρνητικὴ ἔννοια, δείχνει κάτι ποὺ δὲν τὸ θέλουμε καὶ δὲν τὸ παραδεχόμαστε. Τὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα θὰ μᾶς βοηθήσουν νὰ κατανοήσουμε τὴ διαφορὰ καὶ νὰ μὴ κάνουμε σύγχυση —καὶ λάθος— στὴ χρήση τῶν δυὸ αὐτῶν λέξεων.

Examples :

This coat is very practical (πράκτικαλ). I can wear it with all my suits = αὐτὸ τὸ πανωφόρι εἶναι πολὺ πρακτικό. Μπορῶ νὰ τὸ φορῶ μὲ ὅλα μου τὰ κοστούμια.

Ἐδῶ τὸ coat ἔχει καταφατικὴ ἔννοια. Δείχνει κάτι, ποὺ τὸ θέλουμε καὶ τὸ παραδεχόμαστε.

That brown coat is too small, I can't wear it = ἐκεῖνο τὸ καφὲ πανωφόρι εἶναι πάρα πολὺ μικρό, δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τὸ φορέσω.

Ἐδῶ ἡ ἔννοια εἶναι ἀρνητική. Δείχνει κάτι, ποὺ δὲν τὸ θέλουμε καὶ δὲν τὸ παραδεχόμαστε.

Mr. Smith speaks very fast but I underſtand him= ὁ κύριος Σμὶθ μιλάει πολὺ γρήγορα, ἀλλὰ τὸν καταλαβαίνω.

Ἐδῶ ἡ ἔννοια εἶναι καταφατική. Γι' αὐτὸ ἔχουμε very.

Mrs. Smith speaks too fast. I don't understand her = ἡ κυρία Σμὶθ μιλάει πάρα πολὺ γρήγορα. Δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τήν καταλάβω.

Ἐδῶ ἡ ἔννοια εἶναι ἀρνητική. Γι' αὐτὸ ἔχουμε too κι ὄχι very. Ἐπίσης :

Mrs. Smith speaks too fast for me to understand her=ἡ κυρία Σμὶθ μιλάει πάρα πολὺ γρήγορα γιὰ μένα, γιὰ νὰ τὴν καταλάβω (δηλαδὴ δὲν τὴν καταλαβαίνω).

He arrived very late but we waited for him = ἔφθασε πολὺ ἀργά, ἀλλὰ τὸν περιμέναμε.

He arrived too late: we did not wait for him = ἔφθασε παρα πολὺ ἀργά. Δὲν τὸν περιμέναμε.

He arrived too late to go with us = ἔφθασε πάρα πολὺ ἀργὰ γιὰ νὰ πάη μαζί μας (δηλαδὴ δὲν πῆγε μαζί μας).
This hat is very expensive but it is beautiful = αὐτὸ τὸ καπέλο εἶναι πολὺ ἀκριβό, ἀλλὰ εἶναι ὡραῖο (καὶ ἐπομένως θὰ τὸ ἀγοράσω).
This hat is too expensive for me =αὐτὸ τὸ καπέλο εἶναι πάρα πολὺ ἀκριβὸ γιὰ μένα (καὶ ἐπομένως δὲν θὰ τὸ ἀγοράσω).
It was very late when we went there= ἦταν πολὺ ἀργά, ὅταν πήγαμε ἐκεῖ. (δηλαδὴ ἦταν ἀργά, ἀλλὰ πάντως πήγαμε).
It is too late for us to go there now = εἶναι πάρα πολὺ ἀργὰ γιὰ μᾶς γιὰ νὰ πᾶμε ἐκεῖ τώρα (δηλαδὴ δὲν θὰ πᾶμε).

ΑΜΕΣΟ ΚΑΙ ΕΜΜΕΣΟ ΑΝΤΙΚΕΙΜΕΝΟ

Μερικὰ ρήματα, ὅπως τὸ like = συμπαθῶ, μ' ἀρέσει, buy = ἀγοράζω, get = παίρνω, give = δίνω, make = φτιάχνω, show (chóou) = δείχνω, write = γράφω, ἔχουν συχνὰ δυὸ ἀντικείμενα, ἕνα ἄμεσο κι ἕνα ἔμμεσο. Και τὸ μὲν ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ εἶναι συνήθως ἕνα πρᾶμα (coat, umbrella, book), τὸ δὲ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο εἶναι ἕνα πρόσωπο (John, George, Ann). Τί εἶναι ὅμως τὸ ἄμεσο καὶ τί τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο;

Ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο εἶναι τὸ οὐσιαστικό, ποὺ σ' αὐτὸ μεταβιβάζεται (μεταβαίνει) ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ρήματος. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ τὰ ρήματα, ποὺ ἔχουν ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο λέγονται **μεταβατικὰ** ρήματα. (transitive verbs), π. χ.:

John kicked **the ball.**

The ball εἶναι ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, γιατὶ σ' αὐτὸ μεταβιβάζεται ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ρήματος kick = κλωτσῶ.

Ἐπίσης:

Mary enjoyed **the party**.

The party εἶναι ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, γιατὶ σ' αὐτὸ μεταβιβάζεται ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ρήματος enjoy = ἀπολαμβάνω.

Τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο λέγεται ἀγγλικὰ direct object of the verb.

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπὸ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο ἔχουμε μὲ μερικὰ ρήματα καὶ τὸ **ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο.**

Τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (indirect object of the verb) δείχνει γιὰ χάρη ἢ πρὸς ζημία ποιοῦ προσώπου γίνεται ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ρήματος. Στὴν ἀρχαία

ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα συνήθως τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο ἀποδίδεται μὲ δοτικὴ προσωπικὴ (χαριστική, ἀντιχαριστικὴ κ. λ. π.).

Νὰ ἕνα παράδειγμα προτάσεως μὲ ἄμεσο καὶ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο:

I give George a gift for his birthday = δίνω στὸ Γιῶργο ἕνα δῶρο γιὰ τὰ γενέθλιά του.

Στὸ παραπάνω παράδειγμα ἡ λέξη George εἶναι τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (indirect object), ἐνῶ ἡ λέξη gift εἶναι τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (direct object). Γιατὶ ἡ λέξη George δείχνει **σὲ ποιὸν** (ἢ γιὰ χάρη ποιοῦ) δίνω τὸ δῶρο, ἐνῶ ἡ λέξη gift δείχνει **τί** δίνω, δηλαδὴ ποῦ μεταβιβάζεται ἄμεσα ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ρήματος.

Ὅταν ἔχουμε καὶ ἄμεσο καὶ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, πρέπει νὰ ξέρουμε, ὅτι **τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο προηγεῖται κανονικὰ τοῦ ἀμέσου ἀντικειμένου**, π. χ.:

He showed Mr. Smith the coats = ἔδειξε τὰ πανωφόρια στὸν κύριο Σμίθ.

Τὸ Mr. Smith εἶναι τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο καὶ μπῆκε πρῶτο. Τὸ coats εἶναι ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο καὶ μπῆκε δεύτερο.

She bought Ann the umbrella = ἀγόρασε τὴν ὀμπρέλλα γιὰ τὴν Ἄννα.

Ἡ λέξη Ann εἶναι τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο καὶ μπαίνει ἀμέσως μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα. Ἡ λέξη umbrella εἶναι ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο καὶ μπῆκε δεύτερο.

Ἀντὶ ὅμως γιὰ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, τὸ ἴδιο ρῆμα ἔχει συχνὰ μιὰ φράση, ἕναν ἐμπρόθετο προσδιορισμὸ μὲ τὶς προθέσεις **to** ἢ **for**. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ ὁ ἐμπρόθετος προσδιορισμός, ποὺ ἀντικατέστησε τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, **μπαίνει μετὰ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο**. Δὲν προηγεῖται δηλαδή, ἀλλὰ μπαίνει ὕστερα, π. χ.:

He showed the coats to Mr. Smith = ἔδειξε τὰ πανωφόρια στὸν κ. Σμίθ.

Ἡ ἔκφραση **to Mr. Smith**, ἂν κι ἔχῃ τὴ θέση τοῦ ἐμμέσου ἀντικειμένου, μπῆκε μετὰ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, γιατὶ ἔχει μπροστὰ πρόθεση (**to** Mr. Smith).

She bought the umbrella for Ann = ἀγόρασε τὴν ὀμπρέλλα γιὰ τὴν Ἄννα.

Κι ἐδῶ ἡ ἔκφραση **for Ann**, ἂν κι ἔχῃ τὴ θέση τοῦ ἐμμέσου ἀντικειμένου, μπῆκε μετὰ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, γιατὶ ἔχει μπροστὰ πρόθεση (**for** Ann).

Μερικὰ ρήματα, ὅπως τὸ explain = ἐξηγῶ, repeat = ἐπαναλαμβάνω, παίρνουν πάντοτε μιά φράση μὲ to ἢ for ἀντὶ γιὰ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο. Δηλαδὴ δὲν παίρνουν ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, ἀλλὰ ἕναν ἐμπρόθετο προσδιορισμό, ποὺ ἔχει τὴ θέση ἐμμέσου ἀντικειμένου, π. χ.:

Explain that sentence **to me** = ἐξήγησε ἐκείνη τὴν πρόταση σὲ μένα.
Repeat that word **for me** = ἐπανάλαβε ἐκείνη τὴ λέξη γιὰ μένα.

Καθὼς βλέπετε, δὲν λέμε: explain me that sentence, ἀλλὰ explain that sentence to me.

Ἐπίσης δὲν λέμε repeat me that word, ἀλλὰ repeat that word for me.

Ὅταν τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο εἶναι ἀντωνυμία, τότε γιὰ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο χρησιμοποιεῖται πάντοτε μιὰ φράση μὲ τὸ **to** ἢ τὸ **for**, π. χ.:

She bought it for Ann = ἀγόρασε αὐτὸ γιὰ τὴν Ἄννα.

Δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ ποῦμε: She bought Ann it, γιατὶ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο it εἶναι ἀντωνυμία. Ὑποχρεωτικὰ θὰ ἔχουμε ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο μὲ πρόθεση καὶ θὰ ποῦμε:

She bought it for Ann.

Examples:

The clerk showed Mr. Brown the brown coat = ὁ ὑπάλληλος ἔδειξε στὸν κ. Μπράουν τὸ καφὲ πανωφόρι ἢ the clerk showed him the brown coat. Εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο πρᾶμα.
He showed the brown coats to Mr. Brown ἢ he showed them to him.
Mrs. Brown bought Ann a new dress = ἡ κυρία Brown ἀγόρασε γιὰ τὴν Ἄννα ἕνα καινούργιο φόρεμα.
She bought the red dress for Ann.
She bought it for Ann.
I bought my sister a book = ἀγόρασα γιὰ τὴν ἀδελφή μου ἕνα βιβλίο.
Please give me your name and address = παρακαλῶ, δῶσε μου τὸ ὄνομά σου καὶ τὴ διεύθυνσή σου.
Please repeat that address for me = παρακαλῶ, ἐπανάλαβε αὐτὴ τὴν διεύθυνση γιὰ μένα.
Ann said: «please get me a film for my camera» = Ἡ Ἄννα εἶπε «σᾶς παρακαλῶ, πάρτε μου ἕνα φὶλμ γιὰ τὴν φωτογραφική μου μηχανή.

Her mother bought her a new hat = ἡ μητέρα της τῆς ἀγόρασε ἕνα καινούργιο καπέλο.

Why did Tom give Ann those flowers? = γιατὶ ἔδωσε ὁ Τὸμ στὴν Ἄννα ἐκεῖνα τὰ λουλούδια;

Does Mr. Brown want to sell you some insurance? = θέλει ὁ κύριος Brown νὰ σοῦ πουλήση λίγη ἀσφάλεια;

Yes, I wrote him a long letter last night = ναί, τοῦ ἔγραψα ἕνα μεγάλο γράμμα χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

I asked him a lot of questions = τοῦ ἔκανα (ρώτησα) πολλὲς ἐρωτήσεις.

Did Jim show the Browns a map of his country? = ἔδειξε ὁ Jim στοὺς Brown ἕνα χάρτη τῆς πατρίδας του;

Yes, he showed them a map of the city = ναί, τοὺς ἔδειξε ἕνα χάρτη τῆς πόλης.

Mr. Brown said: «can you get us some tickets»? = ὁ κύριος Brown εἶπε «μπορεῖς νὰ μᾶς πάρης μερικὰ εἰσιτήρια;»

Jim said: «Yes, I can get some» = ὁ Jim εἶπε «ναί, μπορῶ νὰ πάρω μερικά».

Mr. Brown gave Jim some money for the tickets = ὁ κύριος Brown ἔδωσε στὸν Jim μερικὰ χρήματα γιὰ τὰ εἰσιτήρια.

Did Mrs. Brown offer the men some coffee? = προσέφερε ἡ κυρία Brown στοὺς ἄντρες λίγον καφέ;

Yes, she made them some hot coffee = ναί, τοὺς ἔκανε λίγο ζεστὸ καφέ.

Our teacher always explains the lesson to us = ὁ δάσκαλός μας πάντοτε ἐξηγεῖ σὲ μᾶς τὸ μάθημα.

VOCABULARY

ticket	(τίκετ)	=	εἰσιτήριο
kick	(κικ)	=	κλωτσῶ
train	(τρέεν)	=	τραῖνο
boat	(μπόουτ)	=	καράβι, βάρκα
plane	(πλέϊν)	=	ἀεροπλάνο
taxi	(ταέξι)	=	ταξὶ
ferry boat	(φέρι μπόουτ)	=	πορθμεῖον, φέρι-μπότ
horse	(hoρς)	=	ἄλογο
travel	(τραέβελ)	=	ταξιδεύω
choose	(τchouζ)	=	διαλέγω
clerk		=	υπάλληλος

wear	(γουὲρ)	=	φοράω
very	(βέρι)	=	πολὺ
practical	(πράκτικαλ)	=	πρακτικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
suit	(σιοὺτ)	=	κοστούμι
hat	(hαετ)	=	καπέλο
show	(chόου)	=	δείχνω
party	(πάρτι)	=	τὸ πάρτυ, κόμμα (πολιτικὸ)
gift	(γκιφτ)	=	δῶρο
birthday	(μπέρθντέϊ)	=	γενέθλια
direct	(ντάϊρεκτ)	=	εὐθύς, ἄμεσος - η - ο
indirect	(ινντάϊρεκτ)	=	ὄχι εὐθύς, ἔμμεσος - η - ο
film	(φιλμ)	=	φὶλμ
camera	(κάμερε)	=	φωτογραφικὴ μηχανὴ
offer	(όφερ)	=	προσφέρω
decide	(ντισάϊντ)	=	ἀποφασίζω
decision	(ντισίjev)	=	ἀπόφαση
invitation	(ινβιτέϊchev)	=	πρόσκληση
raincoat	(ρέϊκόουτ)	=	ἀδιάβροχο
sweater	(σουέτερ)	=	πλεκτὴ φανέλα
pair	(πέερ)	=	ζευγάρι
glove	(γκλαβ)	=	γάντι
shoe	(chou)	=	παπούτσι
wool	(γουλ)	=	μαλλί, μάλλινος - η - ο
silk	(σιλκ)	=	μετάξι, μεταξωτὸς - ὴ - ὸ
size	(σάϊζ)	=	μέγεθος
drugstore	(ντράγκστορ)	=	φαρμακεῖο
toothpaste	(τούθπέϊστ)	=	ὀδοντόπαστα
tooothbrush	(τούθμπραch)	=	ὀδοντόβουρτσα
vitamin	(βάϊταμιν)	=	βιταμίνη
dark	(νταρκ)	=	σκοτάδι, σκοτεινὸς - ὴ - ὸ
elevator	(ελιβέϊτερ)	=	ἀνελκυστήρας, ἀσανσὲρ
price	(πράϊς)	=	τιμὴ
however	(hάουέβερ)	=	ὡστόσο, ἐν τούτοις
department store	(ντιπάρτμεντ στορ)	=	μεγάλο κατάστημα
department	(ντιπάρτμεντ)	=	τμῆμα
constitution	(κονστιτούchev)	=	σύνταγμα
last	(λαστ)	=	τελευταῖος – α – ο

TEXT

Mr. Galanis seldom goes shopping with his wife. He does' t have much time and he doesn't like to go shopping. One Saturday however they decided to go together. Mrs. Galanis wanted a new dress and her husband needed a new winter coat. He wanted a brown coat but his wife said to him: «Why don't you get a gray coat dear? Your last coat was brown, you know». They wanted also to buy Kostas a new pair of shoes. They went to a large department store downtown near Constitution Place. Consitution Place, or Platia Syntagmatcs in Greek, is in the center of Athens. First they took an elevatcr to the men's department on the second floor. The clerk offered Mrs. Galanis a seat. Then he showed Mr. Galanis several brown coats. Mr. Galanis liked the first coat very much but he said it was too expensive. The others didn' t fit very well. One was too big, another was too small and another was too short. Then he tried on some gray coats and one fitted him very well. Mrs. Galanis liked it. It was very good on him. He could wear it with his blue suit or with his gray suit. Mr. Galanis thought about it for a minute and then he said: «yes, it is very practical. I an beginning to like it now». «And it is a good coat for the price», his wife said.

Then they bought a pair of shoes for Kostas, a wool dress for Mrs. Galanis, a tootebrush and some toothpaste.

TRANSLATION

Ὁ κύριος Γαλάνης σπάνια πηγαίνει γιὰ ψώνια μαζὶ μὲ τὴ γυναίκα του. Δὲν ἔχει πολὺν καιρὸ καὶ δὲν τοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνῃ γιὰ ψώνια. Ἕνα Σάββατο ὡστόσο ἀπεφάσισαν νὰ πᾶνε μαζί. Ἡ κυρία Γαλάνη ἤθελε ἕνα καινούργιο φόρεμα κι ὁ σύζυγός της ἕνα καινούργιο χειμερινὸ ἀδιάβροχο. Αὐτὸς ἤθελε ἕνα καφὲ πανωφόρι, ἀλλ' ἡ γυναίκα του τοῦ εἶπε: «Γιατὶ δὲν παίρνεις ἕνα γκρίζο πανωφόρι, ἀγαπητέ μου; Τὸ τελευταῖο σου πανωφόρι ἦταν καφέ, ξέρεις». Ἤθελαν ἐπίσης νὰ ἀγοράσουν γιὰ τὸν Κώστα ἕνα καινούργιο ζευγάρι παπούτσια. Πῆγαν σ' ἕνα μεγάλο κατάστημα κάτω στὴν πόλη, κοντὰ στὴν Πλατεῖα Συντάγματος. Ἡ Constitution Place ἢ Πλατεῖα Συντάγματος ἑλληνικά, εἶναι τὸ

κέντρο τῆς 'Αθήνας. Πρῶτα πῆραν ἕναν ἀνελκυστῆρα γιὰ τὸ τμῆμα ἀνδρῶν στὸν δεύτερο ὄροφο. Ὁ ὑπάλληλος προσέφερε στὴν κυρία Γαλάνη ἕνα κάθισμα. Ἔπειτα ἔδειξε στὸν κύριο Γαλάνη διάφορα καφὲ πανωφόρια. Στὸν κύριο Γαλάνη ἄρεσε πάρα πολὺ τὸ πρῶτο πανωφόρι, ἀλλὰ εἶπε, ὅτι ἦταν ὑπερβολικὰ ἀκριβό. Τὰ ἄλλα δὲν τοῦ ταίριαζαν (δὲν τοῦ πήγαιναν) πολὺ καλά. Τὸ ἕνα ἦταν πάρα πολὺ μεγάλο, ἕνα ἄλλο ἦταν πάρα πολὺ μικρὸ κι ἕνα ἄλλο ἦταν πάρα πολὺ κοντό. Ἔπειτα δοκίμασε μερικὰ γκρίζα πανωφόρια καὶ τὸ ἕνα τοῦ πῆγε πολὺ καλά. Στὴν κυρία Γαλάνη ἄρεσε (αὐτό). Ἦταν πολὺ καλὸ ἐπάνω του. Μποροῦσε νὰ τὸ φορέση μὲ τὸ μπλὲ κοστούμι του ἢ μὲ τὸ γκρίζο κοστούμι του. Ὁ κύριος Γαλάνης σκέφθηκε γι' αὐτὸ ἕνα λεφτὸ κι ὕστερα εἶπε: «Ναί, εἶναι πολὺ πρακτικό. 'Αρχίζει νὰ μοῦ ἀρέση τώρα». «Κι εἶναι πολὺ καλὸ πανωφόρι γιὰ τὴν τιμή του », εἶπε ἡ γυναίκα του.

Ἔπειτα ἀγόρασαν ἕνα ζευγάρι παπούτσια γιὰ τὸν Κώστα, ἕνα μάλλινο φόρεμα γιὰ τὴν κυρία Γαλάνη, μιὰ ὀδοντόβουρτσα καὶ λίγη ὀδοντόπαστα.

EXERCISE 183

CONVERSATION

Answer the questions :

Does Mr. Galanis go shopping with his wife?
Does he have much time?
Does he like to go shopping?
Did he decide to go?
What did Mrs. Galanis want to buy?
What did Mr. Galanis need to buy?
What color was his last coat?
Where did they go first?
Where is the Constitution Place?
What did they take?
Where was the men's department?
What did the clerk offer Mrs. Galanis?
What did he show Mr. Galanis?
Did he like them?
Was the first coat expensive?
Did the other coat fit him well?

What did he try then?
Did he like one?
Was it very good on him?
Could he wear it with his blue suit or with his gray suit?
What did he say?
Was it a good coat for the price?

EXERCISE 184

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὸν 'Αόριστο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς ἐρωτήσεως.

Example:

Where did you find your gloves?
I found them on a chair.

Did you do any shopping yesterday? yes I ... some shopping.
Did you wear a coat? I ... my brown coat.
What time did you leave home? I ... home at nine o'clock.
Did you take a streetcar? no I ... a bus.
What did you see in the storewindows? I ... a lot of suits, hats and shoes.
Did you buy a new hat? I ... a new sweater.
What color did you choose? I ... a pretty green sweater.
Did you meet your sister downtown? yes, I ... her for lunch.
Where did you and your sister eat? we ... in one of the department stores.
What time did you get home? I ... home at half past nine.

EXERCISE 185

Γράψτε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως στὸν 'Αόριστο.

Example :

I (think) about you last night.
I thought about you last night.

Mr Smith (sell)a lot of insurance last week.

He (cut) the grass last weekend.
Tom (spend) his money yesterday.
We (speak) English in class last evening.
I (sit) near the open door yesterday.
I (tell) you about the last test.
I (pay) for my theater tickets yesterday.
I can't wear that suit this year and I (can) wear it last ye
Last night Mrs. Brown (say) «Why don't we go there?»
He (give) his wife some money.
Mary (spend) three dollars for a book yesterday.
I (go) to the movies last night.
The clerk (say) that the hat (be) very nice.
The teacher (speak) to her.
We (get) downtown in twenty minutes.

EXERCISE 186

Συμπληρώστε στὰ κενὰ very ἢ too.

Example:

He came **very** late but we were there.

This red dress is ... good. I like it.
This brown dress is ... big. I don't like it.
This hat is ... small, but I like its color.
This sweater is ... long. I will not buy it for Mary.
This suit is ... expensive but I am going to buy it.
This dress is ... expensive. I can't buy it.
The clerks are ... busy now but I am not in a hurry.
The clerks are ... busy now. I can't wait.
It was ... warm yesterday. We went swimming.
It is ... cold. We can't go swimming today.
Ann was ... tired last night but she did her homework.
Ann was ... tired. She did not study.
Our French lesson was ... long but we learned it.
Our English lesson was ... long. We did not learn it.
Can you drink your coffee? No, I can't, it is ... hot.

I am not ... hungry.
I ate ... much ice cream this afternoon.
Let's not wait, there are ... many people in that line.
Some people drive ... fast for me.
It is ... cloudy. It looks like rain.
Thank you ... much for the invitation.
I can't study now. I am ... tired.
Six o'clock is ... early for me to get up.
New York is ... big for me. I prefer Chicago.
Ann is ... young to understand this book.

EXERCISE 187

Γράψτε τὶς λέξεις, ποὺ βρίσκονται μέσα σὲ παρένθεση, στὴ σωστὴ θέση μέσα στὴν πρόταση, π.χ.:

The men offer their seats (the women)
The men offer the women their seats.

George offered his book (Ann).
Mrs. Galanis made a sweater (her daughter).
Ann showed her new sweater (Betty).
Mr. Galanis bought some meat (the dog).
He got a film for her camera (Ann).
The clerck sold a gray coat (Mr. Galanis).
Tom wrote a long letter (his family).
Miss Lee taught a lot of English (her students).
She showed many pictures (them).
Please buy some ice cream (us).
Please pour a cup of coffe (me).
Please give your name and address (the secretary).

EXERCISE 188

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις καταφατικά. Χρησιμοποιῆστε ἀντικειμενικὲς ἀντωνυμίες στὴ θέση τῶν λέξεων στὴν παρένθεση, π.χ.:

Did Tom write (that letter) to his (parents)?

Yes, he wrote it to them.

Did George offer (his book) to (Ann)?
Did the clerk sell (the gray coat) to (Mr. Galanis)?
Did he also show (the brown coats) to (Mr. Galanis)?
Dis Mrs. Galanis make (that sweater) for (Ann)?
Did Ann show (her new sweater) to (Betty)?
Did you get (the meat) for your (dog)?
Did you buy (those vitamins) for (me)?
Did Mary read (her letter) to (you)?
Did she show (her picture) to (you and John)?
Did you give (your name and address) to the (secretary

XVIII

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 183

Conversation

No, Mr. Galanis seldom goes shopping with his wife.
No, he doesn't have much time.
No, he doesn't like to go shopping.
Yes, one Saturday he decided to go shopping with his wife.
Mrs. Galanis wanted to buy a new dress.
Mr. Galanis needed to buy a new winter coat.
His last coat was brown.
They went to a large department store downtown.
Constitution Place is in the center of Athens.
They took an elevator to the men's department.
The men's department was on the second floor.
The clerk offered Mrs. Galanis a seat.
He showed Mr. Galanis several brown coats.
Mr Galanis liked the first coat very much.
Yes, it was too expensive.
The other coats didn't fit him very well.
Then he tried on some gray coats.
Yes, he liked one very much.
Yes, it was very good on him.
Yes, he could wear it with his blue suit and with his gray suit.
He said «Yes, it is very practical. I am beginning to like it».
Yes, it was a good coat for the price.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 184

Yes, I did some shopping.

Yes, I wore my brown coat.
I left home at nine o'clock.
No, I took a bus.
I saw a lot of suits, hats and shoes.
I bought a new sweater.
I chose a pretty green sweater.
Yes, I met her for lunch.
We ate in one of the department stores.
I got home at half past nine.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 185

Mr. Smith sold a lot of insurance last week.
He cut the grass last weekend.
Tom spent his money yesterday.
We spoke English in class last evening.
I sat near the open door yesterday.
I told you about the last test.
I paid for my theater tickets yesterday.
I can't wear that suit this year and I could wear it last ye
Last night Mrs. Brown said : «Why don't we go there?»
He gave his wife some money.
Mary spent three dollars for a book yesterday.
I went to the movies last night.
The clerk said that the hat was very nice.
The teacher spoke to her.
We got downtown in twenty minutes.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 186

This red dress is very good. I like it.
This brown dress is too big. I don't like it.
This hat is very small, but I like its color.
This sweater is too long. I will not buy it for Mary.
This suit is very expensive but I am going to buy it.
This dress is too expensive. I can't buy it.

The clerks are very busy now but I am not in a hurry.
The clerks are too busy now. I can't wait.
It was very warm yesterday, we went swimming.
It is too cold. We can't go swimming today.
Ann was very tired last night, but she did her homework.
Ann was too tired. She did not study.
Our French lesson was very long but we learned it.
Our English lesson was too long. We did not learn it.
Can you drink your coffee? No, I can't, it is too hot.
I am not very hungry.
I ate too much ice cream this afternoon.
Let's not wait. There are too many people in that line.
Some people drive too fast for me.
It is too cloudy. It looks like rain.
Thank you very much for the invitation.
I can't study now. I am too tired.
Six o'clock is too early for me to get up.
New York is too big for me. I prefer Chicago.
Ann is too young to understand this book.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 187

George offered Ann his book.
Mrs. Galanis made her daughter a sweater.
Ann showed Betty her new sweater.
Mr. Galanis bought the dog some meat.
He got Ann a film for her camera.
The clerk sold Mr. Galanis a gray coat.
Tom wrote his family a long letter.
Miss Lee taught her students a lot of English.
She showed them many pictures.
Please buy us some ice cream.
Please pour me a cup of coffee.
Please give the secretary your name and address.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 188

Yes, he offered it to her.

Yes, he sold it to him.
Yes, he showed them to him.
Yes, she made it for her.
Yes, she showed it to her.
Yes, I got it for him (it).
Yes, I bought them for you.
Yes, she read it to me.
Yes, she showed it to us.
Yes, I gave them to her.

ΤΑ ΡΗΜΑΤΑ TELL καὶ SAY

Τὰ ρήματα **say** καὶ **tell** ἔχουν τὴν ἴδια σημασία στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα. Ἀλλὰ τὰ χρησιμοποιοῦμε σὲ διαφορετικὲς περιπτώσεις. Δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ χρησιμοποιήσουμε ὅποιο ἀπὸ τὰ δυὸ αὐτὰ ρήματα θέλουμε, ὅπως λάχη. Τὸ καθένα ἀπ' αὐτὰ θὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ, ὅπου καὶ ὅταν πρέπει.

Τὸ say ἔχει μόνο ἕνα ἀντικείμενο, μᾶς μιλάει δηλαδὴ μόνο γι' ἕνα πρᾶμα. Ἀντίθετα τὸ tell συντάσσεται μὲ δυὸ ἀντικείμενα, μὲ ἕνα ἄμεσο καὶ μὲ ἕνα ἔμμεσο. Δηλαδὴ ἀναφέρεται, μᾶς μιλάει γιὰ δυὸ πράματα. Ἔτσι λέμε :

You say something (σάμθιγκ) = λὲς κάτι.

Ἀλλὰ λέμε :

You tell a person something = λὲς σὲ κάποιο πρόσωπο κάτι.

Στὴν πρώτη πρόταση τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι τὸ **say**, τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι τὸ you καὶ τὸ something εἶναι τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο.

Στὴν δεύτερη πρόταση τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι τὸ **tell**, τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι τὸ you, τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο εἶναι τὸ a person καὶ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο εἶναι τὸ something. Ἔτσι στὴ δεύτερη πρόταση ἔχουμε δυὸ ἀντικείμενα. Τὸ πρῶτο ἀντικείμενο, τὸ ἔμμεσο, εἶναι πρόσωπο ἢ ἀντωνυμία, ἐνῶ τὸ δεύτερο εἶναι πρᾶμα.

Τὸ **say** τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε ἀκόμη, ὅταν ἔχουμε ἀκριβῶς τὰ λόγια τοῦ ὁμιλητῆ μέσα στὴν πρόταση μέσα σὲ εἰσαγωγικά, ὅταν ἔχουμε δηλαδὴ εὐθὺ λόγο κι ὄχι πλάγιο. Γιὰ τὸν εὐθὺ καὶ τὸν πλάγιο λόγο θὰ μιλήσουμε ἀργό-

τερα. Γιὰ τώρα συγκρατῆστε μόνο, ὅτι τὸ say τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε στὸν εὐθὺ λόγο, ὅταν δηλαδὴ ἔχουμε ἀκριβῶς τὰ λόγια τοῦ ὁμιλητῆ μέσα σὲ εἰσαγωγικά. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ μιὰ φράση μὲ to φανερώνει τὸ πρόσωπο, στὸ ὁποῖο ἀναφέρονται οἱ λέξεις, π.χ. :

Mary said to Betty «Let's go for a walk» = ἡ Μαίρη εἶπε στὴν Betty: «ἂς πᾶμε γιὰ ἕναν περίπατο».

Ἐπίσης ὅταν ἔχουμε μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα τὴν λέξη that, τότε θὰ χρησιμοποιήσουμε τὸ ρῆμα say κι ὄχι τὸ tell.

Χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ tell, ὅταν ἀμέσως ὕστερα ἀπ' αὐτὸ ἀκολουθῆ μιὰ ἀντωνυμία ἢ ἕνα ὄνομα. Δὲν πρέπει ὅμως νὰ μεσολαβῆ τίποτε ἄλλο, ὅπως ἡ λέξη to, γιατὶ τότε τὸ ρῆμα θὰ εἶναι τὸ say.

Examples :

Please tell me your name = παρακαλῶ, πές μου τὸ ὄνομά σου.

Mary says to John «give me your pencil» = ἡ Μαίρη λέει στὸν John: «δῶσε μου τὸ μολύβι σου».

Please say the names of the months = παρακαλῶ πὲς τὰ ὀνόματα τῶν μηνῶν. Τὸ ρῆμα θὰ εἶναι τὸ say, γιατὶ ἔχουμε ἕνα μόνο ἀντικείμενο.

Please tell me the names of the months = παρακαλῶ πές μου τὰ ὀνόματα τῶν μηνῶν. Ἐδῶ τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι tell κι ὄχι τὸ say, γιατὶ ἀμέσως μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα ὑπάρχει τὸ me.

Tom says «I have to study a lot» = ὁ Τὸμ λέει «ἔχω νὰ μελετήσω πολύ».

Tom says that he has to study his English lessons = ὁ Τὸμ λέει, ὅτι πρέπει νὰ μελετήση τὰ ἀγγλικά του μαθήματα.

Tom tells us that he has to write the exercises = ὁ Τὸμ μᾶς λέει, ὅτι πρέπει νὰ γράψη τὶς ἀσκήσεις.

Ann said (to Tom) «I have to write a letter» = ἡ Ἄννα εἶπε (στὸν Τὸμ) «ἔχω νὰ γράψω ἕνα γράμμα».

Ann said that she had to visit her aunt = ἡ Ἄννα εἶπε, ὅτι πρέπει νὰ ἐπισκεφθῆ τὴ θεία της.

Ann told Tom that she had to get up early = ἡ Ἄννα εἶπε στὸν Τόμ, ὅτι πρέπει νὰ σηκωθῆ νωρίς.

His wife said to him «you have to write a letter» = ἡ σύζυγός του τοῦ εἶπε: «πρέπει νὰ γράψης ἕνα γράμμα.

Mr. Galanis thought about it for a minute and then he said «yes, it is

very practical. I am beginning to like it now» = ὁ κύριος Γαλάνης σκέφθηκε γι'αὐτὸ γιὰ ἕνα λεπτὸ καὶ κατόπιν εἶπε «ναί, εἶναι πολὺ πρακτικό, ἀρχίζει νὰ μοῦ ἀρέση τώρα».
«And it is not very expensive» his wife said = «καὶ δὲν εἶναι πολὺ ἀκριβὸ» εἶπε γυναίκα του.
She says that she usually buys her clothes = αὐτὴ λέει, ὅτι συνήθως ἀγοράζει τὰ ροῦχα της.
She told her husband that his last coat was brown = εἶπε στὸν σύζυγό της, ὅτι τὸ τελευταῖο του παλτὸ ἦταν καφέ.
Tell your name to the new teacher = πὲς τὸ ὄνομά σου στὸν καινούργιο δάσκαλο.
Ann said to Tom that he was late for dinner = ἡ Ἄννα εἶπε στὸν Τόμ, ὅτι εἶναι ἀργοπορημένος γιὰ τὸ δεῖπνο.
Tom says that Americans usually buy their clothes ready-made = ὁ Τὸμ λέει, ὅτι οἱ Ἀμερικανοὶ συνήθως ἀγοράζουν τὰ ροῦχα τους ἕτοιμα.
She says that there are millions of cars in the United States = λέει, ὅτι ὑπάρχουν ἑκατομμύρια αὐτοκίνητα στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες.

ΕΞΑΙΡΕΣΕΙΣ

Σὲ ὅλους τοὺς κανόνες ὑπάρχουν ἐξαιρέσεις. Ἐνῶ κανονικὰ θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ ἔχουμε τὸ say στὶς παρακάτω ἐκφράσεις, ἐν τούτοις ἔχουμε τὸ tell. Εἶναι βέβαια ἰδιωματισμοὶ καὶ πρέπει πάντοτε νὰ τοὺς μάθουμε ἀπ' ἔξω.

Tell a story = λέω μιὰ ἱστορία

Ἐδῶ τὸ ἀντικείμενο εἶναι ἕνα, θὰ ἔπρεπε τὸ ρῆμα νὰ εἶναι τὸ say. Ἐν τούτοις ἔχουμε τὸ tell.

I tell a lie = (λάϊ) = λέω ψέματα.

Tell the fortune = (φόρτchιεν) = λέω τὴν τύχη.

Σὲ ὅλα αὐτὰ θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἴχαμε τὸ say, ἀλλὰ παρὰ τὸν κανόνα ἔχουμε τὸ tell.

Ἐπίσης ἔχουμε τὶς ἐκφράσεις: tell the truth = (τρουθ) = λέω τὴν ἀλήθεια, tell the time = λέω τὴν ὥρα, tell about something = λέω γιὰ κάτι. Σὲ ὅλες αὐτὲς τὶς περιπτώσεις ἔπρεπε νὰ εἴχαμε τὸ say, ἀλλὰ εἶναι ἐξαιρέσεις τοῦ κανόνα.

Examples :

They told some good stories last night = εἶπαν μερικὲς καλὲς ἱστορίες χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

What did she say when you saw her yesterday? = τί εἶπε, ὅταν τὴν εἶδες χθές;

Did you ever tell a lie? = εἶπες ποτέ σου ψέματα;

Yes, I told lies many times = ναί, εἶπα ψέματα πολλὲς φορές.

My friends say that English is difficult = οἱ φίλοι μου λένε, ὅτι τὰ ἀγγλικὰ εἶναι δύσκολα.

Mr. Brown told his wife that he was going to New York = ὁ κύριος Brown εἶπε στὴν σύζυγό του, ὅτι πήγαινε στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη.

She said to me «I understand all the lecture» = αὐτὴ μοῦ εἶπε «καταλαβαίνω ὅλη τὴ διάλεξη».

She told me that she understood all the lecture = αὐτὴ μοῦ εἶπε, ὅτι κατάλαβε ὅλη τὴν διάλεξη.

She said that she went to the movies last night = αὐτὴ εἶπε, ὅτι πῆγε στὸν κινηματογράφο χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

She told me that she went for a walk last night = μοῦ εἶπε, ὅτι πῆγε γιὰ ἕναν περίπατο χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

She said that the lecture was wonderful = εἶπε, ὅτι ἡ διάλεξη ἦταν θαυμάσια.

She told me that the lecture was wonderful.

The man told me that my suit was ready = ὁ ἄνδρας μοῦ εἶπε, ὅτι τὸ κοστούμι μου εἶναι ἕτοιμο.

He said that my suit was ready.

She said that those people were not at home = αὐτὴ εἶπε, ὅτι ἐκεῖνοι οἱ ἄνθρωποι δὲν εἶναι στὸ σπίτι.

She told me that those people were not at home.

I said that I didn't understand English = εἶπα, ὅτι δὲν καταλαβαίνω ἀγγλικά.

I told him I did not understand English.

He always tells the truth = λέει πάντοτε τὴν ἀλήθεια.

She said (that) the movie was good = εἶπε, ὅτι τὸ ἔργο εἶναι καλό.

She told them the movie was good.

Please tell me his name = παρακαλῶ πές μου τὸ ὄνομά του.

EXERCISE 189

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ say ἢ tell π.χ. :

Please ... me your name. — Please **tell** me your na

Please ... the numbers from one to twenty.
Please ... me your telephone number.
Please ... her your address.
Please ... the names of the days of the week.
Please ... us the final score of the game.

EXERCISE 190

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ said ἢ told, π.χ. :

I **told** him to go out.

Mrs. Galanis ... «we are going downtown».
She ... that she was going home.
She ... us that they were going to the movies.
Mr. Galanis ... «I need a new coat».
He ... that he liked the first coat.
He ... his wife to buy a new hat.
He ... to her «I want to get a brown coat».
He ... that he liked it but it was expensive.
He ... her that he wanted the gray coat.
She ... «your last coat was brown».
She ... that his last coat was brown.
She ... him to buy a film.
She ... to the clerk «I like a pair of gloves».
She ... that she was hungry.
She ... the clerk that she was tired.
Mary ... to her mother «I want a new dress».
She ... that she wanted a new dress.
She ... her that she liked the style of the red dress.

Ann ... to Betty «I am going downtown for lunch».
She ... that she was with the students.
She ... her that there were forty of them.
She ... «I like New York very much».
She ... her that she liked the United States.
He ... her that he wanted to stay for two weeks.
I ... «I went to stay for two weeks».

ΠΑΡΑΘΕΤΙΚΑ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΩΝ

Κάθε ἐπίθετο ἔχει τρεῖς βαθμούς, τὸ θετικὸ βαθμό, τὸ συγκριτικὸ καὶ τὸν ὑπερθετικό. Ὁ συγκριτικὸς κι ὁ ὑπερθετικὸς βαθμὸς ἑνὸς ἐπιθέτου λέγονται **παραθετικὰ** τοῦ ἐπιθέτου αὐτοῦ.

Τί εἶναι ὅμως τὰ παραθετικὰ ἑνὸς ἐπιθέτου;

Ἂς δοῦμε αὐτὲς τὶς τρεῖς φράσεις κι ἂς προσπαθήσουμε νὰ κατανοήσουμε τὴ διαφορά τους:

Horse is **fast** = τὸ ἄλογο εἶναι γρήγορο.
Automobile is **faster than** horse = τὸ αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι γρηγορότερο ἀπὸ τὸ ἄλογο.
Airplane is **the fastest** of all = τὸ ἀεροπλάνο εἶναι τὸ πιὸ γρήγορο ἀπ' ὅλα.

Καθὼς βλέπετε, τὸ ἐπίθετο **fast** συναντιέται σὲ τρεῖς τύπους, **fast**, **faster**, **fastest**. Αὐτοὶ εἶναι οἱ τρεῖς βαθμοὶ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου αὐτοῦ.

Ὁ πρῶτος, ὁ **θετικὸς βαθμὸς** (fast) εἶναι ὁ ἴδιος ὁ τύπος τοῦ ἐπιθέτου. Δείχνει ἁπλῶς, ὅτι ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἔχει κάποια ἰδιότητα. Ἔτσι λέμε:

Horse is **fast** = τὸ ἄλογο εἶναι γρήγορο.

Εἴπαμε ἁπλῶς **horse** κι ὄχι **the horse**, γιατὶ δὲν μιλᾶμε γιὰ ἕνα ὁρισμένο ἄλογο, ἀλλὰ γενικὰ γιὰ τὴν ἔννοια «ἄλογο», γιὰ ὅλα τὰ ἄλογα τῆς γῆς. Γιατί, ὅπως ἔχουμε ἤδη μάθει, ὅταν ἔχουμε γενικὴ ἔννοια, παραλείπεται τὸ ὁριστικὸ ἄρθρο.

Ὁ **συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς** (faster) δείχνει, ὅτι ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἔχει τὴν

ἰδιότητα τοῦ ἐπιθέτου σὲ μεγαλύτερο βαθμὸ ἀνεπτυγμένη ἀπὸ κάποιο ἄλλο οὐσιαστικό. Ἔτσι λέμε :

Automobile is **faster** than horse = τὸ αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι ταχύτερο ἀπὸ τὸ ἄλογο.

Καθὼς βλέπετε, στὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε μετὰ τὸ ἐπίθετο τὴ λέξη than (δαεν), ποὺ ἀποδίδεται στὰ ἑλληνικὰ μὲ τὴν πρόθεση ἀπό. Προσέξτε καλὰ τὴ διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὶς δυὸ γλῶσσες, τὴν ἑλληνικὴ καὶ στὴν ἀγγλική. Στὰ ἑλληνικὰ λέμε:

Τὸ αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι γρογορότερο ἀπὸ τὸ ἄλογο.

Στὰ ἀγγλικὰ ὅμως δὲν λέμε : automobile is faster from horse ἀλλά :

automobile is faster than horse.

Οὐδέποτε πρέπει νὰ βάλετε **from** στὸν δεύτερο ὅρο τῆς συγκρίσεως στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, ἀλλὰ πάντοτε **than**. Αὐτὸ τὸ λάθος κάνουν συνήθως οἱ σπουδασταί, ποὺ μεταφράζουν κατὰ λέξη ἀπὸ τὰ ἑλληνικά. Φροντίστε νὰ μὴν εἶσθε κι ἐσεῖς ἀνάμεσα σ' αὐτούς.

Τέλος ὁ **ὑπερθετικὸς βαθμὸς** δείχνει, πὼς ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἔχει τὴν ἰδιότητα τοῦ ἐπιθέτου στὸν ὑπέρτατο βαθμό, πιὸ ἀνεπτυγμένη δηλαδὴ ἀπὸ ὁποιοδήποτε ἄλλο οὐσιαστικό. Ἔτσι λέμε :

Airplane is the fastest of all = τὸ ἀεροπλάνο εἶναι τὸ γρηγορότερο ἀπ' ὅλα.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΣΥΓΚΡΙΤΙΚΟΥ ΒΑΘΜΟΥ

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ τῶν ὁμαλῶν ἐπιθέτων, ὅταν εἶναι μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα, προσθέτουμε τὴν κατάληξη -er στὸν θετικὸ βαθμό. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε :

clear (κλίερ)	= καθαρὸς	— **clearer**
fast (φαστ)	= γρήγορος	— **faster**
tall (τολ)	= ψηλὸς	— **taller**

Ἐὰν ὅμως τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειώνῃ σὲ **-e**, παίρνει μόνο ἕνα **-r** γιὰ κατάληξη συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ κι ὄχι **-er**. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε :

large (λαρντj)	= μεγάλος	— **larger**

῞Οσα εἴπαμε μέχρι τώρα γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τοῦ συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ ἰσχύουν, ὅταν τὰ ἐπίθετα εἶναι μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα. ῞Οταν ὅμως ἔχουν περισσότερες ἀπὸ δύο συλλαβές, σχηματίζουν διαφορετικὰ τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμό. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ δὲν παίρνουν τὴν κατάληξη **er**, ἀλλὰ παίρνουν μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ἐπίθετο τὴ λέξη **more**, π.χ. :

beautiful	— **more beautiful**	(ὡραῖος)
interesting	— **more interesting**	(ἐνδιαφέρον)
popular	— **more popular**	(δημοφιλὴς)

Καὶ τὰ τρία αὐτὰ ἐπίθετα σχημάτισαν τὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ περιφραστικά, δηλαδὴ μὲ δύο λέξεις, γιατὶ ἔχουν περισσότερες ἀπὸ δυὸ συλλαβές.

῞Οσα ἐπίθετα τελειώνουν σὲ **-y** καὶ εἶναι μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα, σχηματίζουν κι αὐτὰ τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ μὲ τὴν κατάληξη **-er**, ἀλλὰ μετατρέπουν πρωτύτερα τὸ **y** σὲ **i**. ῎Ετσι ἔχουμε:

easy	— **easier**	(εὔκολος)
pretty	— **prettier**	(χαριτωμένος)
dry	— **drier**	(ξερὸς)

῾Υπάρχουν καὶ μερικὰ ἐπίθετα, ποὺ σχηματίζουν μὲ δυὸ τρόπους τὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμό, καὶ σύμφωνα μὲ τὸν κανόνα κι ἀντίθετα ἀπὸ αὐτόν. ῎Ετσι τὸ ἐπίθετο quiet (κουάϊτ) = ἥσυχος, κάνει στὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ quieter (κουάϊτερ) = πιὸ ἥσυχος, ἀλλὰ καὶ more quiet (μορ κουάϊτ) = πιὸ ἥσυχος, σὰν νὰ ἦταν πολυσύλλαβο. ᾿Επίσης τὸ ἐπίθετο friendly (φρέντλι) = φιλικός, ἐγκάρδιος, σχηματίζει ἐπίσης τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ μὲ δυὸ τρόπους, friendlier καὶ more friendly,

῞Οταν τὸ ἐπίθετο εἶναι μονοσύλλαβο καὶ τελειώνη σὲ ἕνα μόνο σύμφωνο, διπλασιάζει τὸ τελικὸ σύμφωνο πρὶν ἀπὸ τὴν κατάληξη **er** τοῦ συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ. ῎Ετσι ἔχουμε :

hot	(hατ)	—	**hotter**	—	(ζεστὸς)
big		—	**bigger**	—	(μεγάλος)

Νὰ καὶ μερικὰ παραδείγματα, γιὰ νὰ γίνουν περισσότερο κατανοητά, ὅσα εἴπαμε πρωτύτερα.

Mary is taller than Betty = 'Η Μαίρη είναι ὑψηλότερη ἀπὸ τὴν Μπέττυ.
Betty is shorter than Mary = ἡ Μπέττυ εἶναι κοντότερη ἀπὸ τὴν Μαίρη.
That brown coat is more expensive than this gray coat = ἐκεῖνο τὸ καφὲ σακάκι εἶναι περισσότερο ἀκριβὸ ἀπὸ αὐτὸ τὸ γκρίζο σακάκι.
The plays are more interesting than the musicals = τὰ θεατρικὰ ἔργα εἶναι περισσότερο ἐνδιαφέροντα ἀπὸ τὰ μουσικὰ ἔργα.
One play was very funny, the others were more serious = ἕνα θεατρικὸ ἔργο ἦταν πολὺ ἀστεῖο, τὰ ἄλλα ἦταν περισσότερο σοβαρά.
The theatre seats are expensive and many people prefer the cheaper seats in the balcony = οἱ θέσεις τοῦ θεάτρου εἶναι ἀκριβὲς καὶ πολλοὶ ἄνθρωποι προτιμοῦν τὶς φθηνότερες θέσεις στὸν ἐξώστη.
Mr. Smith says that it has been colder this year than it was last year = ὁ κύριος Σμὶθ λέει, ὅτι ἔκανε (ὑπῆρξε) περισσότερο κρύο φέτος ἀπὸ ὅ,τι ἦταν πέρυσι.
Many smaller cities have theaters = πολλὲς μικρότερες πόλεις ἔχουν θέατρα.
Friends are more important than money = οἱ φίλοι εἶναι περισσότερο σπουδαῖοι ἀπὸ τὰ χρήματα.
The city buses are more crowded at five o'clock than at four o'clock = τὰ λεωφορεῖα τῆς πόλης εἶναι περισσότερο συνωστισμένα στὶς πέντε ἡ ὥρα παρὰ στὶς τέσσερις ἡ ὥρα.
The Browns have been to New York more recently than the Dawsons = Οἱ Brown ἔχουν πάει στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη περισσότερο πρόσφατα ἀπὸ τοὺς Dawson.
This book is clearer than that = αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο εἶναι καθαρότερο ἀπὸ ἐκεῖνο.
Mary is smaller than John = 'Η Μαίρη εἶναι μικρότερη ἀπὸ τὸν John.
She is shorter, too = εἶναι κοντότερη ἐπίσης.
But she is prettier than her sister = ἀλλὰ εἶναι ὀμορφότερη (πιὸ χαριτωμένη) ἀπὸ τὴν ἀδελφή της.
A musical is usually more expensive than a play = μία μουσικὴ κωμωδία εἶναι συνήθως περισσότερο ἀκριβὴ ἀπὸ ἕνα θεατρικὸ ἔργο (πρόζας).
What is the easiest way to learn English? = ποιὸς εἶναι ὁ εὐκολότερος τρόπος νὰ μάθῃς ἀγγλικά;
The easiest way to learn English is to study hard = ὁ εὐκολότερος τρόπος νὰ μάθῃς ἀγγλικὰ εἶναι νὰ μελετήσῃς σκληρά.
Does Kostas study harder than Tom? = μελετᾶ ὁ Κώστας σκληρότερα ἀπὸ τὸν Tom?

Yes, he, studies harder than Tom = ναί, μελετᾶ σκληρότερα ἀπὸ τὸν Τόμ.
Those buses are more crowded in the morning than in the afternoon = ἐκεῖνα τὰ λεωφορεῖα εἶναι περισσότερο συνωστισμένα τὸ πρωῒ παρὰ τὸ ἀπόγευμα.
I' m hungrier at noon than at night = εἶμαι περισσότερο πεινασμένος τὸ μεσημέρι παρὰ τὸ βράδυ.

EXERCISE 191

Ἀλλάξτε κάθε καταφατική πρόταση σὲ ἐρώτηση. Δῶστε μιὰ σύντομη καταφατικὴ ἀπάντηση καὶ κατόπιν μιὰ μεγάλη ἀπάντηση στὸν Ἀόριστο προσθέτοντας τὸν χρονικὸ προσδιορισμό, ποὺ εἶναι στὴν παρένθεση. π.χ.:

The concert has begun (ten minutes ago). Has the concert begun? Yes, it has, it began ten minutes ago.

There have been some good concerts recently (last week).
The Scotts have been in New York (a year ago).
They have driven their new car (yesterday).
You have given them your new address (last night).
Your friends have come (two days ago).
You have spoken to them about the ballet (yesterday).
They have gone to a movie tonight (an hour ago).
Mrs. Brown has torn her new dress (to church last Sunday).
She has done her shopping today (this morning).
She has eaten her lunch (at twelve o' clock).
Mr. Smith has been busy recently (very busy yesterday).
The Browns have seen Jim Smith recently (two weeks ago).
He has written to them this week (on Friday).
He has gotten some theater tickets for them (last week).
Ann has studied history and mathematics (last year).
She has forgotten her notebook today (yesterday, too).

EXERCISE 192

Ἀλλάξτε τὶς λέξεις στὴν παρένθεση στὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ μὲ

τὸ more ἢ μὲ τὴν κατάληξη -er. Προσθέστε καὶ τὴ λέξη than, ὅπου χρειάζεται, π.χ.:

This coat is (practical) that coat. It is (warm) too. This coat is more practical than that coat. It is warmer, too.

Clothes are (cheap) in this store .... in that store.
One play was (interesting) .... the other play.
It was (serious).
Some musicals are (funny) .... others.
The seats are (expensive) downstairs .... in the balcony.
It is (hard) to get seats in the balcony .... downstairs.
The Scotts have been to New York (recently) .... the Dawsons.
Washington is (beautiful) .... New York.
There are (cheap) shops in New York .... in any other city.
Some people are (efficient) .... others.
Boys are often (active) .... girls.
There are often (noisy), too.
Ann is (young) .... her brother.
A small town is (quiet) .... a big city.
The people there are often (friendly) .... too.

EXERCISE 193

Γράψτε τὸ συγκριτικὸ τύπο τοῦ ἐπιθέτου τῆς παρενθέσεως. Προσθέστε τὸ than, ὅπου χρειάζεται, π.χ.:

This suit is (pretty) that suit.
This suit is prettier than that suit.

Baseball is (popular) football.
The game today was (exciting) the last game.
Our team played (interesting) the other team.
Our boys ran (fast) the others.
It has been (cold) this year it was last year.
It has been (hot) today it was yesterday.
It was (windy) yesterday it is today.
Your green dress is (long) your blue dress.

My brown shoes are (old) black shoes.
His new coat is (warm) his old coat.
I am (busy) today I was yesterday.
I am (sleepy) this morning I was last night.
Their house is (big) ours.
This meeting is (important) the last meeting.
This theater is (crowded) the others.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΥΠΕΡΘΕΤΙΚΟΥ ΒΑΘΜΟΥ

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμὸ τῶν ὁμαλῶν ἐπιθέτων, ὅταν εἶναι μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα, προσθέτουμε τὴν κατάληξη -est στὸν θετικὸ βαθμό. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

clear - clearest
fast - fastest
tall - tallest

Ἂν τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειώνῃ σὲ **-e**, παίρνει μόνο **-st** γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τοῦ ὑπερθετικοῦ βαθμοῦ. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

large - largest

Τὰ πολυσύλλαβα ἐπίθετα σχηματίζουν τὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμὸ παίρνοντας τὴ λέξη **most** μπροστὰ στὸ θετικὸ βαθμὸ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

beautiful - most beautiful
interesting - most interesting
popular - most popular

Ὅσα μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα ἐπίθετα τελειώνουν σὲ **y**, μετατρέπουν τὸ **y** σὲ **i** στὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμὸ καὶ παίρνουν ὕστερα κανονικὰ τὴν κατάληξη **-est**. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

easy - easiest
pretty - prettiest
dry - driest

Ὅσα ἐπίθετα σχηματίζουν μὲ δυὸ τρόπους τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμό, σχηματίζουν ἐπίσης μὲ δυὸ τρόπους καὶ τὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό, π. χ.:

quiet - quietest - most quiet
friendly - friendliest - most friendly

Τέλος ὅταν τὸ ἐπίθετο εἶναι μονοσύλλαβο καὶ τελειώνῃ σὲ ἕνα μόνο σύμφωνο, διπλασιάζει τὸ τελικὸ σύμφωνο πρὶν ἀπὸ τὴν κατάληξη **-est** τοῦ ὑπερθετικοῦ βαθμοῦ, π. χ.:

hot - hottest
big - biggest

Καθὼς θὰ παρατηρήσατε μέχρι τώρα, ὁ ὑπερθετικὸς βαθμὸς δὲν παίρνει **than** στὸν δεύτερο ὅρο τῆς συγκρίσεως. Ἔχει ὅμως πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ἐπίθετο τὸ ἄρθρο the, π. χ.:

the tallest = ὁ ὑψηλότερος
the largest = ὁ μεγαλύτερος
the prettiest = ὁ πιὸ χαριτωμένος
the shortest = ὁ κοντότερος

ΑΝΩΜΑΛΑ ΠΑΡΑΘΕΤΙΚΑ

Ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὰ ὁμαλὰ ἐπίθετα ὑπάρχουν καὶ μερικὰ ἄλλα, ποὺ δὲν σχηματίζουν σύμφωνα μὲ τοὺς κανόνες τὸ συγκριτικὸ καὶ ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό, ἀλλὰ μὲ τρόπον ἀνώμαλο. Αὐτὰ τὰ ἀνώμαλα παραθετικὰ θὰ πρέπει νὰ τὰ μάθουμε ἀπ' ἔξω. Δὲν ὑπάρχει ἄλλος τρόπος.

Νὰ τὰ πιὸ συνηθισμένα ἀπ' αὐτά:

good	-	**better**	-	**best**	=	καλὸς
bad	-	**worse**	-	**worst**	=	κακὸς
little	-	**less**	-	**least**	=	μικρὸς
much	-	**more**	-	**most**	=	πολὺ
many	-	**more**	-	**most**	=	πολλοὶ
well	-	**better**	-	**best**	=	καλὰ (ἐπίρ.)

well

AS . . . . AS

Μποροῦμε ὡστόσο νὰ ἔχουμε σύγκριση καὶ μὲ ἄλλον τρόπο, μὲ τὴν ἔκφραση **as . . . . as**, π. χ.:

John is as tall as George = ὁ Γιάννης εἶναι τόσο ψηλὸς ὅσο κι ὁ Γιῶργος.
John is not as tall as Mary = ὁ Γιάννης δὲν εἶναι τόσο ψηλὸς ὅσο ἡ Μαίρη.

Καθὼς βλέπετε, μὲ τὴν ἔκφραση as . . . . as μποροῦμε νὰ συγκρίνουμε τόσο ὅμοια ὅσο κι ἀνόμοια πράματα.

Examples:

That brown coat is as expensive as that blue coat = ἐκεῖνο τὸ καφὲ πανωφόρι εἶναι τόσο ἀκριβὸ ὅσο καὶ ἐκεῖνο τὸ μπλὲ πανωφόρι.
Those two coats aren' t as practical as this gray coat = ἐκεῖνα τὰ δύο πανωφόρια δὲν εἶναι τόσο πρακτικὰ ὅσο αὐτὸ τὸ γκρίζο πανωφόρι.
There are more plays in New York than in Washington = ὑπάρχουν περισσότερα θεατρικὰ ἔργα στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη ἀπὸ τὴν Washington.
Some plays are better than others = μερικὰ θεατρικὰ ἔργα εἶναι καλύτερα ἀπὸ ἄλλα.
Does Jim like plays better than musical comedies? = ἀρέσουν στὸν Jim τὰ θεατρικὰ ἔργα καλύτερα (περισσότερο) ἀπὸ τὶς μουσικὲς κωμωδίες;
Does Ann play the piano better than Betty? = παίζει ἡ Ἄννα πιάνο καλύτερα ἀπὸ τὴν Betty;
That suit is as pretty as that suit = ἐκεῖνο τὸ κοστούμι εἶναι τόσο ὅμορφο ὅσο ἐκεῖνο τὸ κοστούμι.
Mary is the tallest of the three girls = ἡ Μαίρη εἶναι τὸ ὑψηλότερο ἀπὸ τὰ τρία κορίτσια.
Betty is the busiest of the three = ἡ Betty εἶναι ἡ πιὸ πολυάσχολη ἀπὸ τὶς τρεῖς.
Ann is the nicest girl of all = ἡ Ἄννα εἶναι τὸ πιὸ ὅμορφο κορίτσι ἀπὸ ὅλα.
Mary is the most serious girl in the class = ἡ Μαίρη εἶναι τὸ πιὸ σοβαρὸ κορίτσι στὴν τάξη.

Betty is the most active girl in school = ἡ Betty εἶναι τὸ πιὸ δραστήριο κορίτσι στὸ σχολεῖο.

Ann is my best friend at school = ἡ Ἄννα εἶναι ἡ καλύτερη φίλη μου στὸ σχολεῖο.

Isn' t that street as wide (γουάϊντ) as that street? = δὲν εἶναι ἐκεῖνος ὁ δρόμος τόσο φαρδὺς ὅσο εκεῖνος ὁ δρόμος;

One little boy said to another: «my father is better than yours» = ἕνα μικρὸ παιδὶ εἶπε σὲ ἕνα ἄλλο: «ὁ πατέρας μου μου εἶναι καλύτερος ἀπὸ τὸν δικό σου».

Mary said: «my father is the best of all» = ἡ Μαίρη εἶπε: «ὁ πατέρας μου εἶναι ὁ καλύτερος ἀπὸ ὅλους».

The film I saw yesterday was the best film of the week = τὸ φίλμ, ποὺ εἶδα χθές, ἦταν τὸ καλύτερο τῆς ἑβδομάδας.

Washington has the most important government buildings = ἡ Washington ἔχει τὰ πιὸ σπουδαῖα κυβερνητικὰ κτίρια.

The tallest buildings are in New York = τὰ ὑψηλότερα κτίρια (βρίσκονται) εἶναι στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη.

EXERCISE 194

Συμπληρῶστε στὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμὸ τὶς λέξεις στὴν παρένθεση. Συμπληρῶστε καὶ τὸ ὁριστικὸ ἄρθρο the, π. χ.:

Mary is (short) the three girls = Mary is the shortest of the three girls.

Ann is (pretty) girl in her class.
She speaks Spanish (well) of all the students.
Miss Lee is (young) teacher at school.
Her classroom is (small) room on the second floor.
February is (short) month in the year.
Yesterday was (hot) day in this summer.
It was also (lucky) day of my life.
Baseball is (popular) sport in the United States.
The game yesterday was (important) game of the season.
It was also (exciting) of all the games.

Washington D. C. isn' t (large) city in the United States.
New York is (big) of all the cities.
Washington is one of (beautiful) cities in the country.
New York has (tall) buildings of any city.
(tall) building of all has 102 floors.
New York has (many) theaters and (many) subways of any city.
Broadway and Fifth Avenue are two of (famous) streets in New York.
Broadway is also one of (long) streets.

EXERCISE 195

Συμπληρῶστε τὶς λέξεις στὴν παρένθεση στὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό. Δῶστε μιὰ ἀπάντηση, π. χ.:

What is (easy) way to learn English? = What is the easiest way to learn English? The easiest way to learn English is to study hard.

Is this (long) lesson in the book?
Which lesson was (short) of all?
Which lesson was (hard) for you?
Which lesson was (interesting) of all?
What' s (popular) sport in your country?
What is (beautiful) city in your country?
Which city is (modern)?
What is (busy) street in this city?
What is (tall) building here?
What is (good) newspaper here?

EXERCISE 196

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις, π. χ.:

Prices usually depend **on** quality and style.

Do you have to buy tickets weeks .... advance?

Where do you like to sit, downstairs or .... the balcony?
The Smiths like to travel .... car.
New York has the most theaters .... any city .... the country.
They have taken many trips .... their car.
There are good streets .... all parts .... the country.
There is a lot of traffic .... the streets .... the summer.
There are many government buildings .... Washington.
The city is very pretty .... the spring.

FOR - SINCE

for = γιά, ἐπὶ
since = ἀπὸ

Τόσο τὸ for ὅσο καὶ τὸ since δείχνουν χρόνο. Ἡ σημασία ὡστόσο τῶν δυὸ αὐτῶν λέξεων δὲν εἶναι ὁλότελα ἡ ἴδια.

Ἡ πρόθεση **for** φανερώνει χρονικὴ διάρκεια. Χρησιμοποιοῦμε αὐτὴ τὴν πρόθεση, ὅταν δὲν ξέρουμε, πότε ἄρχισε καὶ πότε τέλειωσε μιὰ πράξη, ἀλλὰ ξέρουμε μόνο πόσο κράτησε, π. χ. δυὸ ὧρες, τρία χρόνια, πέντε μέρες.

Ἡ πρόθεση **since** φανερώνει ἀφετηρία, δείχνει τὴν ἀρχὴ μιᾶς χρονικῆς περιόδου. Χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ δείξῃ κάτι, ποὺ ἄρχισε σὲ ὁρισμένο χρόνο τοῦ παρελθόντος καὶ βαστάει ὡς σήμερα.

Ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ for εἶναι ἀόριστη. Τὸ for δηλαδὴ φανερώνει μόνο χρονικὴ διάρκεια, ἀλλὰ ἀόριστα, ὄχι συγκεκριμένα μὲ ἀρχὴ καὶ τέλος. Ἐνῶ τὸ since δείχνει τὴν ἀφετηρία μιᾶς συγκεκριμένης χρονικῆς περιόδου, ποὺ βαστάει ὡς σήμερα.

Συνήθως τὸ for καὶ τὸ since συντάσσονται μὲ Παρακείμενο.

Examples:

How long have you been at the seaside (σισάϊντ) = πόσον καιρὸ ἤσουν στὴν ἀκροθαλασσιά;
I have been there for two days = ἤμουν ἐκεῖ γιὰ δυὸ μέρες (ἐπὶ δύο μέρες).
I have been there since Monday = ἤμουν ἐκεῖ ἀπὸ τὴ Δευτέρα.

You have already (ὀλρέντι) eaten three oranges since I was here = ἔχεις ἤδη φάει τρία πορτοκάλια, ἀφ' ὅτου εἶμαι ἐδῶ.

I have waited for her since seven o' clock and she has not come = ἔχω περιμένει (περίμενα) ἐδῶ γι' αὐτὴν ἀπὸ τὶς ἑφτὰ ἡ ὥρα καὶ δὲν ἔχει ἔλθει.

I have not found a wife although (ὀλδόου) I have looked for one since I was twenty years old = δὲν ἔχω βρεῖ μία σύζυγο, ἂν κι ἔχω ψάξει γιὰ μία, ἀφ' ὅτου ἤμουν εἴκοσι χρονῶν.

Τὸ look σημαίνει κυττάζω. Μαζὶ μὲ τὴν πρόθεση for ἀλλάζει ἔννοια.

Look for = ψάχνω κι ὄχι κυττάζω.

Mary has rested in the garden for two days because she has been ill = ἡ Μαίρη ἔχει ξεκουραστῆ στὸν κῆπο γιὰ δυὸ μέρες γιατὶ ἦταν ἄρρωστη.

Since you gave me your telephone number I telephoned you four times and has not found you at home = ἀπὸ τότε ποὺ μοῦ ἔδωσες τὸν ἀριθμὸ τηλεφώνου σου, σοῦ τηλεφώνησα τέσσερις φορὲς καὶ δὲν σὲ βρῆκα στὸ σπίτι σου.

He has learned English for three years, but he can' t read a newspaper = ἔχει μάθει ἀγγλικὰ ἐπὶ τρία χρόνια, ἀλλὰ δέν μπορεῖ νὰ διαβάση μιὰ ἐφημερίδα.

Have you waited long for me = ἔχετε περιμένει πολὺ γιὰ μένα;

Yes, I waited for you half an hour = ναί, ἔχω περιμένει γιὰ σένα μισὴ ὥρα.

She has worked so hard this week that she has not had time to go to the movies = ἐργάστηκε τόσο σκληρὰ αὐτὴν τὴν ἑβδομάδα, ὥστε δὲν εἶχε καιρὸ νὰ πάη στὸν κινηματογράφο.

He has sold cars for ten years = πουλοῦσε αὐτοκίνητα ἐπὶ δέκα χρόνια.

How long have you waited here? = πόση ὥρα περιμένατε ἐδῶ;

I have waited here for two hours = περίμενα ἐδῶ δύο ὧρες.

I have written three letters since breakfast = ἔχω γράψει τρία γράμματα ἀπὸ τὸ πρόγευμα (κι' ἐδῶ).

She has not bought a new hat since six months = αὐτὴ δὲν ἔχει ἀγοράσει ἕνα καινούργιο καπέλο ἐδῶ κι ἕξι μῆνες.

Mary has gone to New York for a holiday (ὁόλιντεϊ). I have never been there = ἡ Μαίρη ἔχει πάει στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη γιὰ μιὰ γιορτὴ (γιὰ διακοπές). Δὲν ἔχω πάει ποτὲ ἐκεῖ.

ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ FOR, BY, SINCE

By (μπάϊ) = μέ, διά, ὑπό, κοντὰ

by boat = μὲ τὸ πλοῖο, by bus = μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο, by car = μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητο, by plane = μὲ τὸ ἀεροπλάνο, by taxi = μὲ τὸ ταξί, by train = μὲ τὸ τραῖνο, ἀλλὰ on foot = μὲ τὰ πόδια καὶ on horseback = μὲ ἄλογο.

I always come to class by bus = πάντοτε ἔρχομαι στὴν τάξη μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
John usually comes by streetcar = ὁ John συνήθως ἔρχεται μὲ τὸ τρόλεϋ.
Ann went to Sue's house by taxi = ἡ Ἄννα πῆγε στὸ σπίτι τῆς Σιοὺ μὲ τὸ ταξί.
Did your uncle go to New York by plane or by boat? = πῆγε ὁ θεῖος σου στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη μὲ ἀεροπλάνο ἢ μὲ βαπόρι;
He went by plane. Then he went to Washington by train = πῆγε μὲ τὸ ἀεροπλάνο. Κατόπιν πῆγε στὴν Washington μὲ τὸ τραῖνο.
Do the Galanis like to travel by car? = ἀρέσει στοὺς Γαλάνηδες νὰ ταξιδεύουν μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητο;
I sent the letter by air mail (ἐερ μέϊλ) = ἔστειλα τὸ γράμμα μὲ τὸ ἀεροπορικὸ ταχυδρομεῖο.

for = γιά, διά, ἐπί, ἐπειδή.

I have studied English for one year = ἔχω μελετήσει ἀγγλικὰ ἐπὶ ἕνα χρόνο.
I am going to study it for several years = θὰ μελετήσω (τὰ ἀγγλικὰ) γιὰ ἀρκετὰ χρόνια.
My sister studied it for two years from 1953 to 1955 = ἡ ἀδελφή μου τὰ μελέτησε ἐπὶ δύο χρόνια ἀπὸ τό 1953 ὣς τὸ 1955.
Tom studied English in his country for five years = ὁ Τὸμ μελέτησε ἀγγλικὰ στὴν χώρα του γιὰ πέντε χρόνια.
The Galanis haven' t been to New York for a long time = οἱ Γαλάνηδες δὲν ἔχουν πάει στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη ἐπὶ πολὺν καιρό.
They were there for a week in 1946 = ἦταν ἐκεῖ ἐπὶ μία ἑβδομάδα τὸ 1946.
It rained for two hours this morning = ἔβρεξε γιὰ δύο ὧρες τὸ πρωΐ.

It has rained every day for a week = ἔχει βρέξει (βρέχει) κάθε μέρα ἐπὶ μία ἑβδομάδα.

since = ἀφοῦ, πρίν, ἀπό, ἐπειδή, ἀφ' ὅτου.

It has rained every day since last Thursday = ἔβρεχε κάθε μέρα ἀπὸ τὴν περασμένη Πέμπτη.
Tom has been in the United States last summer = ὁ Τὸμ εἶναι στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες ἀπὸ τὸ περασμένο καλοκαίρι.
I have not talked with him since last week = δὲν ἔχω μιλήσει μαζί του ἀπὸ τὴν περασμένη ἑβδομάδα.
Mr. Brown has sold insurance since 1940 = ὁ κύριος Brown πουλᾶ ἀσφάλεια ἀπὸ τὸ 1940.
The Browns have lived there since last October = οἱ Brown ἔχουν μείνει ἐκεῖ ἀπὸ τὸν περασμένο Ὀκτώβριο.
They have not gone to New York since 1940 = δὲν ἔχουν πάει στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη ἀπὸ τὸ 1940.

EXERCISE 197

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως στὸν Παρακείμενο. Δῶστε δυὸ ἀπαντήσεις μὲ τὸ for καὶ τὸ since, π. χ.:

How long — Tom — in the United States? (be)
(a) for nine months, (b) since last summer.
How long has Tom been in the United States?
He has been there for nine months.
He has been there since last summer.

How long — the Dawsons — married? (be) - (a) for twenty - two years. (b) since 1940.

How long — Mr. Dawson — for the same company? (work). (a) for many years, (b) since 1955.

How long — Bill — at the University? (be). (a) for three years, (b) since 1960.

How long — you — English? (study). (a) for one year, (b) since last year.

How 'long — you — in the same house? (live). (a) for three years, (b) since 1960.

— you — to the dentist recently? (go). (a) no — for six months, (b) no — since 1960.

— the boys — tennis recently? (play). (a) no — for a long time, (b) no — since last fall.

— Betty — to class recently? (come). (a) no — for several days, (b) no — since last Tuesday.

— you — with her today? (talk). (a) no — for two days, (b) no — since.

— the Smiths — a trip recently? (take). (a) no — for a year, (b) no — since last year.

EXERCISE 198

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ for ἢ since. π. χ.:

He has had his new car **for** a week.

He has has his new car . . . . last week.
We have waited here . . . . twenty minutes.
We have been . . . . eight o' clock.
It has rained . . . . more than two hours.
It has rained . . . . early this morning.
I have known the Clarks . . . . 1952.
Mrs. Clark has been in the hospital . . . . a week.
I have not seen her . . . . Saturday afternoon.
I have not written any letter . . . . a month.
There has not been a good movie here . . . . several weeks.

ALREADY - YET

Ἡ λέξη **already** (όλρέντι) = ἤδη, χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις καὶ ἐρωτήσεις. Δὲν χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἀρνητικὲς προτάσεις. Τὸ already ἔχει τὴν ἴδια θέση μέσα στὴν πρόταση μὲ τὶς λέξεις συχνότητας. Προηγεῖται ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων κι ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ ρῆμα be. Μερικὲς φορὲς

θὰ τὸ συναντήσουμε καὶ μετὰ τὸ κύριο ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως. Κι αὐτὸ θά γίνη, ὅταν θὰ φανερώνη ἔκπληξη.

Examples:

It is already noon and they have not come = εἶναι ἤδη μεσημέρι καὶ δὲν ἔχουν ἔλθει.
Has the class already begun? = ἔχει ἀρχίσει ἤδη ἡ τάξη (τὸ μάθημα);
Has the class begun already? = ἔχει ἤδη ἀρχίσει ἡ τάξη;

Στὴν τελευταία περίπτωση τὸ already δείχνει ἔκπληξη καὶ γι' αὐτὸ μπῆκε ὄχι πρὶν ἀλλὰ ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ κύριο ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως, δηλαδὴ ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ has begun.

Ἡ λέξη **yet** χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἀρνητικὲς καὶ σὲ ἐρωτηματικὲς προτάσεις. Οὐδέποτε σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις. Συχνὰ μὲ τὸ yet μπαίνει Παρακείμενος.

Τὸ **yet** εἶναι χρονικὸ ἐπίρρημα καὶ μπαίνει πάντοτε στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως.

Examples:

Has the class begun yet? = ἔχει ἀρχίσει ἡ τάξη ἀκόμη;
No, not yet = ὄχι, ὄχι ἀκόμη.
The teacher isn' t here yet = ὁ δάσκαλος δὲν εἶναι ἐδῶ ἀκόμη.
He has not come yet = δὲν ἔχει ἔλθει ἀκόμη.
They are not ready to leave yet = δὲν εἶναι ἕτοιμοι νὰ φύγουν ἀκόμη.
They have already moved to their new house in the suburbs = ἔχουν ἤδη μετακομίσει στὸ καινούργιο τους σπίτι στὰ προάστια.
I already have my ticket but I have to do some shopping = ἔχω ἤδη τὸ εἰσιτήριό μου, ἀλλὰ ἔχω νὰ κάνω μερικὰ ψώνια.
She has not left the city yet = δὲν ἔχει ἀφήσει τὴν πόλη ἀκόμη.
I haven' t written my lessons yet = δὲν ἔχω γράψει τὰ μαθήματά μου ἀκόμη.

Ο ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΣ

(Past Perfect Tense)

Ὁ **Ὑπερσυντέλικος** (Past Perfect Tense) εἶναι κι αὐτὸς ἕνας χρόνος,

πού συνδέει τὸ παρελθὸν μὲ τὸ παρὸν καὶ μοιάζει πολὺ μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο. Διαφέρει ὅμως κατὰ τοῦτο: ὅτι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος δείχνει μιὰ πράξη, ποὺ ἔχει τελειώσει πρὶν ἀπὸ ὁρισμένο χρονικὸ σημεῖο στὸ παρελθὸν ἢ πρὶν ἀπὸ μιὰ ἄλλη πράξη τοῦ παρελθόντος καὶ ποὺ συνεχίζεται ἀκόμη.

Δυὸ λοιπὸν εἶναι οἱ συνηθέστερες περιπτώσεις χρησιμοποιήσεως τοῦ Ὑπερσυντέλικου:

α) ἡ πράξη νὰ ἔχη τελειώσει πρὶν ἀπὸ ὁρισμένο χρονικὸ σημεῖο τοῦ παρελθόντος.

β) ἡ πράξη νὰ ἔχη τελειώσει πρὶν ἀπὸ μιὰ ἄλλη πράξη τοῦ παρελθόντος καὶ νὰ συνεχίζεται ἀκόμη.

Τέλος ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν πλάγιο λόγο, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράση μιὰ ἰδέα, ποὺ στὸν εὐθὺ λόγο θὰ ἐκφράζονταν μὲ Παρακείμενο. Βέβαια, δὲν ξέρετε ἀκόμη, τί εἶναι εὐθὺς καὶ τί πλάγιος λόγος. Αὐτὸ θὰ τὸ μάθετε σὲ λίγο. Τώρα συγκρατῆστε μόνο γιὰ τὴν ὥρα τὸ ἑξῆς: ὅπου στὸν εὐθὺ λόγο χρειάζεται Παρακείμενος, στὸν πλάγιο λόγο χρειάζεται Ὑπερσυντέλικος.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΤΟΥ ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΥ

Ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος εἶναι σύνθετος χρόνος ὅπως κι ὁ Παρακείμενος.

Εἴπαμε, ὅτι, γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Παρακείμενο ἑνὸς κυρίου ρήματος, παίρνουμε τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα **have** στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα καὶ τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Καὶ τὸ μὲν have κλίνεται, ἐνῶ ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ μένει ἀμετάβλητη.

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο ἑνὸς κυρίου ρήματος, παίρνουμε τὸν Ἀόριστο τοῦ ρήματος have (had) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Ἔτσι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος τοῦ ρήματος **wait** κάνει **I had waited** (άϊ hεντ γουέϊτιντ) καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα:

Ὑπερσυντέλικος

(Past Perfect Tense)

I had waited	=	εἶχα περιμένει
You had waited	=	εἶχες περιμένει

He had waited	=	αὐτὸς εἶχε περιμένει
She had waited	=	αὐτὴ εἶχε περιμένει
It had waited	=	αὐτὸ εἶχε περιμένει
We had waited	=	εἴχαμε περιμένει
You had waited	=	εἴχατε περιμένει
They had waited	=	αὐτοὶ-ὲς-ὰ εἶχαν περιμένει

Παρατηρήσεις:

α) Τὸ ρῆμα have τόσο στὸν Παρακείμενο ὅσο καὶ στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο εἶναι βοηθητικό. Συνεπῶς στὸν ἀρνητικὸ τύπο θὰ κλιθῇ σὰν τὰ βοηθητικά: δηλαδὴ χωρὶς do ἢ did.

β) Πολλὲς φορὲς μέσα στὴν φράση μαζὶ μὲ τὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο ὑπάρχει κι ἕνα ἄλλο ρῆμα στὸν ἁπλὸν Ἀόριστο. Τὸ ρῆμα, ποὺ μπῆκε στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο, δείχνει τὴν πράξη, ποὺ ἔγινε γρηγορότερα, ἐνῶ τὸ ρῆμα, ποῦ μπῆκε στὸν Ἀόριστο, δείχνει τὴν πράξη, ποὺ ἔγινε κατόπιν, π. χ.:

We arrived after they had gone = φθάσαμε, ἀφοῦ αὐτοὶ ἔφυγαν.

ΑΡΝΗΤΙΚΟΣ ΤΥΠΟΣ ΤΟΥ ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΥ

Σχηματίζεται, ὅπως κι ὁ Παρακείμενος, χωρὶς τὴ χρήση τοῦ **do**, δηλαδὴ μὲ τὴν προσθήκη τοῦ **not**. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

I had not waited	=	δὲν εἶχα περιμένει
You had not waited	=	δὲν εἶχες περιμένει
He had not waited	=	αὐτὸς δὲν εἶχε περιμένει
She had not waited	=	αὐτὴ δὲν εἶχε περιμένει
It had not waited	=	αὐτὸ δὲν εἶχε περιμένει
We had not waited	=	δὲν εἴχαμε περιμένει
You had not waited	=	δὲν εἴχατε περιμένει
They had not waited	=	αὐτοὶ-ὲς-ὰ δὲν εἶχαν περιμένει

ΕΡΩΤΗΜΑΤΙΚΟΣ ΤΥΠΟΣ ΤΟΥ ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΥ

Κι αὐτὸς σχηματίζεται ὅπως κι ὁ Παρακείμενος, χωρὶς τὴ χρήση τοῦ **do**,

μὲ ἀντιστροφή. Δηλαδὴ μπαίνει πρῶτα τὸ βοηθητικὸ have, ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ τελευταῖα μπαίνει ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

Had I waited?	=	εἶχα περιμένει;
Had you waited?	=	εἶχες περιμένει;
Had he waited?	=	αὐτὸς εἶχε περιμένει;
Had she waited?	=	αὐτὴ εἶχε περιμένει;
Had it waited?	=	αὐτὸ εἶχε περιμένει;
Had we waited?	=	εἴχαμε περιμένει;
Had you waited?	=	εἴχατε περιμένει;
Had they waited?	=	αὐτοὶ - ὲς - ὰ εἶχαν περιμένει;

Examples:

She told me his name after he had left = αὐτὴ μοῦ εἶπε τὸ ὄνομά του, ἀφοῦ αὐτὸς εἶχε φύγει ἢ

After he had left she told me his name.

She had not done her homework before she saw me = δὲν εἶχε κάνει τὴν γραφική της ἐργασία, πρὶν νὰ μὲ δῆ.

He thanked me for what I had done = μὲ εὐχαρίστησε γιὰ ὅ,τι εἶχα κάνει.

After they had gone I sat down and rested = ἀφοῦ εἶχαν φύγει, κάθησα καὶ ξεκουράστηκα.

My friend had enjoyed his food when he tried it = ὁ φίλος μου εἶχε ἀπολαύσει τὴν τροφή του, ὅταν τὴν δοκίμασε.

Mary had not seen me for many years when I met her at the University last week = ἡ Μαίρη δὲν μὲ εἶχε δεῖ γιὰ πολλὰ χρόνια, ὅταν τὴν συνάντησα στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο τὴν περασμένη ἑβδομάδα.

After you had gone I went to sleep because I was very tired = ἀφοῦ εἶχες φύγει, πῆγα νὰ κοιμηθῶ, γιατὶ ἤμουν πολὺ κουρασμένος.

I read the book after I had finished my work = διάβασα τὸ βιβλίο, ἀφοῦ εἶχα τελειώσει τὴ δουλειά μου.

She told me her name after I had asked her twice = μοῦ εἶπε τὸ ὄνομά της, ἀφοῦ τὴν εἶχα ρωτήσει δυὸ φορές.

Before we had gone very far, we found that we had lost our way = πρὶν νὰ εἴχαμε πάει πολὺ μακριά, βρήκαμε, ὅτι εἴχαμε χάσει τὸν δρόμο μας.

Τὸ lost εἶναι ὁ 'Αόριστος τοῦ ρήματος lose (λουζ) = χάνω.

lose (λουζ) - lost (λοστ) - lost (λοστ)

When we arrived the dinner had already begun = ὅταν φθάσαμε, τὸ δεῖπνο εἶχε ἤδη ἀρχίσει.

He took the money after I had asked him to do so = πῆρε τὰ χρήματα, ἀφοῦ τοῦ ζήτησα νὰ κάνη ἔτσι (νὰ τὰ πάρη).

He had already learned English before he left for England = εἶχε ἤδη μάθει ἀγγλικά, πρὶν φύγη γιὰ τὴν 'Αγγλία.

But before he arrived in England he had forgotten some = ἀλλὰ πρὶν νὰ φθάση στὴν 'Αγγλία, εἶχε ξεχάσει μερικὰ (λίγα).

In England he remembered all he had learned = στὴν 'Αγγλία θυμήθηκε ὅλα ὅσα εἶχε μάθει.

I had studied English before I left Germany = εἶχα μελετήσει ἀγγλικὰ πρὶν νὰ ἀφήσω τὴν Γερμανία (πρὶν φύγω).

I had thought to go there but I did not go = εἶχα σκεφθῆ νὰ πάω ἐκεῖ, ἀλλὰ δὲν πῆγα.

We had talked for an hour when Mary said it was very late = εἴχαμε μιλήσει ἐπὶ μιὰ ὥρα, ὅταν ἡ Μαίρη εἶπε, ὅτι ἦταν ἀργά.

They had gone to bed when I telephoned = εἶχαν πάει γιὰ ὕπνο, ὅταν τηλεφώνησα.

VOCABULARY

store window	(στορ γουΐντοου)	=	βιτρίνα καταστήματος
line	(λάϊν)	=	γραμμή, οὐρὰ
person	(πέρσ' ν)	=	πρόσωπο
personal	(πέρσεναλ)	=	προσωπικὸς - ἡ - ὸ
something	(σάμθιγκ)	=	κάτι
lie	(λάϊ)	=	ψέμα
ready - made	(ρέντι μέϊντ)	=	ἕτοιμο (ροῦχο), δηλαδὴ ὄχι ἐπὶ παραγγελίᾳ
fortune	(φόρτchev)	=	τύχη
truth	(τρουθ)	=	ἀλήθεια
truthful	(τρούθφουλ)	=	φιλαλήθης, εἰλικρινὴς
final	(φάϊναλ)	=	τελικὸς - ἡ - ὸ

style	(στάϊλ)	=	στὺλ
clear	(κλίερ)	=	καθαρὸς - ἡ - ὁ, διαυγὴς
popular	(πόπιουλερ)	=	δημοφιλὴς
dry	(ντράϊ)	=	ξερὸς, στεγνὸς - ἡ -ὁ
play	(πλέϊ)	=	θεατρικὸ ἔργο (πρόζας)
musical	(μιούζικαλ)	=	μουσικὴ κωμωδία, μιούζικαλ
music	(μιούζικ)	=	μουσικὴ
funny	(φάνι)	=	ἀστεῖος - α - ο
serious	(σίριες)	=	σοβαρὸς - ἡ - ὁ
balcony	(μπάλκονι)	=	μπαλκόνι, ὑπερῷον, γαλαρία
cheap	(τchιπ)	=	φτηνὸς - ἡ - ὁ
recent	(ρίσεντ)	=	πρόσφατος - η - ο
recently	(ρίσεντλι)	=	προσφάτως
way	(γουέϊ)	=	δρόμος, τρόπος
ballet	(μπάλε)	=	μπαλέτο
history	(hίστορι)	=	μάθημα ἱστορίας
downstairs	(ντάουνστεζ)	=	κάτω πάτωμα, πλατεῖα θεάτρου
efficient	(εφίchεντ)	=	ἱκανὸς - δραστήριος-α-ο
baseball	(μπέϊζμπολ)	=	τὸ μπέϊζμπολ
wind	(ουἳντ)	=	ἄνεμος
comedy	(κόμεντι)	=	κωμωδία
building	(μπίλντιγκ)	=	κτίριο
government	(γκάβερνμεντ)	=	κυβέρνηση, κυβερνητικὸς -ἡ - ὁ
govern	(γκάβερν)	=	κυβερνῶ
luck	(λακ)	=	τύχη
lucky	(λάκι)	=	τυχερὸς - ἡ - ὁ
subway	(σάμπγουέϊ)	=	ὑπόγειος ἠλεκτρικὸς σιδηρόδρομος, μετρὸ
depend on	(ντιπὲντ ον)	=	ἐξαρτῶμαι ἀπὸ
quality	(κουόλιτι)	=	ποιότητα
in advance	(ιν αντβὰνς)	=	ἐκ τῶν προτέρων
traffic	(τράφικ)	=	κυκλοφορία, ἐμπόριο
seaside	(σισάϊντ)	=	ἀκροθαλασσιὰ

although	(ολδόου)	=	ἂν καὶ
look for	(λουκ φορ)	=	ψάχνω
ill	(ιλ)	=	ἄρρωστος - η - ο
by air mail	(μπάϊ έερ μέϊλ)	=	μὲ ἀεροπορικὸ ταχυδρομεῖο
same	(σέϊμ)	=	ἴδιος - α - ο
diary	(ντάϊαρι)	=	ἡμερολόγιο
strange	(στρέϊντj)	=	παράξενος - η - ο
custom	(κάστεμ)	=	συνήθεια
real	(ρίαλ)	=	πραγματικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
really	(ρίαλι)	=	πραγματικὰ
excellent	(έκσελεντ)	=	ἄριστος - η - ο
perhaps	(περhὰπς)	=	ἴσως
tourist	(τούριστ)	=	τουρίστας
tourism	(τούρισμ)	=	τουρισμὸς
east	(ιστ)	=	ἀνατολὴ
west	(γουὲστ)	=	δύση
north	(νορθ)	=	βορρᾶς
south	(σάουθ)	=	νότος
feed	(φιντ)	=	τρέφω
feel	(φιλ)	=	νιώθω, αἰσθάνομαι
ring	(ριγκ)	=	χτυπῶ (τὸ κουδούνι), σημαίνω
cost	(κοστ)	=	κοστίζω, κόστος

ΑΝΩΜΑΛΑ ΡΗΜΑΤΑ

cost (κοστ)	**cost** (κοστ)	**cost** (κοστ)	= κοστίζω
feed (φιντ)	**fed** (φεντ)	**fed** (φεντ)	= τρέφω
feel (φιλ)	**felt** (φελτ)	**felt** (φελτ)	= νιώθω
ring (ριγλ)	**rang** (ραεγκ)	**rung** (ρανγκ)	= χτυπῶ, σημαίνω
shut (chατ)	**shut** (chατ)	**shut** (chατ)	= κλείνω
show (chόου)	**showed** (chόουντ)	**shown** καὶ **showed** (chόουν καὶ chόουντ)	= δείχνω

TEXT

Tom' s diary

May 28, 196....

This has been a very interesting year for me in Greece. I studied and I have learned a lot not only about engineering but also about Greek life. At first many things seemed new and strange and it was hard to me to speak Greek. The people however were very friendly and they helped me in many ways. The Galanis are my best friends, but I know a lot of Greeks now. They have invited me to their house and they have explained their customs to me. They have also asked me many questions about my country. I have been really busy here this year. I have travelled on several buses and trains. I have visited some of the schools. I have gone shopping in the supermarkets and the big department stores. I have learned to like Greek food, too.

Athens is the largest city in Greece. Perhaps it is the noisiest city, too. It has the tallest buildings and a crowded subway. It has the most offices and the most telephones of any city of Greece. In Athens people can hear the best music and see the newest plays.

Greeks like to travel. Their country is not very large, but they want to visit all the interesting parts of the country. They want to see the interesting places in the East and the West, the North and the South. Some go by plane or by train, others take boat trips or bus trips, but many people travel in their own cars, too. The tourist business is a good business in Greece.

Tomorrow I leave for Rhodes with the Galanis. I' m very happy.

TRANSLATION

Τὸ ἡμερολόγιο τοῦ Τὸμ

Αὐτὴ ὑπῆρξε μιὰ πολὺ ἐνδιαφέρουσα χρονιὰ γιὰ μένα στὴν Ἑλλάδα. Ἔχω μελετήσει κι ἔχω μάθει πολλὰ πράματα ὄχι μόνο γιὰ τὴ μηχανικὴ ἀλλὰ ἐπίσης καὶ γιὰ τὴν ἑλληνικὴ ζωή. Πρῶτα πολλὰ πράματα φαίνονταν καινούργια καὶ παράξενα κι ἦταν δύσκολο γιὰ μένα νὰ μιλάω ἑλληνικά. Οἱ ἄνθρω-

ποι ὡστόσο ὑπῆρξαν πολὺ ἐγκάρδιοι καὶ μὲ βοήθησαν μὲ πολλοὺς τρόπους. Οἱ Γαλάνηδες εἶναι οἱ καλύτεροι φίλοι μου, ἀλλὰ γνωρίζω πολλοὺς Ἕλληνες τώρα. Μὲ ἔχουν προσκαλέσει στὸ σπίτι τους καὶ μοῦ ἔχουν ἐξηγήσει τὰ ἤθη τους (τὶς συνήθειές τους). Μοῦ ἔκαναν ἐπίσης πολλὲς ἐρωτήσεις γιὰ τὴ χώρα μου. Ἤμουν πραγματικὰ πολὺ ἀπασχολημένος ἐδῶ φέτος. Ἔχω ταξιδέψει μὲ πολλὰ λεωφορεῖα καὶ τραῖνα. Ἔχω ἐπισκεφθῆ μερικὰ σχολεῖα. Ἔχω πάει γιὰ ψώνια στὶς μεγάλες ἀγορὲς τροφίμων καὶ στὰ μεγάλα καταστήματα. Ἔχω μάθει ἐπίσης νὰ μοῦ ἀρέση ἡ ἑλληνικὴ τροφὴ (τὰ ἑλληνικὰ φαγητά).

Ἡ Ἀθήνα εἶναι ἡ μεγαλύτερη πόλη στὴν Ἑλλάδα. Ἴσως εἶναι ἐπίσης καὶ ἡ πιὸ θορυβώδης πόλη. Ἔχει τὰ ψηλότερα κτίρια κι ἕναν κοσμοπλημμυρισμένο ἠλεκτρικὸ σιδηρόδρομο. Ἔχει τὰ περισσότερα γραφεῖα καὶ τὰ περισσότερα τηλέφωνα ἀπὸ ὁποιαδήποτε ἄλλη πόλη τῆς Ἑλλάδας. Στὴν Ἀθήνα οἱ ἄνθρωποι μποροῦν νὰ ἀκούσουν τὴν καλύτερη μουσικὴ καὶ νὰ δοῦν τὰ πιὸ καινούργια θεατρικὰ ἔργα.

Στοὺς Ἕλληνες ἀρέσει νὰ ταξιδεύουν. Ἡ χώρα τους δὲν εἶναι πολὺ μεγάλη, ἀλλὰ θέλουν νὰ ἐπισκέπτωνται ὅλα τὰ ἐνδιαφέροντα τμήματα τῆς χώρας. Θέλουν νὰ δοῦν τὰ ἐνδιαφέροντα μέρη στὴν Ἀνατολὴ καὶ στὴ Δύση, στὸ Βορρᾶ καὶ στὸ Νότο. Μερικοὶ πηγαίνουν μὲ ἀεροπλάνο ἢ μὲ τραῖνο, ἄλλοι ταξιδεύουν μὲ βαπόρι ἢ μὲ λεωφορεῖο, ἀλλὰ πολλοὶ ἄνθρωποι ταξιδεύουν ἐπίσης μὲ τὰ δικά τους αὐτοκίνητα. Ἡ τουριστικὴ ἐπιχείρηση εἶναι μιὰ καλὴ ἐπιχείρηση στὴν Ἑλλάδα.

Αὔριο ἀναχωρῶ γιὰ τὴ Ρόδο μὲ τοὺς Γαλάνηδες. Εἶμαι πολὺ εὐτυχισμένος.

EXERCISE 199

CONVERSATION

Was it a busy year for Tom?
Has he studied hard?
Has he learned a lot about Greek life?
Was it hard for him to speak Greek?
Were the people friendly?
Did they help him?
Who are his best friends?
Does he have other friends, too?
Have they invited him to their homes?

Did they ask him many questions about his country?
Has he travelled by buses and trains?
Has he gone shopping?
Does he like Greek food now?
Is Athens the largest city in Greece?
Is it the noisiest city, too?
Does it have tallest buildings?
Can people hear the best music?
Can they see the best plays?
Do Greeks like to travel?
Is their country large?
What do they want to see?
How do they travel?
Do they take bus trips or boat trips?
Do many people travel in their own cars, too?

EXERCISE 200

Συμπληρῶστε τὸ ρῆμα στὴν παρένθεση στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο, π.χ.:

They (go) when we arrived.
They had gone when we arrived.

They did not know where Mr. Galanis (go).
They said that he ... not ... (be) at his office.
I ... (write) the letter before I received yours.
I ... (make) my plans before I knew that they were coming.
I ... not ... (understand) the lesson until you told me.
The man ... not ... (come) when I left the office.
I understood I ... (take) another number.
They ... (be) in Washington two days when I arrived.
After I ... (finish) breakfast I sat down to read the paper.
I did not leave until I (read) the newspaper.

EXERCISE 201

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ already ἢ yet ἀναλόγως, π.χ.:

Has the class begun **yet**?

Has your brother left? no, he has not left . . .
Have they visited Washington . . . ?
Yes, they have . . . been there.
Have you bought your ticket . . . ?
No, I have not bought it . . .
They were not going to come early, but they are . . . here.
I have not decided what to do . . .
Has he finished it . . . ?
No, he has not finished it . . .
He have . . . studied this lessòn.
Is it time to go . . . ?
No, . . .
Is he a citizen . . . ?
No, he has to wait two years . . .
Does he have his new car . . . ?
Yes, he has . . . had it for a week.

EXERCISE 202

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις, π.χ.:

They have taken many trips **in** their car.

He has worked there . . . many years . . . 1940.
There are many beautiful buildings . . .Washington.
Look . . . the new leaves . . . the trees.
This is Ann' s first trip . . . the capital.
She has gone . . . the senior class.
They went there . . . bus.
There are forty . . . them and two teachers.
Ann has not seen Sue . . . last year.
How is Ann going to get . . . Sue' s house?
Have you made any plans . . . your vacation?
. . . fact it is larger than Chicago.

EXERCISE 203

Γράψτε στὴ σωστὴ σειρὰ τὶς προτάσεις:

the, brown showed, coats, clerk, first, several, Mr. Galanis.
it, one, too, but, was, liked, expensive, Mr. Galanis.
he, some, too, gray, did, coats, try on?
her, buy, does, clothes, usually, ready - made, Mr. Galanis?
some, what, for, about, tonight, dessert, ice - cream?
very, has, that, good, corner, ice - cream, drugstore.

EXERCISE 204

Συμπληρῶστε τὶς ἐρωτήσεις μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο τοῦ ρήματος, ποὺ εἶναι στὴν παρένθεση. 'Απαντῆστε, π.χ.:

How long ... Mary ... her lessons? (study)
How long has Mary studied her lessons? She has studied her lessons for an hour.

How long ... you ... for a bus? (wait)
How long ... you ... English? (study)
How long ... we ... this book? (use)
How long ... the Galanis ... Tom? (know)
How long ... Mr. Galanis ... a car? (drive)
How long ... John ... for the same company? (work)
How long ... he ... tennis? (play)
How long ... Jim Smith ... in New York? (be)
How long ... Mary ... to the city? (stay)
How long ... you ... this book? (read)

EXERCISE 205

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις.

We went downtown ... Saturday.
I took my umbrella because it looked ... rain.
We went ... a department store ... Fifth Avenue.
It opened ... ten o' clock ... the morning.
First I bought a sweater ... my sister.

Then I looked . . . some hats . . . the fourth floor.
That coat looks very good . . . Mr. Galanis.
He can wear it . . . all his suits.
It is a good coat . . . the price.
I like the color . . . it.
Do you often look . . . television?
Do you often go . . . the theater?
Mrs. Brown' s brother is . . . New York.
He came to visit the Dawsons . . . February.
There are many trees . . . the United States.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 189

Please, say the numbers from one to twenty.
Please, tell me your telephone number.
Please, tell her your address.
Please, say the names of the days of the week.
Please, tell us the final score of the game.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 190

Mrs. Galanis said: «We are going downtown».
She said that she was going home.
She told us that they were going to the movies.
Mr. Galanis said: «I need a new coat».
He said that he liked the first coat.
He told his wife to buy a new hat.
He said to her «I want to get a brown coat».
He said that he liked it but it was expensive.
He told her that he wanted the gray coat.
She said «your last coat was brown».
She said that his last coat was brown.
She told him to buy a film.
She said to the clerk «I like a pair of gloves».
She said that she was hungry.
She told the clerk that she was tired.
Mary said to her mother «I want a new dress».
She said that she wanted a new dress.
She told her that she liked the style of the red dress.
Ann said to Betty «I am going downtown for lunch».

She said that she was with the students.
She told her that there were forty of them.
She said: «I like New York very much».
She told her that she liked the United States.
He told her that he wanted to stay for two weeks.
I said: «I want to stay for two weeks».

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 191

Have there been some good concerts recently? Yes, there have. They were two good concerts last week.

Have the Scotts been in New York? Yes, they have. They were there a year ago.

Have they driven their new car? Yes, they have. They drove it yesterday.

Have you given them your new address? Yes, I have. I gave them my new address last night.

Have your friends come? Yes, they have. They came two days ago.

Have you spoken to them about the ballet? Yes, I have. I spoke to them yesterday.

Have they gone to a movie tonight? Yes, they have. They went to a movie an hour ago.

Has Mrs. Brown torn her new dress? Yes, she has. She tore it to church last Sunday.

Has she done her shopping today? Yes, she has. She did them this morning.

Has she eaten her lunch? Yes, she has. She ate it at twelve o' clock.

Has Mr. Smith been busy recently? Yes, he has. He was very busy yesterday.

Have the Browns seen Jim Smith recently? Yes, they have. They saw him two weeks ago.

Has he written to them this week? Yes, he has. He wrote to them on Friday.

Has he gotten some theater tickets for them? Yes, he has. He got them last week.

Has Ann studied history and mathematics? Yes, she has. She studied them last year.

Has she forgotten her notebook today? Yes, she has. She forgot it yesterday, too.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 192

Clothes are cheaper in this store than in that store.
One play was more interesting than the other play.
It was more serious.
Some musicals are funnier than others.
The seats are more expensive downstairs than in the balcony.
It is harder to get seats in the balcony than downstairs.
The Scotts have been to New York more recently than the Dawsons.
Washington is more beautiful than New York.
There are cheaper shops in New York than in any other city.
Some people are more efficient than others.
Boys are often more active than girls.
They are often noisier, too.
Ann is younger than her brother.
A small town is quieter than a big city.
The people are often friendlier, too.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 193

Baseball is more popular than football.
The game today was more exciting than the last game.
Our team played more interesting than the other team.
Our boys ran faster than the others.
It has been colder this year than it was last year.
It has been hotter today than it was yesterday.
It was windier (more windy) yesterday than it is today.
Your green dress is longer than your blue dress.
My brown shoes are older than my black shoes.
His new coat is warmer than his old coat.
I am busier today than I was yesterday.
I am sleepier this morning than I was last night.
Their house is bigger than ours.
This meeting is more important than the last meeting.
This theater is more crowded than the others.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 194

Ann is the prettiest girl in her class.
She speaks the best Spanish of all the students.
Miss Lee is the youngest teacher at school.
Her classroom is the smallest room on the second floor.
February is the shortest month in the year.
Yesterday was the hottest day in this summer.
It was also the luckiest day of my life.
Baseball is the most popular sport in the United States.
The game yesterday was the most important game of the season.
It was also the most exciting of all the games.
Washington D. C. isn' t the largest city in the United States.
New York is the biggest of all the cities.
Washington is one of the most beautiful cities in the country.
New York has the tallest buildings of any city.
The tallest building of all has 102 floors.
New York has the most theaters and the most subways of any city.
Broadway and Fifth Avenue are two of the most famous streets in New York.
Broadway is also one of the longest streets.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 195

Is this the longest lesson in the book? No, it is not the longest lesson in the book.

Which lesson was the shortests of all? The shortest lesson of all was the second lesson.

Which lesson was the hardest for you? The hardest lesson for me was the last lesson.

Which lesson was the most interesting of all? The most interesting of all was the tenth lesson.

What' s the most popular sport in your country? The most popular sport in my country is football.

What is the most beautiful city in your country? The most beautiful city in my country is my city.

Which city is the most modern? The most modern city is Athens.

What is the busiest street in this city? The busiest street in this city is the Second Street.

What is the tallest building here? The tallest building here is the second on the right corner.

What is the best newspaper here? The best newspaper here is the morning paper.

EXERCISE 196

Do you have to buy tickets weeks **in** advance?
Where do you like to sit, downstairs or **in** the balcony?
The Smiths like to travel **by** car.
New York has the most theaters **of** any city **in** the country.
They have taken many trips **in** their car.
There are good streets **in** all parts **of** the country.
There is a lot of traffic **at** the streets **in** the summer.
There are many government buildings **in** Washington.
The city is very pretty **in** the spring.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 197

How long have the Dawsons been married? They have been married for twenty - two years, b) They have been married since 1940.

How long has Mr. Dawson worked for the same company? He has worked for the same company for many years, b) He has worked for the same company since 1955.

How long has Bill been at the University? He has been there for three years, b) He has been since 1960.

How long have you studied English? I have studied English for one year, b) I have studied English since last year.

How long have you lived in the same house? I have lived there for three years, b) I have lived there since 1960.

Have you gone to the dentist recently? No, I have not gone for six months, b) No, I have not gone since 1960.

Have the boys played tennis recently? No, they have not played for a long time, b) No, they have not played since last fall.

Has Betty come to class recently? No, she has not come for several days, b), No, she has not come since last Tuesday.

Have you talked with her today? No, I have not talked with her for two days, b) No, I have not talked with her since last Monday.

Have the Smiths taken a trip recently? No, they have not taken a trip for a year, b) No, they have not taken a trip since last year.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 198

He has had his new car **since** last week.
We have waited here **for** twenty minutes.
We have been there **since** eight o' clock.
It has rained **for** more than two hours.
It has rained **since** early this morning.
I have known the Clarks **since** 1952.
Mrs. Clark has been in the hospital **for** a week.
I have not seen her **since** Saturday afternoon.
I have not written any letter **for** a month.
There has not been a good movie here **for** several weeks.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 199

Yes, it was a very busy year for Tom.
Yes, he has studied hard.
Yes, he has learned a lot about Greek life.
Yes, it was hard for him to speak Greek.
Yes, the people were friendly.
Yes, they helped him.
His best friends are the Galanis.
Yes, he has other Greek friends, too.
Yes, they have invited him to their homes.
Yes, they asked him many questions about his country.

Yes, he has travelled by buses and trains.
Yes, he has gone shopping.
Yes, he likes Greek food now.
Yes, Athens is the largest city in Greece.
Yes, it is the noisiest city, too.
Yes, it has the tallest buildings of any city of Greece.
Yes, people can hear the best music.
Yes, they can see the best plays.
Yes, Greeks like to travel very much.
No, their country is not large.
They want to see all the interesting places in the East and the West, the North and the South.
They travel by plane, by train, by boat, by bus or in their cars, too.
Yes, they do.
Yes, they do.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 200

They did not know where Mr. Galanis had gone.
They said that he had not been at his office.
I had written the letter before I received yours.
I had made my plans before I knew that they were coming.
I had not understood the lesson until you told me.
The man had not come when I left the office.
I understood I had taken another number.
They had been in Washington two days when I arrived.
After I had finished breakfast I sat down to read the paper.
I did not leave until I had read the newspaper.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 201

Has your brother left? no, he has not left yet.
Have they visited Washington yet?
Yes, they have already been there.
Have you bought your ticket yet?
No, I have not bought it yet.

They were going to come early, but they are already here.
I have not decided what to do yet.
Has he finished it yet?
No, he has not finished it yet.
We have already studied this lesson.
Is it time to go yet?
No, yet.
Is he a citizen yet?
No, he has to wait two years yet.
Does he have his new car yet?
Yes, he has already had it for a week.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 202

He has worked there for many years since 1940.
There are many beautiful buildings in Washington.
Look at the new leaves of the trees.
This is Ann' s first trip to the capital.
She has gone out the senior class.
They went there by bus.
There are forty of them and two teachers.
Ann has not seen Sue since last year.
How is Ann going to get to Sue' s house?
Have you made any plans for your vacation?
In fact it is larger than Chicago.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 203

First the clerk showed Mr. Galanis several brown coats.
Mr. Galanis liked one but it was too expensive.
Did he try on some gray coats, too?
Does Mr. Galanis usually buy her clothes ready - made?
What about dessert for tonight, some ice - cream?
That corner drugstore has very good ice - cream.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 204

How long have you waited for a bus?

How long have you studied English?
How long have we used this book?
How long have the Galanis known Tom?
How long has Mr. Galanis driven a car?
How long has John worked for the same company?
How long has he played tennis?
How long has Jim Smith been in New York?
How long has Mary stayed to the city?
How long have you read this book?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 205

We went downtown on Saturday.
I took my umbrella because it looked to rain.
We went to a departement store on Fifth Avenue.
It opened at ten o' clock in the morning.
First I bought a sweater for my sister.
Then I looked for some hats on the fourth floor.
That coat looks very good on Mr. Galanis.
He can wear it with all his suits.
It is a good coat for the price.
I like the color in it.
Do you often look at television?
Do you often go to the theater?
Mrs. Brown' s brother is in New York.
He came to visit the Dawsons in February.
There are many trees in the United States.

VOCABULARY

plan	(πλαεν)	=	σχέδιο
citizen	(σίτιζεν)	=	πολίτης
leaf	(λιφ)	=	φύλλο (δένδρου)
tree	(τρίι)	=	δέντρο
fact	(φακτ)	=	γεγονὸς

in fact	(ιν φακτ)	=	πράγματι (really)
look	(λουκ)	=	κυττάζω, φαίνομαι
blond - blonde	(μπλοντ)	=	ξανθὸς - ἡ
doorbell	(ντόορμπελ)	=	κουδούνι τῆς πόρτας
answer the door	(άνσερ δε ντόορ)	=	ἀνοίγω τὴν πόρτα
postman	(πόστμαεν)	=	ταχυδρόμος
worth	(γουὲρθ)	=	ἀξία
worthy	(γουέρθι)	=	ἄξιος - α - ο
grade	(γκρέϊντ)	=	βαθμὸς
attend	(ατὲντ)	=	παρακαλουθῶ, φοιτῶ
dormitory	(ντόρμιτόρι)	=	οἰκοτροφεῖο, ξενώνας, κοιτώνας
social	(σόchαλ)	=	κοινωνικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
society	(σοσάϊετι)	=	κοινωνία
college town	(κάλεντj τάουν)	=	κολλεγιούπολη
real estate company	(ρίαλ εστέϊτ κόμπανι)	=	κτηματικὴ ἑταιρία
estate	(εστέϊτ)	=	περιουσία
brick	(μπρικ)	=	κεραμίδι
wood	(γουντ)	=	ξύλο, δάσος
porch	(πορτch)	=	βεράντα
front	(φραντ)	=	μπροστινὸς - ἡ - ό,
in front of	(ιν φραντ οφ)	=	μπροστὰ ἀπὸ
around	(αεράουντ)	=	γύρω
upstairs	(άπστεεζ)	=	στὸ πάνω πάτωμα
ligth	(λάϊτ)	=	φωτεινὸς - ἡ - ὁ
fireplace	(φάϊρπλέϊς)	=	τζάκι
sofa	(σόφα)	=	καναπὲς
floor - lamp	(φλόορ - λαμπ)	=	λαμπατὲρ (πατώματος)
table - lamp	(τέϊμπλ λαμπ)	=	λαμπατὲρ (τραπεζιοῦ)
bookcase	(μπουκκέϊς)	=	βιβλιοθήκη (ἔπιπλο)
record	(ρικὸρντ)	=	δίσκος γραμμοφώνου
record player	(ρικὸρντ πλέγιερ)	=	πὶκ - ἂπ
idea	(αϊντία)	=	ἰδέα
while	(houάϊλ)	=	ἐνῶ

grammar	(γκράμερ)	=	γραμματική
ocean	(óchev)	=	ὠκεανὸς
rose	(ρόοζ)	=	τριαντάφυλλο, τὸ χρῶμα ρὸζ
stamp	(σταεμπ)	=	γραμματόσημο
voice	(βόϊς)	=	φωνὴ
miss	(μις)	=	μοῦ λείπει κάτι ἢ κάποιος, νιώθω τὴν ἔλλειψή του
hope	(hoπ)	=	ἐλπίζω, ἐλπίδα
roof	(ρουφ)	=	στέγη
proof	(προυφ)	=	ἀπόδειξη
cuff	(καφ)	=	μανικέτι
cat	(καετ)	=	γάτα
hero	(hίρο)	=	ἥρωας
Negro	(νίγκρο)	=	Νέγρος
deer	(ντιρ)	=	ἐλάφι
sheep	(chιπ)	=	πρόβατο
cry	(κράϊ)	=	φωνάζω, κλαίω
pass	(πας)	=	περνῶ
cease	(σιζ)	=	παύω
ceaseless	(σίζλες)	=	ἀκατάπαυστος - η - ο
change	(τchéϊντj)	=	ἀλλάζω, ἀλλαγὴ
cash	(καch)	=	ἐξαργυρώνω
fix	(φιξ)	=	στερεώνω
mix	(μιξ)	=	ἀνακατώνω
buzz	(μπαζ)	=	βομβῶ, βόμβος
name	(νέϊμ)	=	ὀνομάζω, διορίζω, ὄνομα

TEXT

Ann Galanis is now a beautiful blonde girl; she is twenty years and she lives in the United States, in New York where she is studying chemistry.

Kɔstas Galanis, her brother, is always studying engineering in Athens University.

The doorbell rings. Kostas answers the door and finds the postman there with a letter. The letter is from his sister Ann. Ann has one of the scholarships which the school gives to worthy students. Ann was a very good student at school and her grades were excellent.

Ann writes that she is learning a great deal at the University, which she is attending. She has many classes in the morning and some in the afternoon. She does not live at the girls dormitory at the University. She eats her meals at the cafeteria at school. The meals are good and they are not very expensive.

The Galanis expect to see her again next summer. They know that she is having a good time, but they miss her very much. She writes to them very often and so they learn about her lessons and her social life.

Ann Galanis lives with Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd in a college town. Their address is 208 Stevenson Street. Mr. Lloyd is renting the house from a real estate company. He pays one hundred dollars a month for it. The house is made of brick and wood. There is a large front porch and a big yard around the house. There is no wall around the yard. The front yard has a nice green lawn and the back yard has many pretty flowers. It is a pretty house with four rooms upstairs and four rooms downstairs. The rooms downstairs are the living-room, the library, the dining-room and the kitchen. There are four bedrooms and a bath upstairs. The living-room is large and light; it has a fireplace, several tables and chairs, a sofa, a floor-lamp and three table-lamps. There are also a bookcase and a radio with a record player. It is really a nice house and Ann likes it. It is not like the houses at her country. It is bigger with two floors, with many windows and lighter.

TRANSLATION

῾Η Ἄννα Γαλάνη εἶναι τώρα ἕνα ὄμορφο ξανθὸ κορίτσι. Εἶναι εἴκοσι χρονῶν καὶ μένει στὶς ῾Ηνωμένες Πολιτεῖες, στὴν Νέα ῾Υόρκη, ὅπου σπουδάζει χημεία.

῾Ο Κώστας Γαλάνης, ὁ ἀδελφός της, σπουδάζει πάντοτε μηχανικὴ στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο Ἀθηνῶν.

Τὸ κουδούνι τῆς πόρτας χτυπᾶ. Ὁ Κώστας ἀνοίγει τὴν πόρτα καὶ βρίσκει τὸν ταχυδρόμο ἐκεῖ μ' ἕνα γράμμα. Τὸ γράμμα εἶναι ἀπὸ τὴν ἀδελφή του Ἄννα. Ἡ Ἄννα ἔχει μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ὑποτροφίες, τὶς ὁποῖες δίνει τὸ σχολεῖο στοὺς ἄξιους μαθητάς. Ἡ Ἄννα ἦταν πολὺ καλὴ μαθήτρια στὸ σχολεῖο κι οἱ βαθμοί της ἦταν ἐξαίρετοι.

Ἡ Ἄννα γράφει, ὅτι μαθαίνει πολλὰ πράματα στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο, ποὺ παρακολουθεῖ (ὅπου φοιτᾶ). Ἔχει πολλὰ μαθήματα τὸ πρωΐ καὶ μερικὰ τὸ ἀπόγευμα. Δὲν μένει στὸν κοιτώνα (οἰκοτροφεῖο) τῶν κοριτσιῶν στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο. Τρώει τὰ γεύματά της στὴν καφετίρια στὸ σχολεῖο. Τὰ γεύματα εἶναι καλὰ καὶ δὲν εἶναι πολὺ ἀκριβά.

Οἱ Γαλάνηδες περιμένουν νὰ τὴν δοῦν πάλι τὸ ἐρχόμενο καλοκαίρι. Ξέρουν, ὅτι διασκεδάζει, ἀλλὰ τοὺς λείπει πάρα-πολὺ (ἡ ἔλλειψή της τοὺς εἶναι πολὺ αἰσθητή). Τοὺς γράφει πολὺ συχνὰ κι ἔτσι αὐτοὶ μαθαίνουν γιὰ τὰ μαθήματά της καὶ τὴν κοινωνική της ζωή.

Ἡ Ἄννα Γαλάνη μένει μὲ τὸν κύριο καὶ τὴν κυρία Λόϋντ σὲ μιὰ κολλεγιούπολη. Ἡ διεύθυνσή τους εἶναι ὁδὸς Στήβενσον ἀριθμὸς 208. Ὁ κύριος Λόϋντ νοικιάζει τὸ σπίτι ἀπὸ μιὰ κτηματικὴ ἑταιρία. Πληρώνει 100 δολλάρια τὸ μήνα γι' αὐτό. Τὸ σπίτι εἶναι φτιαγμένο ἀπὸ τοῦβλα καὶ ξύλο. Ὑπάρχει μιὰ μεγάλη μπροστινὴ βεράντα καὶ μιὰ μεγάλη αὐλὴ γύρω ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι. Δὲν ὑπάρχει τοῖχος γύρω ἀπὸ τὴν αὐλή. Ἡ μπροστινὴ αὐλὴ ἔχει ἕνα ὄμορφο πράσινο παρτέρι κι ἡ πίσω αὐλὴ ἔχει πολλὰ ὄμορφα λουλούδια. Εἶναι ἕνα ὡραῖο σπίτι μὲ τέσσερα δωμάτια στὸ πάνω πάτωμα καὶ τέσσερα δωμάτια στὸ κάτω πάτωμα. Τὰ δωμάτια τοῦ κάτω πατώματος εἶναι τὸ λίβιγκ-ρούμ, ἡ βιβλιοθήκη, ἡ τραπεζαρία κι ἡ κουζίνα. Ὑπάρχουν τέσσερις κρεββατοκάμαρες κι ἕνα λουτρὸ στὸ πάνω πάτωμα. Τὸ λίβιγκ-ροὺμ εἶναι μεγάλο καὶ φωτεινό. Ἔχει ἕνα τζάκι, ἀρκετὰ τραπέζια καὶ καρέκλες, ἕνα καναπέ, ἕνα λαμπατὲρ (λάμπα πατώματος) καὶ τρεῖς ἐπιτραπέζιες λάμπες. Ὑπάρχουν ἐπίσης μιὰ βιβλιοθήκη (ἔπιπλο) κι ἕνα ραδιόφωνο μὲ πὶκ-ἄπ. Εἶναι πραγματικὰ ἕνα χαριτωμένο σπίτι κι ἡ Ἄννα τὸ συμπαθεῖ. Δὲν εἶναι σὰν τὰ σπίτια στὴ χώρα της. Εἶναι μεγαλύτερο, μὲ δυὸ πατώματα, μὲ πολλὰ παράθυρα, καὶ φωτεινότερο.

CONVERSATION

EXERCISE 206

Who, rings the doorbell?
From whom is the letter?

Where is she now?
What is she doing there?
Was Ann a good student at school?
Were her grades excellent?
Is Ann learning a great deal?
Is she having a good time?
Do the Galanis miss her very much?
Who gives scholarships to worthy students?
Does Ann live at the girls dormitory?
Where does she eat her meals?
Are the meals expensive?
When do the Galanis expect her?
Does she write to them very often?
Does she write about her lessons and her social life?
With whom is Ann living?
What is their address?
Does Mr. Lloyd own the house?
Is he renting it?
Where is he renting it from?
How much does he pay?
Of what is the house made?
Is there a large front porch?
Is there a wall around the yard?
Are there many flowers in the garden?
How many rooms are there downstairs?
Name them.
How many rooms are there upstairs?
Name them.
Is the living - room small?
Are there many lamps?
Where is the green lawn?
Does Ann like it?
Is the house like her house?
Is it lighter?

IDIOMS

a great deal (ε γκρέϊτ ντίιλ) = πολὺ
answer the door = ἀνοίγω τὴν πόρτα

have a good time	=	διασκεδάζω
miss a person	=	μοῦ λείπει κάποιος
ne xt summer	=	τὸ ἐρχόμενο καλοκαίρι

ΣΥΝΩΝΥΜΑ

Συνώνυμα εἶναι οἱ λέξεις, ποὺ ἔχουν τὸ ἴδιο νόημα. Ἔτσι τὸ **say** εἶναι συνώνυμο τοῦ **tell**. Ἔχουν καὶ τὰ δυὸ αὐτὰ ρήματα τὴν ἴδια σημασία (λέω).

Ἐπίσης συνώνυμα εἶναι οἱ λέξεις **postman** καὶ **mailman** = ταχυδρόμος.

Πολλὲς φορὲς ὅμως συνηθίζουμε νὰ λέμε συνώνυμα καὶ λέξεις, ποὺ δὲν ἔχουν ὁλότελα τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια, ἀλλὰ περίπου τὴν ἴδια, π. χ.: **hope, expect** καὶ **wait**. Αὐτὸ δὲν εἶναι σωστό. Αὐτὲς οἱ λέξεις, ποὺ δὲν ἔχουν ὁλότελα τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια, ἀλλὰ **περίπου τὴν ἴδια** ἔννοια, δὲν εἶναι καθαυτὸ συνώνυμα, ἀλλὰ **συγγενεῖς λέξεις**. Ἔτσι κι οἱ λέξεις hope, expect καὶ wait δὲν εἶναι συνώνυμα, ἀλλὰ συγγενεῖς λέξεις.

Σὲ τί διαφέρουν ὅμως αὐτὰ τὰ τρία ρήματα;

hope = ἐλπίζω (you are not sure = δὲν εἶσαι βέβαιος).

Examples:

I hope to see you again soon (but I am not sure) = ἐλπίζω νὰ σὲ δῶ πάλι σύντομα (ἀλλὰ δὲν εἶμαι βέβαιος).
I hope that you can come = ἐλπίζω, ὅτι μπορεῖς νὰ ἔλθῃς.
I hope to go to the United States some day = ἐλπίζω νὰ πάω στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες κάποια μέρα.

expect = περιμένω (you are almost sure = εἶσαι σχεδὸν βέβαιος).

Examples:

We expect to see Ann next year (we are almost sure) = περιμένουμε νὰ δοῦμε τὴν Ἄννα τοῦ χρόνου (εἴμαστε σχεδὸν βέβαιοι).
We expect to be here = τὴν περιμένουμε νὰ εἶναι ἐδῶ.
We expect that she will be here = περιμένουμε, ὅτι θὰ εἶναι ἐδῶ.

I expect a letter from my brother = περιμένω γράμμα ἀπὸ τὸν ἀδελφό μου (κι εἶμαι σχεδὸν βέβαιος, πὼς θὰ τὸ πάρω).

wait = περιμένω (a period of time = μιὰ χρονικὴ περίοδο).

Examples:

Wait a minute please = περιμένετε ἕνα λεπτό, παρακαλῶ.
Wait a while and call again = περιμένετε λίγο καὶ ξανακαλέστε.
The postman is waiting at the door = ὁ ταχυδρόμος περιμένει στὴν πόρτα.
He is waiting to see you = περιμένει νὰ σὲ δῇ.

wait for (someone or something) = περιμένω κάποιον ἢ κάτι.

Examples:

Please, wait for me at the corner = παρακαλῶ, περιμένετέ με στὴ γωνία.
He waited ten minutes for the bus = αὐτὸς περίμενε δέκα λεφτὰ γιὰ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
We waited for it to come = τὸν περιμέναμε νὰ ἔλθῃ.

ΤΟ ΓΕΝΟΣ ΣΤΗΝ ΑΓΓΛΙΚΗ ΓΛΩΣΣΑ

Τὸ γένος τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα δὲν πρόκειται νὰ μᾶς δυσκολέψῃ.

Ἀρσενικὰ εἶναι ὅσα εἶναι ἀπὸ τὴν φύση τους ἀρσενικά, π. χ.: man, father κ.λ.π.

Θηλυκὰ εἶναι ὅσα εἶναι ἀπὸ τὴν φύση τους θηλυκά, π. χ.: woman, sister κ.λ.π.

Τέλος ὅλα τὰ ἄψυχα εἶναι οὐδέτερα, π. χ. wall, moon κ.λ.π.

Τὰ ἄρθρα καὶ τὰ ἐπίθετα δὲν ἀλλάζουν κατὰ γένος στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα. Μένουν ἀμετάβλητα καὶ στὸ ἀρσενικὸ καὶ στὸ θηλυκὸ καὶ στὸ οὐδέτερο. Ἐξαίρεση ἀποτελεῖ τὸ ἐπίθετο **blond** = ξανθός. Τὸ θηλυκὸ κάνει **blonde** = ξανθή. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

the blond boy = τὸ ξανθὸ ἀγόρι
the blonde girl = τὸ ξανθὸ κορίτσι

Οἱ ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι κι αὐτὲς ἀμετάβλητες κατὰ γένος. Οἱ μόνες, ποὺ ἀλλάζουν κι ἔχουν διαφορετικοὺς τύπους γιὰ τὸ ἀρσενικό, θηλυκὸ κι οὐδέτερο εἶναι οἱ προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες **he** = αὐτός, **she** = αὐτή, **it** = αὐτό.

Γιὰ τὰ ζῶα χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴν ἀντωνυμία it. Ἐκτὸς ἂν πρόκειται γιὰ τὸ δικό μας οἰκιακὸ ζῶο, ποὺ ἀγαποῦμε, ὁπότε μποροῦμε νὰ βάλουμε he ἢ she.

Ὁρισμένα οὐσιαστικά, ποὺ ἀναφέρονται σὲ πρόσωπα, διαφέρουν στὸ ἀρσενικὸ καὶ στὸ θηλυκὸ γένος. Ὑπάρχει κάποια ἀντιστοιχία μεταξύ τους. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

father (φάδερ)	= πατέρας	**mother** (μάδερ)	= μητέρα
husband (hάσμπαντ)	= ὁ σύζυγος	**wife** (γουάϊφ)	= ἡ σύζυγος
son (σον)	= γιὸς	**daughter** (ντότερ)	= κόρη
brother (μπράδερ)	= ἀδελφὸς	**sister** (σίστερ)	= ἀδελφὴ
boy (μπόϊ)	= ἀγόρι	**girl** (γκερλ)	= κορίτσι
uncle (ανκλ)	= θεῖος	**aunt** (αντ)	= θεία
nephew (νέφιου)	= ἀνεψιὸς	**niece** (νις)	= ἀνεψιὰ
male (μέϊλ)	= ἀρσενικὸ	**female** (φιμέϊλ)	= θηλυκὸ
king (κινγκ)	= βασιλιὰς	**queen** (κουΐν)	= βασίλισσα
monk (μονκ)	= καλόγερος	**nun** (ναν)	= καλόγρια
actor (αέκτορ)	= ὁ ἠθοποιὸς	**actress** (αέκτρες)	= ἡ ἠθοποιὸς
host (hοστ)	= οἰκοδεσπότης	**hostess** (hόστες)	= οἰκοδέσποινα
bridegroom (μπράϊντγκρουμ)	= γαμπρὸς	**bride** (μπράϊν)	= νύφη

ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ **in, on, at.**

Ἡ πρόθεση **in** χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς παρακάτω περιπτώσεις:

Μὲ ὀνόματα ἀπὸ μῆνες, χρόνους κι ἐποχές, ὅπως in March, in 1949, in the winter π. χ.:

Mary will go to the United States in March = ἡ Μαίρη θὰ πάη στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες τὸν Μάρτιο.
The second semester begins in February = τὸ δεύτερο ἑξάμηνο ἀρχίζει τὸν Φεβρουάριο.
He went to school in 1950 = πῆγε στὸ σχολεῖο τὸ 1950.
The Galanis have not been to New York in 1958 = οἱ Γαλάνηδες δὲν ἔχουν πάει στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη τὸ 1958.
It is very cold there in the winter = κάνει πολὺ κρύο ἐκεῖ τὸ χειμώνα.
In the spring the popular sport is football = τὴν ἄνοιξη τὸ δημοφιλὲς σπὸρ εἶναι τὸ ποδόσφαιρο.

Ἡ πρόθεση **in** χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ γιὰ τμῆμα τῆς ἡμέρας σὲ γενικὴ ἔννοια, ὅπως, in the morning, in the afternoon, in the evening, ἀλλὰ tomorrow morning, yesterday morning, π. χ.:

He goes to school in the morning at seven o' clock = πάει στὸ σχολεῖο τὸ πρωῒ στὶς ἑφτὰ ἡ ὥρα.
Mary has a study period in the afternoon = ἡ Μαίρη ἔχει μιὰ ὥρα μελέτης τὸ ἀπόγευμα.
In the evening she usually plays tennis = τὸ ἀπόγευμα αὐτὴ συνήθως παίζει τέννις.

Ἡ πρόθεση **in** χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ γιὰ νὰ δείξη τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ «ἐντὸς», τοῦ τόπου, π. χ.:

Ann is in the United States = ἡ Ἄννα εἶναι στὶς Η. Π. Α.
She lives in a college town = κατοικεῖ σὲ μιὰ κολλεγιούπολη.
His office is in that building = τὸ γραφεῖο του εἶναι σ' αὐτὸ τὸ κτίριο.
The letters are in the drawer of this desk = τὰ γράμματα εἶναι στὸ συρτάρι αὐτοῦ τοῦ γραφείου.
Please sit in this chair = παρακαλῶ, κάθησε σ' αὐτὴ τὴν καρέκλα.

Ἡ πρόθεση **on** χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς ἀκόλουθες περιπτώσεις:

Μὲ τὶς μέρες τῆς ἑβδομάδας καὶ μὲ τὶς ἡμερομηνίες π. χ. on Tuesday, on the tenth of March ἢ on March tenth, ἀλλὰ next Tuesday, next March, last Tuesday, last March.

Όταν ἔχουμε τὸ next καὶ τὸ last, δὲν ἔχουμε οὔτε πρόθεση οὔτε ἄρθρο. Ἔχουμε ἄρθρο μόνο, ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ μιλήσουμε γιὰ μιὰ ὁρισμένη μέρα, π. χ.:

He has his English lessons on Monday, Wednesday and Friday = ἔχει τὰ ἀγγλικά του μαθήματα τὴν Δευτέρα, Τετάρτη καὶ Παρασκευή.
He has his birthday on the tenth of March, ἢ he has his birthday on March tenth = ἔχει τὰ γενέθλιά του στὶς δέκα Μαρτίου.

Ἡ πρόθεση **on** χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση «ἐπάνω σὲ χῶρο, σὲ ἐπιφάνεια». Ἐπίσης γιὰ νὰ φανερώνη μιὰ ἀτελῆ διεύθυνση, δηλαδὴ ὁδὸ χωρὶς ἀριθμό, π. χ.:

The rug is on the floor = τὸ χαλὶ εἶναι ἐπάνω στὸ πάτωμα.
The pictures are on the wall = οἱ εἰκόνες εἶναι ἐπάνω στὸ τοῖχο.
She lives on University Street = κατοικεῖ στὴν ὁδὸ Πανεπιστημίου.
Please, sit on this sofa = παρακαλῶ κάθησε σ' αὐτὸν τὸν καναπέ.

Ἡ πρόθεση **at** χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση μία ὁρισμένη ὥρα ἢ ἕναν ὁρισμένο τόπο.

Γιὰ νὰ δείξη χρόνο χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ ὧρες, λεπτὰ καὶ μὲ τὶς λέξεις noon, night καὶ midnight: At six o' clock, at ten minutes to two, at half past five, at noon, at night, at midnight, π. χ.:

He went to the movies at six o' clock last night = πῆγε στὸν κινηματογράφο στὶς ἕξι ἡ ὥρα χτὲς τὸ βράδυ.
He goes to school at eight o' clock every morning = πάει στὸ σχολεῖο στὶς ὀχτὼ ἡ ὥρα κάθε πρωΐ.
He has to be at his office at two minutes to nine = πρέπει νὰ βρίσκεται στὸ γραφεῖο του στὶς ἐννέα παρὰ δύο λεπτά.
At half past five he drinks tea = στὶς πέντε καὶ μισὴ πίνει τσάϊ.
He does not study at noon = δὲν μελετᾶ τὸ μεσημέρι.
Mary went very late at home last night. She went there at midnight = ἡ Μαίρη πῆγε στὸ σπίτι πολὺ ἀργὰ χθὲς τὸ βράδυ. Πῆγε ἐκεῖ τὰ μεσάνυχτα.

Ἡ πρόθεση **at** ἐπίσης εἶναι, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση ἀκριβῆ διεύθυνση (ὁδὸ κι ἀριθμό), ἕναν ὁρισμένο τόπο ,ὅπου βρίσκεται κάποιος ἢ κάτι, π. χ.:

They are at home = αὐτοὶ βρίσκονται στὸ σπίτι.
The postman is at the door = ὁ ταχυδρόμος εἶναι στὴν πόρτα.
She lives at 431 University Street = κατοικεῖ στὴν ὁδὸ Πανεπιστημίου 431.
She writes her name at the end of the letter = γράφει τὸ ὄνομά της στὸ τέλος τοῦ γράμματος.
We are studying English at the University = ἐμεῖς μελετοῦμε ἀγγλικὰ στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο.

EXERCISE 207

Γράψτε 7 συνώνυμα ἢ συγγενεῖς λέξεις. Γράψτε καὶ τὴ σημασία τους ἑλληνικά, π. χ.:

postman = mailman = ταχυδρόμος.

EXERCISE 208

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ at ἢ on, ἂν χρειάζεται, π. χ.:

.... March - in March.

.... Sunday	.... the summer
.... First Street	.... Saturday
.... 431 University Street	.... last Saturday
.... the evening	 1950
.... night	.... the top of the page
.... next Sunday	.... July 4
.... December 7	.... noon
.... December	.... 1025 Fifth Avenue
.... the spring	.... the morning

EXERCISE 209

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ at, in, on.

She is .... the University this morning.
He is sitting .... the table.
The lamp is .... the desk.
Mrs. Brown is .... home.
They live .... Stadium Street.
There are many flowers .... the yard.
The name is .... the door of the house.
His birthday is .... June.
His birthday is .... June 4.
He arrives .... New York .... six o' clock .... the morning.

EXERCISE 210

Διαλέξτε ἀπὸ τὶς δυὸ λέξεις στὴν παρένθεση τὴ σωστὴ λέξη.

They knew all about my friend and (I - me).
I came here with John and (her - she).
John gave Tom and (I - me) an ice - cream.
We went to the pictures with (he - him) and his friends.
What' s the name of (she - her) who came first?
There are some letters for you and (me - I).
Go with John and (her - she) to visit (they - them).
My sister and (I - me) told (he - him) a story.

EXERCISE 211

Γράψτε στὴ θέση τῶν λέξεων στὴν παρένθεση μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ἀντικειμενικὲς ἀντωνυμίες me, you, him, her, it, us, you, them, π. χ.:

She lives in (a college town) with (the Lloyds)= she lives in it with them.

Mr. Lloyd is renting (the house).
I see (Mr. Lloyd) every day.
Ann attends (the University).

The students like (Ann).
We like (her letters) very much.
They are speaking with (the teacher).
The teacher is explaining the lesson to (the students).
Ann usually answers (the questions).
Ann is going to a dance with (John).
We receive many letters from (Ann).
You have (the letters) in your desk.
The news is about (George).

XX

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 206

The postman rings the doorbell.
The letter is from Ann.
She is in the United States now.
She is studying chemistry.
Yes, Ann was a very good student at school.
Yes, her grades were excellent.
Yes, Ann is learning a great deal at the University.
Yes, she is having a good time.
Yes, they miss her very much.
The school gives scholarships to worthy students.
No, Ann doesn' t live at the girls dormitory.
She eats her meals at the cafeteria at school.
No, the meals are not very expensive.
The Galanis expect to see her again next summer.
Yes, she writes to them very often.
Yes, she writes about her lessons and her social life.
Ann is living with Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd in a college town.
Their address is 208 Stevenson Street.
No, Mr. Lloyd doesn' t own the house.
Yes, he is renting it.
He is renting it from a real estate company.
He pays one hundred dollars a month for it.
The house is made of brick and wood.
Yes, there is a large front porch.
No, there is no wall around the yard.
Yes, there are many pretty flowers in the back yard.
There are four rooms downstairs.
The rooms downstairs are the living - room, the library, the

dining - room and the kitchen.
There are four rooms upstairs, too.
The rooms upstairs are four bedrooms and a bath.
No, the living - room is large.
Yes, there are a floor - lamp and three table - lamps.
The green lawn is in the front yard.
Yes, Ann likes it.
No, it is not like the house at her country.
Yes, it is lighter.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 207

postman	-	mailman	=	ταχυδρόμος
receive	-	take	=	παίρνω
take a trip	-	travel	=	ταξιδεύω
of course	-	certainly	=	βέβαια
copybook	-	notebook	=	τετράδιο
expect	-	wait	=	περιμένω
say	-	tell	=	λέω

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 208

on Sunday
on First Street
at 431 University Street
in the evening
at night
next Sunday
on December 7
in December
in the spring
in the summer
on Saturday
last Saturday
in 1950
on the top of the page
on July 4
at noon
on Fifth Avenue
at 1025 Fifth Avenue
in the morning

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 209

She is at the University this morning.

He is sitting at the table.
The lamp is on the desk.
Mrs. Brown is at home.
They live on Stadium Street.
There are many flowers in the yard.
The name is on the door of the house.
His birthday is in June.
His birthday is on June 4.
He arrives in New York at six o' clock in the morning.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 210

They knew all about my friend and me.
I came here with John and her.
John gave Tom and me an ice - cream.
We went to the pictures with him and his friends.
What' s the name of her, who came first?
There are some letters for you and me.
Go with John and her to visit them.
My sister and I told him a story.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 211

Mr. Lloyd is renting it.
I see him every day.
Ann attends it.
The students like her.
We like them very much.
They are speaking with him.
The teacher is explaining the lesson to them.
Ann usually answers them.
Ann is going to a dance with him.
We receive many letters from her.
You have them in your desk.
The news is about him.

ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑ

(Pronoun)

Ἡ **ἀντωνυμία** (pronoun) εἶναι μία λέξη, ποὺ χρησιμοποιεῖται ἀντὶ τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ, π. χ.: he has, you ate κλπ.

Ὑπάρχουν πολλὰ εἴδη ἀντωνυμιῶν: οἱ προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, οἱ ἀναφορικές, οἱ δεικτικές, οἱ ἐρωτηματικές, οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς, οἱ ἐμφατικὲς κι οἱ ἀλληλοπαθεῖς.

Στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα τὸ κάθε εἶδος ἀπ' αὐτὲς τὶς ἀντωνυμίες ἔχει τὴν ἀντίστοιχη ὀνομασία, ὅπως φαίνεται στὸν παρακάτω πίνακα:

ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ = PRONOUNS

personal	=	προσωπικὲς
possessive	=	κτητικὲς
relative	=	ἀναφορικὲς
demonstrative	=	δεικτικὲς
interrogative	=	ἐρωτηματικὲς
reflexive	=	αὐτοπαθεῖς
indefinite	=	ἀόριστες
reciprocal	=	ἀλληλοπαθεῖς

ΠΡΟΣΩΠΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Personal Pronouns)

Ἡ **προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία** εἶναι τὸ ἄμεσο ὑποκατάστατο τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ, δηλαδὴ εἶναι ἡ λέξη ἐκείνη, ποὺ πραγματικὰ ἀντικαθιστᾶ ὁλότελα τὸ οὐσιαστικό. Ὅπως καὶ τὸ οὐσιαστικό, ἔτσι κι ἡ προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία ἔχει ἀριθμό, γένος καὶ πτώση. Ἔχει ὅμως καὶ κάτι ἄλλο: **πρόσωπο** (person).

Ὑπάρχουν τρία πρόσωπα:

α) **τὸ πρῶτο πρόσωπο** (first person), ποὺ δείχνει αὐτὸν ποὺ μιλάει,

β) **τὸ δεύτερο πρόσωπο** (second person), ποὺ δείχνει αὐτόν, πρός τὸν ὁποῖον μιλᾶνε καὶ

γ) **τὸ τρίτο πρόσωπο** (third person), ποὺ δείχνει ἕνα πρόσωπο ἢ ἕνα πρᾶγμα διαφορετικὸ ἀπ' αὐτὸν ποὺ μιλάει κι ἀπ' αὐτόν, πρὸς τὸν ὁποῖον μιλᾶνε.

Ἐπὶ πλέον οἱ προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, ὅπως κι ὅλες οἱ ἄλλες ἀντωνυμίες, ἔχουν καὶ κάτι ἄλλο, ποὺ τὶς ξεχωρίζει γραμματικῶς ἀπὸ τὰ οὐσιαστικά: ἐνῶ τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ δὲν ἀλλάζουν τύπο στὶς διάφορες πτώσεις, οἱ ἀντωνυμίες ἀλλάζουν. Ἔτσι οἱ ἀντωνυμίες ἔχουν ἄλλον τύπο γιὰ τὴν ὀνομαστική, ἄλλον γιὰ τὴ γενικὴ κι ἄλλον γιὰ τὴν αἰτιατική.

Παρακάτω παραθέτουμε ἕναν πίνακα τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα, ἀριθμούς, γένη καὶ πτώσεις.

Singular

	Nominative	Possessive	Objective
1st person:	I	my, mine	me
2nd person	you	your, yours	you
3rd person			
masculine:	he	his	him
feminine:	she	her, hers	her
neuter:	it	its	it

Plural

1rst person:	we	our, ours	us
2nd person	you	your, yours	you
3rd person:			
all genders:	they	their, theirs	them

Παρατηρήσεις

α) Καθὼς βλέπουμε στὸν παραπάνω πίνακα, μόνο στὸ γ' ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο

συναντοῦμε διαφορετικὸ τύπο γιὰ τὸ ἀρσενικὸ (he), διαφορετικὸ γιὰ τὸ θηλυκὸ (she) καὶ διαφορετικὸ γιὰ τὸ οὐδέτερο (it).

Τὸ it ἑπομένως τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε γιὰ πράματα καὶ ζῶα κι ὄχι γιὰ πρόσωπα. Ὡστόσο ὑπάρχει καὶ μιὰ ἐξαίρεση: Χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ it συχνά, ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ δείξουμε ἕνα ἄγνωστο πρόσωπο, π. χ.:

Someone was moving stealthily about the room; it was a burglar = κάποιος ἐκινεῖτο ὕποπτα γύρω ἀπὸ τὸ δωμάτιο. Ἦταν ἕνας διαρρήκτης.

β) Ἡ γενικὴ τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν, τόσο στὸν ἑνικὸ ἀριθμὸ ὅσο καὶ στὸν πληθυντικό, σχηματίζει τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα καὶ τὶς κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες (possessive adjectives, possessive pronouns). Ἀλλὰ γι' αὐτὰ θὰ μιλήσουμε ἀναλυτικότερα πιὸ κάτω.

γ) Στὴν σωστὴ ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα (formal English) ὅταν ἡ ἀντωνυμία ἀκολουθῆ τὸ ρῆμα be (εἶναι δηλαδὴ συνήθως κατηγορούμενο), τότε μπαίνει στὴν **ὀνομαστικὴ** κι ὄχι στὴν αἰτιατική, π. χ.:

I did this.
It is I who did this.

Ἀλλὰ στὴ δημοτική, στὴν καθομιλουμένη ἀγγλική, χρησιμοποιεῖται συχνὰ στὴν παραπάνω περίπτωση ἡ αἰτιατικὴ ἀντὶ τῆς ὀνομαστικῆς τῆς προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμίας.

Ἔτσι ἀντὶ γιὰ τὸ σωστό:

It is I who did this

στὴν καθομιλουμένη συχνὰ λέγεται λανθασμένα:

It is me who did this.

Εἶναι βέβαια προτιμότερο νὰ χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν σωστὸ τύπο κι ὄχι τὸν λανθασμένο.

δ) Τὸ I, δηλαδὴ ἡ ὀνομαστικὴ ἑνικοῦ τῆς προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμίας τοῦ πρώτου προσώπου, γράφεται πάντοτε μὲ κεφαλαῖο γράμμα. Οἱ ἄλλες ὅμως πτώσεις τῆς ἴδιας ἀντωνυμίας (me, us) γράφονται μὲ μικρὸ γράμμα.

ε) Τὸ we (us) εἶναι ὁ πληθυντικὸς τοῦ I, καθὼς τὸ fathers εἶναι ὁ πληθυντικὸς τοῦ father. Ἀλλὰ we (ἐμεῖς) δὲν σημαίνει δύο ἢ περισσότερα «ἐγώ», ἀλλὰ «ἐγὼ καὶ σύ» (I and you) ἢ «ἐγὼ κι αὐτὸς» (I and he) ἢ «ἐγὼ κι αὐτοὶ οἱ ἄλλοι» (I and all these other people).

Ὡστόσο συχνὰ χρησιμοποιεῖται στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ἡ ἀντωνυμία we (ἐμεῖς) ἀντὶ τῆς I (ἐγώ).

Ἔχει καθιερωθῆ ἕνας ἀρθρογράφος, εἴτε ἀπὸ λόγους μετριοφροσύνης εἴτε γιατὶ πιστεύει, πὼς ὅσα γράφει ἀπηχοῦν τὶς ἀπόψεις τῆς κοινῆς γνώμης, νὰ χρησιμοποιῆ τὴν προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία τοῦ πρώτου πληθυντικοῦ προσώπου we (ἐμεῖς) ἀντὶ τοῦ ἑνικοῦ I (ἐγώ). Χτυπάει ἄλλως τε τόσο ἄσχημα στ' αὐτὶ αὐτὸ τὸ ἐγωϊστικὸ (ἐγώ)! Ἔτσι συχνὰ διαβάζουμε:

We believe that the Government has made a profound mistake in imposing this tax, ἀντὶ I believe . . . κλπ.

Ἐπίσης τὰ διαγγέλματα τῶν Βασιλέων ἀρχίζουν μὲ τὴν χρήση τῆς ἴδιας ἀντωνυμίας:

We, Konstantinos, King of Greece . . . . ἀντὶ
I, Konstantinos, King of Greece . . .

στ) Ἀπὸ τὶς ἀντωνυμίες τοῦ γ' προσώπου, ἡ he (αἰτ. him) χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὰ ἀρσενικὰ οὐσιαστικά, ἡ she (her) γιὰ τὰ θηλυκὰ καὶ it γιὰ τὰ οὐδέτερα. Κατ' ἐξαίρεση ἡ ἀντωνυμία she χρησιμοποιεῖται κάποτε καὶ γιὰ ἄψυχα πράγματα, ἰδιαίτερα γιὰ πλοῖα, ἀεροπλάνα, γιὰ νὰ δείξουμε κάποια ἀγάπη, κάποια οἰκειότητα μ' αὐτά. Τὸ ἴδιο συμβαίνει κάποτε καὶ μὲ τὰ ὀνόματα χωρῶν ἢ πόλεων, π. χ.:

That' s Queen' s yacht, «Britannia». She is a beautiful ship.
Oxford taught me as much Latin and Greek as she could.

ζ) Ἡ ἀντωνυμία it, ὅπως εἴπαμε καὶ πρωτύτερα εἶναι γένους οὐδετέρου καὶ χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ ἀντικαταστήση ἄψυχα οὐσιαστικά: Συχνὰ ὅμως χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ δείξη **ἄγνωστα πρόσωπα**, π. χ.:

Someone was moving stealthily about the room: it was a burglar.

η) Ἐπίσης χρησιμοποιεῖται πάντα σὰν ὑποκείμενο στὶς φράσεις, ποὺ δείχνουν καιρικὲς συνθῆκες, χρόνο καὶ ἐν γένει μέτρο, π. χ.:

It is raining.

It is five past three.
It' s a long way to Tipperary.

Τέλος χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ στὴ θέση μιᾶς ὁλόκληρης φράσης, π. χ.:

You have saved my life : I shall never forget it.

ΚΤΗΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Possessive Pronouns)

Ὅπως εἴδαμε καὶ στὸν πίνακα τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν, ποὺ παραθέσαμε πιὸ πάνω, οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες (possessive pronouns) καὶ τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα (possessive adjectives) σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ τὶς προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες. Εἶναι ἡ ἴδια ἡ γενικὴ πτώση τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν.

Ἀλλὰ τὸ ἴδιο πρᾶγμα γίνεται καὶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ δημοτικὴ γλώσσα.

Στὴ φράση «τὸ βιβλίο μου», τὸ «μου» εἶναι κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία. Αὐτὸ τὸ «μου» εἶναι ἡ γενικὴ πτώση τῆς προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμίας «ἐγὼ» (ἐγώ, γενικὴ ἐμοῦ καὶ μου). Θέλουμε λοιπὸν νὰ ποῦμε «τὸ βιβλίον ἐμοῦ» καὶ φτάσαμε νὰ λέμε «τὸ βιβλίον μου».

Ἡ κτητικὴ λοιπὸν ἀντωνυμία «μου» δὲν εἶναι τίποτε ἄλλο ἀπὸ τὴν γενικὴ «ἐμοῦ» τῆς προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμίας «ἐγώ».

Τὸ ἴδιο ἀκριβῶς συμβαίνει καὶ στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα.

Στὴ φράση «my book» τὸ my εἶναι ἡ γενικὴ πτώση τῆς προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμίας I. Δείχνει ὅμως καὶ τὴν κτήση, ὅπως κι ἡ ἀντωνυμία mine.

Γι' αὐτὸ στὰ ἀγγλικὰ οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι ἡ γενικὴ πτώση τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν.

Ἐμεῖς ὅμως θὰ τὶς ἐξετάσουμε αὐτοτελῶς, γιατὶ παρουσιάζουν ἰδιομορφίες, ποὺ θὰ πρέπει νὰ μᾶς ἀπασχολήσουν.

ΚΤΗΤΙΚΑ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΑ ΚΑΙ ΚΤΗΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Possessive adjectives and possessive pronouns)

Στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα θὰ πρέπει νὰ ξεχωρίσουμε τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα ἀπὸ τὶς κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες.

Σᾶς δίνω ἕναν πίνακα καὶ τῶν δυὸ κατηγοριῶν μὲ παραδείγματα, γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσετε μιὰ πρώτη ἰδέα.

Possessive adjectives	**Possessive pronouns**
That is **my** pencil	That pencil is **mine**
That is **your** pencil	That pencil is **yours**
That is **his** pencil	That pencil is **his**
That is **her** pencil	That pencil is **hers**
That is **its** pencil	That pencil is **its**
That is **our** pencil	That pencil is **ours**
That is **your** pencil	That pencil is **yours**
That is **their** pencil	That pencil is **theirs**

Ὅπως θὰ ἔχετε ἀντιληφθῆ ἀπὸ τὸν παραπάνω πίνακα, τὰ μὲν κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα μπαίνουν πάντοτε μπροστὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικὰ (my pencil, your book), οἱ δὲ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες μπαίνουν μόνες τους (mine, yours)

Τόσο τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα ὅσο κι οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες δείχνουν κτήση, ὅτι δηλαδὴ κάτι ἀνήκει σὲ κάποιον, συμφωνοῦν δὲ κατὰ γένος κι ἀριθμὸ μὲ τὸν κτήτορα κι ὄχι μὲ τὸ κτῆμα, π. χ.:

The student has his teacher.
The daughter has her father.
The students have their teacher.
The daughters have their father.

Τὸ ἴδιο παρατηροῦμε καὶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλῶσσα, ὅπου ἐπίσης οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες συμφωνοῦν κατὰ γένος κι ἀριθμὸ μὲ τὸν κτήτορα κι ὄχι μὲ τὸ κτῆμα, π. χ.:

Ὁ **μαθητὴς** ἔχει τὸν δάσκαλό **του**.
Ἡ **θυγατέρα** ἔχει τὸν πατέρα **της**.
Οἱ **μαθηταὶ** ἔχουν τὸ δάσκαλό **τους**.
Οἱ **θυγατέρες** ἔχουν τὸν πατέρα **τους**.

Μὲ τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα παραλείπεται στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα τὸ ὁριστικὸ

ἄρθρο, ἐνῶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα δὲν παραλείπεται. Ἔτσι ἐνῶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα λέμε «τὸ βιβλίο μου», μπαίνει δηλαδὴ καὶ τὸ ἄρθρο κι ἡ κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία, στὴν ἀγγλικὴ μὲ τὴν κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία ἢ μὲ τὸ κτητικὸ ἐπίθετο τὸ ἄρθρο παραλείπεται. Λέμε δηλαδή: my book κι ὄχι the my book.

Ὑπάρχουν ὅμως καὶ στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ὁρισμένες ἰδιωματικὲς φράσεις, ὅπου τὸ ὁριστικὸ ἄρθρο ἀντικαθιστᾶ τὸ κτητικὸ ἐπίθετο, π. χ.:

I have a cold in the head
κι ὄχι I have a cold in my head.

The ball struck him in the back
κι ὄχι The ball struck him in his back.

Γιὰ νὰ δείξουμε ἔμφαση ἢ ἀντίθεση, κάποτε χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ own μαζὶ μὲ τὴν κτητικὴ ἀνωτνυμία. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

I have bought my own food, I don' t need yours.

Ἡ κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία its σπάνια χρησιμοποιεῖται.

Τέλος οἱ κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες χρησιμοποιοῦνται καὶ σὲ μερικὲς καθιερωμένες φράσεις, π. χ.:

My best wishes to you and yours (ἐννοεῖται your family).

Ἐπίσης:

Yours sincerely στὸ τέλος τῶν ἐπιστολῶν.

VOCABULARY

mailman	(μέϊλμαεν)	=	ταχυδρόμος (postman)
sure	(choup)	=	σίγουρος (certain)
certain	(σέρτ' ν)	=	σίγουρος, ὁρισμένος
certainly	(σέρτενλι)	=	surely, of course
period	(πίριοντ)	=	περίοδος
drawer	(ντρόουρ)	=	συρτάρι
carpet	(κάρπετ)	=	χαλὶ (rug)

top	(τοπ)	=	κορυφὴ
pictures	(πίxchepζ)	=	movies
receive	(ρισίβ)	=	take, accept
accept	(αχσὲπτ)	=	δέχομαι, ἀποδέχομαι
butter	(μπάτερ)	=	βούτυρο
cauliflower	(κόλιφλάουερ)	=	κουνουπίδι
fresh	(φρεch)	=	φρέσκος - η - ο
grocer	(γκρόουσερ)	=	μπακάλης
grocery store	(γκρόουσερι στόορ)	=	μπακάλικο
groceries	(γκρόουσεριζ)	=	εἴδη παντοπωλείου
lettuce	(λέτις)	=	μαρούλι
level	(λέβελ)	=	ἐπίπεδο
order	(όρντερ)	=	διαταγή, παραγγελία, διατάζω
pickup	(πίκαπ)	=	τὸ πικ - ἂπ
pick out	(πικ άουτ)	=	διαλέγω
radish	(ραέντιch)	=	ραδίκι
progress	(πρόγκρες)	=	πρόοδος
pronoun	(προνάουν)	=	ἀντωνυμία
possess	(ποζὲς)	=	κατέχω (own)
possessive	(ποζέσιβ)	=	κτητικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
relative	(ρέλατιβ)	=	ἀναφορικὸς - ὴ - ό, σχετικός, συγγενὴς
demonstrate	(ντεμενστρέϊτ)	=	ἀποδεικνύω, δείχνω (prove)
demonstrative	(ντιμόνστρατιβ)	=	δεικτικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
interrogative	(ιντερόγκατιβ)	=	ἐρωτηματικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
reflexive	(ριφλέξιβ)	=	αὐτοπαθὴς - ὲς
emphasize	(εμφασάϊζ)	=	δίνω ἔμφαση
emphasizing (pronoun)	(εμφασάϊζιγκ)	=	ἐμφατικὴ (ἀντωνυμία)
reciprocal	(ρισίπροκαλ)	=	ἀμοιβαῖος - α - ο (mutual)
reciprocal (pronoun)	(ρισίπροκαλ προνάουν)	=	ἀλληλοπαθὴς (ἀντωνυμία)
steal	(στιλ)	=	κλέβω
stealthy	(στέλθι)	=	κρυφός, ὕποπτος
stealthily	(στέλθιλι)	=	κρυφά, ὕποπτα

burglar	(μπάεγκλερ)	=	διαρρήκτης
form	(φορμ)	=	μορφή, φόρμα
formal	(φόρμαλ)	=	τυπικός, σωστὸς
believe	(μπιλίιβ)	=	νομίζω (think)
profound	(προφάουντ)	=	βαθὺς - ιὰ - ὺ (deep)
mistake	(μιστέϊκ)	=	λάθος
impose	(ινπόοζ)	=	ἐπιβάλλω
tax	(ταεξ)	=	φόρος
yacht	(γιὸτ)	=	γιώτ, θαλαμηγὸς
ship	(chιπ)	=	καράβι
save	(σέϊβ)	=	σώζω (rescue)
rescue	(ρέσκιου)	=	σώζω
strike	(στράϊκ)	=	χτυπῶ, προσκρούω, ἀπεργῶ, ἀπεργία
sincere	(σινσίιρ)	=	εἰλικρινὴς - ὴς - ὲς
sincerely	(σινσίιρλι)	=	εἰλικρινὰ
wish	(γoutch)	=	ἐπιθυμῶ, εὔχομαι, εὐχὴ (desire)
desire	(ντιζάϊρ)	=	ἐπιθυμῶ, ἐπιθυμία
steak	(στέϊκ)	=	μπριζόλα
string beans	(στριγκ μπίινζ)	=	φασολάκια πράσινα
bean	(μπίιν)	=	φασόλι
pea	(πίι)	=	μπιζέλι
carrot	(καέρετ)	=	καρότο
station	(στέϊchev)	=	στάση
dozen	(ντάζεν)	=	ντουζίνα
loaf	(λόουφ)	=	καρβέλι
rest	(ρεστ)	=	ὑπόλοιπο
stand	(σταεντ)	=	στέκομαι
sweep	σουtπ)	=	σκουπίζω
sweet	(σουtτ)	=	γλυκὸς - ιὰ - ὸ
weep	(γουtπ)	=	κλαίω

ΑΝΩΜΑΛΑ ΡΗΜΑΤΑ

steal (στίιλ) **stole** (στόολ) **stolen** (στόλεν) = κλέβω

strike (στράϊκ) **struck** (στρακ) **struck** (στρακ) καὶ **stricken** (στρίκεν) = χτυπῶ

sweep (σουὶπ)	**swept** (σουὲπτ)	**swept** (σουὲπτ)	=	σκουπίζω
weep (γουὶπ)	**wept** (γουὲπτ)	**wept** (γουὲπτ)	=	κλαίω
stand (σταεντ)	**stood** (στουντ)	**stood** (στουντ)	=	στέκομαι

TEXT

At the grocery store

Ann Galanis went to the grocery store with Mrs. Lloyd. She listened to Mrs. Lloyd talking with the clerk Mr. Brown. Mrs. Lloyd had a lot of groceries to buy that morning. Mr. Brown asked what she would like. She asked whether the vegetables were fresh. She needed some radishes, tomatoes and lettuce for a salad. The tomatoes were fresh. They were a little green but if Mrs. Lloyd would put them in the sun they should be all right for the next day. She also asked about string beans and a cauliflower. The beans were fifteen cents a pound, the cauliflower was thirty cents. One cauliflower was enough. She needed a quârter of milk, a pound of butter, a dozen eggs, a loaf of bread, and a pound of steak. She went to the meat counter to pick out her steaks and Mr. Brown had the rest of her order ready. Ann was listening and looking at all the vegetables in the grocery store. The grocery stores were different from those of her country. You can' t find all the things you want in a place there. You have to go to different stores to buy all that you need.

Mrs. Lloyd always does the shopping for the family. She is often very tired because she doesn' t have a maid. Very few people have maids in their houses. It is very difficult to have a maid in the United States and if you have one you must pay a lot of money. So men have to help their wives in many ways. They clean the windows when they are at home on Saturday afternoon. They often wash the dishes after the meals.

TRANSLATION

Στὸ παντοπωλεῖο

῾Η ῎Αννα Γαλάνη πῆγε στὸ παντοπωλεῖο μὲ τὴν κυρία Λόϋντ. ῎Ακουσε

τὴν κυρία Λόϋντ νὰ κουβεντιάζῃ μὲ τὸν ὑπάλληλο κ. Μπράουν. Ἡ κυρία Λόϋντ εἶχε πολλὰ εἴδη παντοπωλείου νὰ ἀγοράσῃ ἐκεῖνο τὸ πρωΐ. Ὁ κύριος Μπράουν τὴ ρώτησε, τί θὰ ἤθελε. Αὐτὴ ρώτησε, ἂν τὰ λαχανικὰ ἦσαν φρέσκα. Χρειαζόταν μερικὰ ραδίκια, τομάτες καὶ μαρούλι γιὰ σαλάτα. Οἱ τομάτες ἦσαν φρέσκες. Ἦσαν λίγο πράσινες, ἀλλὰ ἂν ἡ κυρία Λόϋντ τὶς ἔβαζε στὸν ἥλιο, θὰ γίνονταν ἐν τάξει γιὰ τὴν ἑπόμενη μέρα. Ρώτησε ἐπίσης γιὰ πράσινα φασολάκια καὶ κουνουπίδι. Τὰ φασόλια κόστιζαν 15 σέντς τὸ πάουντ (τὴ λίτρα), τὸ κουνουπίδι κόστιζε 30 σέντς. Ἕνα κουνουπίδι ἦταν ἀρκετό. Χρειάζονταν ἕνα τέταρτο γάλα, ἕνα πάουντ βούτυρο, μιά ντουζίνα αὐγά, ἕνα καρβέλι ψωμὶ κι ἕνα πάουντ μπριζόλες. Αὐτὴ πῆγε στὸ πάγκο τοῦ κρέατος, γιὰ νὰ διαλέξῃ τὶς μπριζόλες της κι ὁ κύριος Μπράουν εἶχε τὸ ὑπόλοιπο τῆς παραγγελίας της ἕτοιμο. Ἡ Ἄννα ἄκουγε καὶ κύτταζε ὅλα τὰ λαχανικὰ στὸ μπακάλικο. Τὰ μπακάλικα ἦσαν διαφορετικὰ ἀπὸ ἐκεῖνα τῆς πατρίδας της (τῆς χώρας της). Δὲν μπορεῖς νὰ βρῇς ὅλα τὰ πράματα, ποὺ θέλεις, σ' ἕνα μέρος ἐκεῖ. Εἶσαι ὑποχρεωμένος νὰ πᾷς σὲ διάφορα καταστήματα, γιὰ νὰ ἀγοράσῃς ὅλα, ὅσα χρειάζεσαι.

Ἡ κυρία Λόϋντ κάνει πάντοτε τὰ ψώνια γιὰ τὴν οἰκογένεια. Εἶναι συχνὰ πολὺ κουρασμένη, γιατὶ δὲν ἔχει ὑπηρέτρια. Πολὺ λίγοι ἄνθρωποι ἔχουν ὑπηρέτριες στὰ σπίτια τους. Εἶναι πολὺ δύσκολο νὰ ἔχῃς ὑπηρέτρια στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες καί, ἂν ἔχῃς μία, πρέπει νὰ πληρώσῃς πολλὰ χρήματα (ἕνα σωρὸ λεφτά). Ἔτσι οἱ ἄνδρες εἶναι ὑποχρεωμένοι νὰ βοηθοῦν τὶς γυναῖκες τους μὲ πολλοὺς τρόπους. Καθαρίζουν τὰ παράθυρα, ὅταν εἶναι στὸ σπίτι Σάββατο ἀπόγευμα. Συχνὰ πλένουν τὰ πιάτα μετὰ τὰ γεύματα.

EXERCISE 212

CONVERSATION

Where did Ann go?
With whom did she go?
To whom did she listen?
What was the clerk' s name?
Did Mrs. Lloyd have a lot of groceries to buy?
What did she want to buy?
Were the tomatoes fresh?
Were they a little green?
Did she also ask about string beans?

How much were the beans and the cauliflower?
Did she need milk?
Did she also need meat?
Was Ann listening?
Were the grocery stores different in her country?
Can you buy all the things you want in one place in Greece?
Does Mrs. Lloyd have a maid?
Why?
Do men have to help their wives?
What do they do when they are at home on Saturday afternoon?

WOULD - SHOULD

Οἱ λέξεις **would** (γουντ) καὶ **should** (chουντ) εἶναι Ἀόριστος τοῦ **will** καὶ **shall** ἀντιστοίχως.

Τὸ **would** καὶ τὸ **should** δείχνουν μὲ κάποιο τρόπο μιὰ κατάσταση μέλλοντος στὸ παρελθόν. Δείχνουν τὸ τί θὰ γίνονταν, τὸ τί θὰ μποροῦσε νὰ γίνη ἢ τὸ τί θὰ μποροῦσε νὰ ἔχη γίνει. Τὸ **would** καὶ τὸ **should** χρησιμοποιοῦνται πολὺ στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους, γιὰ τοὺς ὁποίους θὰ μιλήσουμε ἀργότερα.

Οἱ λέξεις would καὶ should εἶναι βοηθητικά, ὅπως κι οἱ ἀντίστοιχοι Ἐνεστῶτες τους will καὶ shall. Συνήθως συνοδεύονται ἀπὸ ἕνα ἄλλο κύριο ρῆμα. Τότε σχηματίζουν τὴν **περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτικὴ** αὐτοῦ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Ἔτσι ἡ περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ ρήματος write κάνει:

I should write καὶ I would write

καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα:

ΠΕΡΙΦΡΑΣΤΙΚΗ ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ

I should write	-	**I would write**
You should write	-	**You would write**
He should write	-	**He would write**
She should write	-	**She would write**

It should write	-	**It would write**
We should write	-	**We would write**
You should write	-	**You would write**
They should write	-	**They would write**

ΠΑΡΑΤΗΡΗΣΕΙΣ

1) Ὅπως βλέπετε, τὸ should καὶ τὸ would μένουν ἀμετάβλητα σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

2) Δὲν ὑπάρχει διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὶς ἐκφράσεις I should write καὶ I would write. Ἕνα πρᾶμα μόνο πρέπει νὰ προσέξετε: σὲ μιὰ φράση δὲν πρέπει νὰ ὑπάρχουν δυὸ should ἢ δυὸ would: θὰ πρέπει τὸ ἕνα νὰ εἶναι should καὶ τὸ ἄλλο would. Δὲν ἔχει σημασία, ποιὸ θὰ μπῆ πρῶτο καὶ ποιὸ δεύτερο. Φτάνει νὰ μὴν ὑπάρχουν δυὸ should ἢ δυὸ would, π. χ.:

If I would have money I should go to the theater = ἂν θὰ εἶχα χρήματα, θὰ πήγαινα στὸ θέατρο.

3) Ἐκτὸς ἀπ' αὐτὴν τὴν περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτικὴ ὑπάρχει κι ἡ ἄλλη ἡ μονολεκτικὴ Ὑποτακτική. Αὐτὴν ὅμως θὰ τὴ μάθουμε ἀργότερα. Ἄλλως τε δὲν χρησιμοποιεῖται σχεδὸν ποτέ, παρὰ μόνο στὶς εὐχές, ὅπως θὰ δοῦμε. Ἐκείνη, ποὺ συνηθέστατα χρησιμοποιεῖται, εἶναι ἡ περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτικὴ μὲ should ἢ μὲ would.

4) Δεδομένου ὅτι τὰ should καὶ would εἶναι βοηθητικά, στὸν ἀρνητικὸ κι ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο δὲν παίρνουν do. Ἔτσι θὰ ἔχουμε στὸν ἀρνητικὸ τύπο: I should not write καὶ I would not write.

Στὸν δὲ ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο θὰ ἔχουμε:
Should I write? καὶ Would I write?

Νὰ καὶ μερικὰ παραδείγματα, γιὰ νὰ γίνη πιὸ κατανοητὴ ἡ χρήση τοῦ would καὶ τοῦ should.

Examples:

I shall know him if I see him = θὰ τὸν γνωρίσω, ἐὰν θὰ τὸν δῶ.
I should know him if I saw him = θὰ τὸν γνώριζα, ἐὰν τὸν ἔβλεπα.
He will know me if he sees me = θὰ μὲ γνωρίση, ἂν θὰ μὲ δῆ.

He would know me if he saw me = θὰ μὲ γνώριζε, ἐὰν μὲ ἔβλεπε.
Would you like to have more cake? = θὰ ἤθελες νὰ ἔχης περισσότερο κέϊκ;
Yes, I would like some more = ναί, θὰ ἤθελα ἀκόμη λίγο.
John said he would be back before eight o' clock = ὁ John εἶπε, ὅτι θὰ ἦταν πίσω πρὶν ἀπὸ τὶς ὀχτὼ ἡ ὥρα.
I knew Tom would be late for school = τὸ ἤξερα, ὅτι ὁ Τὸμ θὰ ἀργοῦσε γιὰ τὸ σχολεῖο.
Would you like to come? = θὰ ἤθελες νὰ ἔλθης;
Yes, I would. No, I would not.
Would Tom like to come? = θὰ ἤθελε ὁ Τὸμ νὰ ἔλθη;
Yes, he would. He would enjoy it = ναί, θὰ ἤθελε. Θὰ τοῦ ἄρεζε (θὰ τὸ ἀπολάμβανε).
I would be very glad to see him again = θὰ ἤμουν πολὺ χαρούμενος νὰ τὸν ἔβλεπα πάλι.
I wish you would not make so much noise (νόϊζ) = θὰ ἐπιθυμοῦσα νὰ μὴν ἔκανες τόσο πολὺ θόρυβο.

Η ΛΕΞΗ LIKE

Ἡ λέξη like ἔχει δυὸ ἔννοιες. Τὴ συναντᾶμε σὰν ρῆμα μὲ τὴ σημασία τοῦ «συμπαθῶ, μ' ἀρέσει». Τὴ συναντᾶμε καὶ σὰν πρόθεση μὲ τὴ σημασία τοῦ «σάν».

Examples:

He is like his father = αὐτὸς μοιάζει τὸν πατέρα του.
Mary is like her mother = ἡ Μαίρη μοιάζει τὴ μητέρα της.

Τὸ like σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις:

I like the book.
You like it.
He likes it.
We like the books.
You like the books.
They like them.

Σὲ ἐρωτηματικὲς προτάσεις:

Do I like it?
Do you like it?
Does he like it?
Do we like them?
Do you like them?
Do they like them?

Ἡ ἔκφραση how do you like it? = πῶς σᾶς φαίνεται αὐτό; ποιὰ εἶναι ἡ γνώμη σας γι' αὐτό; εἶναι idioms.

Συνήθως ἀμέσως μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα like ἀκολουθεῖ ἕνα ἄλλο ρῆμα σὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο μὲ τὸ to, π. χ.:

We like to listen to the radio = μᾶς ἀρέσει νὰ ἀκοῦμε τὸ ραδιόφωνο.
He likes to study English = τοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ μελετᾶ ἀγγλικά.
Do you like to go to the movies? = σ' ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνης στὸν κινηματογράφο;
Yes, I like to go to the movies twice a week = ναί, μ' ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνω στὸν κινηματογράφο δύο φορὲς τὴν ἑβδομάδα.
When do you like to go to the movies? = πότε σ' ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνης στὸν κινηματογράφο;
I like to go there at night = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνω ἐκεῖ τὸ βράδυ.
Do you like to drink coffee or tea? = σ' ἀρέσει νὰ πίνης καφὲ ἢ τσάϊ;
I like to drink coffee = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ πίνω καφέ.
What do you like to do during your vacations? = τί σ' ἀρέσει νὰ κάνης κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῶν διακοπῶν σου;
I like to go swimming = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ πάω γιὰ κολύμπι.
How do you like this house? = πῶς σοῦ φαίνεται αὐτὸ τὸ σπίτι;
I don' t like it, it is very old = δὲν μ' ἀρέσει, εἶναι πολὺ παλιό.
How do you like this lecture? = πῶς σοῦ φαίνεται αὐτὴ ἡ διάλεξη; (ποιὰ εἶναι ἡ γνώμη σου;)
It is very good, I like it = εἶναι πολὺ καλή, μ' ἀρέσει.

ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ

Οἱ προθέσεις **beside** (μπισάϊντ) = πλάϊ, **next to** (νεξτ του) = πλάϊ,

near = κοντά, **far from** = μακριὰ ἀπό, **in front of** = μπροστὰ ἀπό, **behind** (μπιhάϊντ) = πίσω, **opposite** (όποζιτ) = ἀπέναντι, ἀναφέρονται ὅλες σὲ τόπο.

Examples:

Mrs. Miller is sitting beside Mr. Miller = ἡ κυρία Μίλλερ κάθεται πλάϊ στὸν κύριο Μίλλερ.
She is sitting next to him = κάθεται πλάϊ σ' αὐτόν.

Ἡ πρόθεση beside μὲ ἕνα -s στὸ τέλος, besides, ἔχει ἄλλη σημασία,

Besides = ἐκτὸς τούτου, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ αὐτό. π. χ.:

Besides vegetables Mrs. Lloyd needs to buy milk, butter and steaks = ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὰ λαχανικὰ ἡ κυρία Λόϋντ χρειάζεται νὰ ἀγοράση γάλα, βούτυρο καὶ μπριζόλες.
Besides other things I want to buy a rain-coat = ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὰ ἄλλα πράγματα θέλω νὰ ἀγοράσω κι ἕνα ἀδιάβροχο.

Τὸ besides συνήθως μπαίνει στὴν ἀρχὴ τῆς προτάσεως.
They live near the corner = κάθονται κοντὰ στὴν γωνία.
My house is far from the stores = τὸ σπίτι μου εἶναι μακριὰ ἀπὸ τὰ καταστήματα.
There is a nice green lawn in front of the house = ὑπάρχει ἕνα ὄμορφο πράσινο παρτέρι μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι.
The garden is behind the house = ὁ κῆπος εἶναι πίσω ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι.
They live opposite the park = κατοικοῦν ἀπέναντι ἀπὸ τὸ πάρκο.
The house opposite our house is for rent = τὸ σπίτι ἀπέναντι ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι μας εἶναι γιὰ νοίκιασμα.
Tom is sitting beside Mary at school, John sits next = ὁ Τὸμ κάθεται πλάϊ στὴ Μαίρη στὸ σχολεῖο, ὁ John κάθεται πλάϊ.
The theater is opposite the new hotel = τὸ θέατρο εἶναι ἀπέναντι ἀπὸ τὸ καινούργιο ξενοδοχεῖο.
The church is in front of my house = ἡ ἐκκλησία εἶναι μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι μου.
Besides my coat I have to take with me my new overcoat = ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ σακάκι μου πρέπει νὰ πάρω μαζί μου τὸ καινούργιο μου ἐπανωφόρι.

EXERCISE 213

Συμπληρῶστε τὰ κενὰ μὲ τὶς προθέσεις: beside, next to, besides, near, far from, in front, behind, opposite.

She is sitting .... the door.
He always sits .... the window.
The teacher is standing .... the class.
He is standing .... of the blackboard.
The car is .... the house.
My sister lives .... the church.
Her house is .... downtown.
Washington is .... New York.
.... a coat I need a new hat.
His store is .... the Bank.
There is a lawn .... the house.
The house .... ours is very old.
They live .... the school.
.... a coat I want a new overcoat.
Mary is sitting .... to John.

EXERCISE 214

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ for ἢ since:

She is going to be in New York .... two years.
We shall stay here .... a long time.
We have been here .... 1950.
It has been raining .... nine o 'clock.
We have not rain .... two weeks.
You have not written to me .... two months.
I have been writing letters .... breakfast.
He has waiting .... half an hour.
You have been studying English .... several months now.
I have been sleeping .... eight o' clock.

EXERCISE 215

Answer the questions:

Who buys the groceries for your family?
Do many American families have maids?
Do you buy meat and vegetables in the same store?
Do you like green tomatoes?
Which vegetables do you like best?
How much is milk now?
Is meat cheap or expensive in the United States?
Where do you buy your groceries, at a grocery store or at a market?
Do you like to go to a market?
Are the markets clean or dirty?

ΓΙΑ ΤΑ ΑΡΘΡΑ

Ἔχουμε μιλήσει γιὰ τὰ δύο ἄρθρα, ποὺ ὑπάρχουν στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα. Τὸ the καὶ τὸ a, an. Τὸ the εἶναι τὸ ὁριστικὸ ἄρθρο. Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ὁρίσουμε κάτι, τότε μεταχειριζόμαστε τὸ the. Ἐνῶ ὅταν μιλᾶμε γιὰ κάτι ἀόριστα, γιὰ μιὰ γενικὴ ἔννοια, τότε ἔχουμε τὸ the μέσα στὴν πρόταση.

Examples:

Coffee is exported from several Latin American countries = ὁ καφὲς ἐξάγεται ἀπὸ ἀρκετὲς Λατινοαμερικανικὲς χῶρες.

Ἐδῶ δὲν ἔχουμε ἄρθρο, γιατὶ ἡ ἔννοια δὲν εἶναι ὁρισμένη, μιλᾶμε ἀόριστα, ἀλλά:

The coffee which is exported from Colombia is excellent = ὁ καφὲς, ποὺ ἐξάγεται ἀπὸ τὴν Κολομβία, εἶναι ἐξαιρετικός.

Ἐδῶ ὁρίζουμε τὴ χώρα, μιλᾶμε γιὰ κάτι συγκεκριμένο. Γι' αὐτὸ κι ἔχουμε τὸ ἄρθρο the.

Vegetables contain many vitamins (βάϊταμινζ) = τὰ λαχανικὰ περιέχουν πολλὲς βιταμίνες.

The vegetables which I like best are peas and string beans = τὰ λαχα-

νικά, πού μ' ἀρέσουν καλύτερα, εἶναι τὰ μπιζέλια καὶ τὰ πράσινα φασολάκια.

Patience is necessary in a good teacher = ἡ ὑπομονὴ εἶναι ἀπαραίτητη σ' ἕναν καλὸ δάσκαλο,
ἀλλά,

He has the patience of Job (Ντjομπ) = ἔχει τὴν ὑπομονὴ τοῦ 'Ιώβ.

"Οταν ἔχουμε κύρια ὀνόματα προσώπων ἢ τὸν τίτλο κάποιου, τότε δέν ἔχουμε τὸ the πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ὄνομα, π. χ.:

Ann Galanis lives with Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd.

Δὲν βάζουμε τὸ the πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ Mr. ἢ Mrs., ὅπως τὸ ἔχουμε ἐμεῖς στὴν δική μας γλώσσα, π.χ.:

President Jones is taking a short vacation now = ὁ πρόεδρος Jones παίρνει μία σύντομη διακοπὴ τώρα.
General Green is in New York = ὁ στρατηγὸς Green εἶναι στὴ Νέα 'Υόρκη.

"Οταν ὅμως ἔχουμε μόνο τὸν τίτλο χωρὶς τὸ ὄνομα, τότε ἔχουμε τὸ the, π. χ.:

The general likes to read = στὸ στρατηγὸ ἀρέσει νὰ διαβάζη.
The president is sleeping = ὁ πρόεδρος κοιμᾶται.

"Οταν ἔχουμε μέσα στὴν πρόταση ὀνόματα ἀπὸ ἠπείρους, χῶρες, πολιτεῖες, λίμνες, πόλεις καὶ ὁδούς, τότε πρὶν ἀπὸ αὐτὰ δὲν ἔχουμε τὸ the.

Brazil is the largest country in South America = ἡ Βραζιλία εἶναι ἡ μεγαλύτερη χώρα στὴν Νότιο 'Αμερική.
Many people go to Florida for the winter = πολλοὶ ἄνθρωποι πᾶνε στὴν Φλωρίδα γιὰ τὸ χειμώνα.
Lake Michigan is one of the five Lakes = ἡ λίμνη Michigan εἶναι μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς πέντε λίμνες.
They will go to New York next week = θὰ πᾶνε στὴν Νέα 'Υόρκη τὴν ἑπόμενη ἑβδομάδα.
She lives on the corner of Tenth Avenue and First Street = κάθεται στὴν γωνία τῆς δεκάτης λεωφόρου καὶ πρώτης ὁδοῦ.

Παρὰ τὸν κανόνα ἔχουμε:

The United States, **the British Isles**, **The Soviet Union**, μὲ ἄρθρο, ἂν καὶ εἶναι ὀνόματα ἀπὸ χῶρες. Εἶναι ἡ ἐξαίρεση τοῦ κανόνα.

Ὅταν ἔχουμε τὸ ὄνομα μιᾶς γλώσσας, ὅπως ἀγγλικὴ English, ἱσπανικὴ Spanish, γαλλικὴ French, τότε δὲν ἔχουμε τὸ the πρὶν ἀπὸ αὐτά. Ὅταν ὅμως ὑπάρχη στὴν πρόταση μέσα κι ἡ λέξη language = γλώσσα, τότε ἔχουμε τὸ the, π. χ.:

He understands English, but he can not speak it = καταλαβαίνει ἀγγλικά, ἀλλὰ δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ τὰ μιλήση.
He thinks that the English language is difficult to learn = νομίζει, ὅτι ἡ ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα εἶναι δύσκολη, γιὰ νὰ τὴ μάθη κανείς.

Ὅταν ἔχουμε τὶς λέξεις next καὶ last καὶ ἀναφέρωνται σὲ κάτι ποὺ γίνεται στὸ παρόν, δὲν ἔχουμε τὸ the πρὶν ἀπὸ αὐτές. Ἔτσι λέμε next Sunday κι ὄχι the next Sunday, next week, next year, last Sunday, last week, last year.

Μὲ τὶς λέξεις breakfast, lunch καὶ dinner συνήθως δὲν ἔχουμε τὸ the πρὶν ἀπ' αὐτές. Ἐπίσης καὶ μὲ τὴν λέξη home.

Examples:

What do you eat for breakfast? τὶ τρῶς γιὰ πρόγευμα;
I am going to have lunch now = θὰ ἔχω (φάω) γεῦμα τώρα.
Virginia is at home = ἡ Virginia εἶναι στὸ σπίτι.
Are you going home now? = πᾶς στὸ σπίτι τώρα;
No, I am going to the home of some friends = ὄχι, πάω στὸ σπίτι κάποιων φίλων.

Ἐδῶ ἔχουμε τὸ the, γιατὶ ὁρίζουμε τὴν ἔννοια καὶ δὲν μιλᾶμε ἀόριστα. Πρόκειται γιὰ τὸ συγκεκριμένο σπίτι τῶν φίλων.

Although, though, but.

Τὸ **although** (όλδοου) = ἂν καὶ, ἀλλά, εἶναι σύνδεσμος. Ἔχουμε καὶ

έναν άλλον σύνδεσμο μὲ τὴν ἴδια σημασία, τὸν **though**. Ἐπίσης καὶ τὸ **but** ἔχει σχεδὸν τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια.

Τὸ although μπαίνει συνήθως στὴν ἀρχὴ μιᾶς προτάσεως. Τὸ though μὲ τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια στὴ μέση ἢ στὸ τέλος μιᾶς προτάσεως. Καὶ τὸ but περισσότερο στὴ μέση μιᾶς προτάσεως. Τὸ but συνδέει τὴν πρόταση μὲ μιὰ ἄλλη, ποὺ ἔχει ἀντίθετη ἔννοια μὲ τὴν πρώτη πρόταση.

Examples:

Although she does not speak English well she reads it easily = ἂν καὶ δὲν μιλᾶ ἀγγλικὰ καλά, τὰ διαβάζει εὔκολα.

She likes to live there though it is very cold in the winter = τῆς ἀρέσει νὰ μένη ἐκεῖ, ἂν καὶ κάνη πολὺ κρύο τὸ χειμώνα.

He is very old but he is not ill = εἶναι πολὺ γέρος, ἀλλὰ δὲν εἶναι ἄρρωστος.

Although he is very old he is not ill = ἂν καὶ εἶναι πολὺ γέρος, δὲν εἶναι ἄρρωστος.

He is very old, he is not ill though = εἶναι πολὺ γέρος, ἀλλὰ δὲν εἶναι ἄρρωστος.

He prefers to live in New York though his house is in Washington = προτιμᾶ νὰ ζῆ στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη, ἂν καὶ τὸ σπίτι του εἶναι στὴν Washington.

My car is very old but it still goes well = τὸ αὐτοκίνητό μου εἶναι πολὺ παλιό, ἀλλὰ μέχρι τώρα πάει καλά.

Although my car is very old it still goes well. My car is very old, it still goes well though.

Mr. Brown is nearly seventy but he still likes to talk to the school children = ὁ κύριος Μπράουν εἶναι σχεδὸν ἑβδομήντα, ἀλλὰ ἀκόμη τοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ μιλᾶ μὲ τὰ παιδιὰ τοῦ σχολείου.

Although Mr. Brown is nearly seventy he still likes to talk to the school children. Mr. Brown is seventy years old. He still likes to talk to the school children though.

EXERCISE 216

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ the, ὅπου χρειάζεται:

Americans usually like .... sports of all kinds.

.... sports which Americans like best are football and baseball.

. . . . exercise is good for one' s health.
. . . . exercise which he receives from tennis is good for him.
. . . . oil is found in the eastern part of Texas.
. . . . bananas are exported from . . . . Central America.
Do you prefer . . . . coffee or . . .. tea.
He is from . . . . Argentina, but he lives in . . . . Havana now.
Lake Ontario is between . . . United States and . . . . Canada.
. . . . Captain Smith is not at . . . . home now.
Where does . . . . Professor White live?
Does he live on . . . . Seventh Avenue near . . . . Morton Street?
I live on . . . . First Street.
New York city is in . . . . State of . . .. . New York.
Is . . . . English more difficult than . . . . French?
People say that . . . . English language is difficult to learn.

EXERCISE 217

Γράψτε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως στὸν 'Αόριστο:

Don' t you wish you (be) here with me?
I wish I (know) where I left my pen.
Don' t you want you (have) a sister?
I wish I (be) rich enough to buy a car.
John wishes he (speak) English well.
I wish I (can) understand what he is saying.
Don' t you wish you (can) write?
We all wish you (not be) feeling so tired.
I wish English grammar (not be) so difficult.
I (want) to meet him yesterday.

EXERCISE 218

Γράψτε ἐρωτήσεις, στὶς ὁποῖες οἱ προτάσεις εἶναι ἀπαντήσεις, π. χ.:

I want to study. What do you want to do?

Summer is only a month away.
Yes, there are many books in the bookcase.
He took his coat off because it was very hot.
No, we don' t have a record player.
I have six nieces and five nephews.
John broke the dining - room window.
He broke it last night.
He broke it by kicking his football.
The book costs five dollars.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 212

Ann went to the grocery store.
She went with Mrs. Lloyd.
She listened to Mrs. Lloyd talking with the clerk.
The clerk' s name was Mr. Brown.
Yes, Mrs. Lloyd had a lot of groceries to buy.
She wanted to buy some radishes, tomatoes and lettuce for a salad.
Yes, the tomatoes were fresh.
Yes, they were a little green, but if Mrs. Lloyd would put them in the sun they should be all right for the next day.
Yes, she also asked about string beans.
The beans were fifteen cents a pound, the cauliflower was thirty cents.
Yes, she needed a quarter of milk.
Yes, she also needed a pound of steak.
Yes, she was.
Yes, the grocery stores were different in her country.
No, you can' t buy all the things you want in one place in Greece. You have to go to different stores.
No, Mrs. Lloyd doesn' t have a maid.
Because it is very difficult to have a maid in the United States; and if you have one you must pay a lot of money.
Men have to help their wives in many ways.
They clean the windows and they often wash the dishes after the meals.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 213

She is sitting **near** the door.

I: always sits **in front of** the window.
The teacher is standing **far from** the class.
He is standing **opposite** the blackloard.
The car is **behind** the house.
My sister lives **near** the church.
Her house is **far from** downtown.
Washington is **near** New York.
Besides a coat I need a new hat.
His store is **opposite** the Bank.
There is a lawn **behind** the house.
The house **opposite** ours is very old.
They live **far from** the school.
Besides a coat I want a new overcoat.
Mary is sitting **next** to John.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 214

She is going to be in New York **for** two years.
We shall stay here **for** a long time.
We have been there **since** 1950.
It has been raining **since** nine o' clock.
We have not rain **for** two weeks.
You have not written to me **for** two months.
I have been writing letters **since** breakfast.
He has been waiting **for** half an hour.
You have been studying English **for** several months now.
I have been sleeping **since** eight o' clock.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 215

My mother buys the groceries for my family.
No, they don' t have maids.
No, we don' t buy meat and vegetables in the same store.
No, I don' t like green tomatoes.
I like best carrots.
It is six drachmas.

It is expensive.
We buy our groceries at a grocery store.
Yes, I like to go to a market.
They are clean.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 216

Americans usually like sports of all kinds.
The sports which Americans like best are football and baseball.

Exercise is good for one' s health.
The exercise which he receives from tennis is good for him.
Oil is found in the eastern part of Texas.
Bananas are exported from Central America.
Do you prefer coffee or tea?
He is from Argentina but he lives in Havana now.
Lake Ontario is between the United States and Canada.
Captain Smith is not at home now.
Where does Professor White live?
Does he live on Seventh Avenue near Morton Street?
I live on First Street
New York city is in the State of New York.
Is English more difficult than French?
People say that the English language is difficult to learn.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 217

Don' t you wish you were here with me?
I wish I knew where I left my pen.
Don' t you want you had a sister?
I wish I was rich enough to buy a car.
John wishes he spoke English well.
I wish I could understand what he is saying.
Don' t you wish you could write?
We all wish you were not feeling so tired.

I wish English grammar was not so difficult.
I wanted to meet him yesterday.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 218

How far away is summer?
Are there any books in the bookcase?
Why did he take his coat off ?
Do you have a record player?
How many nieces and nephews do you have?
Who broke the dining - room window?
When did he break it?
How did he break it?
How much does the book cost?

ΔΕΙΚΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Demonstrative Pronouns)

Δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι ἐκεῖνες, ποὺ ἀντικαθιστοῦν ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ δείχνοντάς το ταυτόχρονα, π. χ.:

this	=	αὐτὸς - ἡ - ὁ	**these**	=	αὐτοὶ - ὲς - ὰ
that	=	ἐκεῖνος - η - ο	**those**	=	ἐκεῖνοι - ες - α

Ὅταν τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ παραλείπεται, τότε τὰ this, that κ.λ.π. εἶναι καθαρὰ δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες. Ὅταν ὅμως τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ δὲν παραλείπεται, ἀλλὰ μπαίνῃ μαζὶ μὲ τὰ this, that κ.λ.π., τότε αὐτὰ εἶναι **δεικτικὰ ἐπίθετα**, π. χ.:

It is this	=	εἶναι αὐτός.
It is that	=	εἶναι ἐκεῖνος.
They are these	=	εἶναι αὐτοί.
They are those	=	εἶναι ἐκεῖνοι.

Σ' ὅλες αὐτὲς τὶς περιπτώσεις τὰ this, that, these καὶ those εἶναι **δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες**, γιατὶ παραλείπεται τὸ οὐσιαστικό.

'Αντίθετα στὶς παρακάτω περιπτώσεις τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ δὲν παραλείπεται, ἀλλὰ μπαίνει ταυτόχρονα, π. χ.:

this book
that student
these books
those students

Στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς τὰ this, that, these καὶ those εἶναι **δεικτικὰ ἐπίθετα** (demonstrative adjectives).

Ἡ ἴδια διάκριση, ποὺ γίνεται μεταξὺ δεικτικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν καὶ δεικτικῶν ἐπιθέτων, ὑπάρχει, ὅπως ἔχουμε μάθει, κι ἀνάμεσα στὶς κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες καὶ τὰ κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα. Τὸ κριτήριο μάλιστα εἶναι ὁλότελα τὸ ἴδιο.

Θὰ πρέπει κι ἐδῶ νὰ παρατηρήσουμε, ὅτι στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα δὲν μπαίνει ἄρθρο μαζὶ μὲ τὴν δεικτικὴ ἀντωνυμία, π. χ. λέμε this book κι ὄχι this the book. 'Ενῶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα μπαίνει καὶ τὸ ἄρθρο καὶ ἡ ἀντωνυμία, λέμε δηλαδὴ στὰ ἑλληνικά: αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο. Ὅπως εἴδαμε καὶ πιὸ πάνω, τὸ ἴδιο γίνεται καὶ μὲ τὶς κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες (ἐνῶ δηλαδὴ στὰ ἑλληνικὰ λέμε τὸ βιβλίο μου, στὰ ἀγγλικὰ λέμε my book κι ὄχι the my book).

ΔΙΑΚΡΙΣΗ THIS ΚΑΙ THAT

Κι οἱ δυὸ αὐτὲς λέξεις εἶναι δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες. Ὡστόσο ὑπάρχει μιὰ οὐσιώδης διαφορὰ μεταξύ τους.

Τὸ this χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα, ζῶα καὶ πράγματα, ποὺ εἶναι κοντά, κι ἀντιστοιχεῖ μὲ τὴν ἀντωνυμία τῆς ἑλληνικῆς γλώσσας: αὐτὸς - αὐτὴ - αὐτό, π.χ.:
This book = αὐτὸ ἐδῶ τὸ βιβλίο (ποὺ εἶναι κοντά). Ὁ πληθυντικὸς τοῦ this κάνει these = αὐτοὶ - ἐς - ά, π. χ.: these men = αὐτοὶ ἐδῶ οἱ ἄνθρωποι (ποὺ εἶναι κοντά).

Τὸ that χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα, ζῶα καὶ πράγματα, ποὺ εἶναι μακριά, κι ἀντιστοιχεῖ μὲ τὴν ἀντωνυμία τῆς ἑλληνικῆς γλώσσας: ἐκεῖνος - ἐκείνη - ἐκεῖνο, π. χ.: that book = ἐκεῖνο ἐκεῖ τὸ βιβλίο (ποὺ εἶναι μακριά).

Ὁ πληθυντικὸς τοῦ that κάνει those = ἐκεῖνοι - ἐκεῖνες - ἐκεῖνα, π. χ.: those men = ἐκεῖνοι ἐκεῖ οἱ ἄνθρωποι (ποὺ εἶναι μακριά).

Οἱ δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες δὲν ἀλλάζουν οὔτε κατὰ γένος οὔτε κατὰ πτώση.

Ἔχουν δηλαδὴ τὸν ἴδιο τύπο γιὰ ὅλα τὰ γένη καὶ γιὰ ὅλες τὶς πτώσεις. Ἀλλάζουν μόνον κατ' ἀριθμὸν (this - these, that - those).

Ἐπίσης σὰν δεικτικὴ ἀντωνυμία (ἢ δεικτικὸ ἐπίθετο ἀναλόγως) χαρακτηρίζεται καὶ τὸ such, π. χ.:

My services, such as they are, are at your disposal = οἱ ὑπηρεσίες μου, ὅπως εἶναι, εἶναι στὴ διάθεσή σας.

ΑΥΤΟΠΑΘΕΙΣ ἢ ΕΜΦΑΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Reflexive and emphasizing pronouns)

Αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες (reflexive) εἶναι οἱ ἀντωνυμίες, ποὺ δείχνουν, ὅτι ἡ ἐνέργεια, ποὺ ἐκφράζεται μὲ τὸ ρῆμα, ἐκπορεύεται ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ ξαναγυρνάει πάλι σ' αὐτό. Δὲν μεταβιβάζεται δηλαδὴ σὲ ἄλλο πρόσωπο, ζῶο ἢ πρᾶγμα, π. χ.:

I am teaching myself English = διδάσκω στὸν ἑαυτό μου ἀγγλικά.
I can hardly hear myself speak = δύσκολα μπορῶ ν' ἀκούσω τὸν ἑαυτό μου νὰ μιλάῃ.

Οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες χρησιμοποιοῦνται κάποτε καὶ γιὰ ἔμφαση, ὁπότε εἶναι **ἐμφατικὲς** ἀντωνυμίες (emphasizing pronouns), π. χ.:

This is a machine that works by itself = αὐτὴ εἶναι μιὰ μηχανή, ποὺ δουλεύει μόνη της.

Παρακάτω παραθέτουμε ἕναν πίνακα τῶν αὐτοπαθῶν ἢ ἐμφατικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν;

		Singular	Plural
1rst	person	myself	ourselves
2nd	person	yourself	yourselves
3rd	person	himself herself itself oneself	themselves

Ἡ αὐτοπαθὴς ἀντωνυμία μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ εἴτε σὰν ἄμεσο εἴτε σὰν ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο μέσα στὴν πρόταση.

Σὰν ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο χρησιμοποιεῖται π. χ. στὴν παρακάτω πρόταση:

I can wash myself now = μπορῶ νὰ πλύνω τὸν ἑαυτό μου τώρα.

Σὰν **ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο** συναντᾶται στὸ ἀκόλουθο παράδειγμα:

He cooked **himself** a good meal = μαγείρεψε γιὰ τὸν ἑαυτό του ἕνα καλὸ φαγητό.

Ἐπίσης συχνὰ χρησιμοποιεῖται ὕστερα ἀπὸ πρόθεση (σὰν **ἐμπρόθετος προσδιορισμός**), π. χ.:

She loves me for **myself**, not for my money = μ' ἀγαπάει γιὰ μένα τὸν ἴδιο, ὄχι γιὰ τὰ λεφτά μου.

Τέλος ὄχι σπάνια ἡ αὐτοπαθὴς ἀντωνυμία χρησιμοποιεῖται **ἀντὶ τῆς προσωπικῆς**, π. χ.:

There was an invitation for my wife and **myself** = ὑπῆρχε μιὰ πρόσκληση γιὰ τὴ γυναίκα μου καὶ γιὰ μένα.

Προσοχή:

Οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες στὴ σωστὴ ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα δὲν χρησιμοποι-

οῦνται σὰν ὑποκείμενα. Οὔτε στὸ γραπτὸ οὔτε στὸν προφορικὸ λόγο. Ἔτσι εἶναι λανθασμένη ἡ φράση:

Helen, Sue, and **myself** went on a hike (πεζοπορία),

γιατὶ τὸ myself δὲν εἶναι σωστὸ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ σὰν ὑποκείμενο.

Ἀντίθετα εἶναι σωστὲς οἱ παρακάτω φράσεις:

His sister burned **herself** (ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο) = ἡ ἀδελφή του κάηκε.
She bought **herself** a new hat (ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο) = ἀγόρασε γιὰ τὸν ἑαυτό της ἕνα καινούργιο καπέλο.

ΕΜΦΑΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Emphasizing pronouns)

Οἱ ἴδιες οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες μποροῦν νὰ παρθοῦν μέσα στὴν πρόταση καὶ σὰν **ἐμφατικές**. Ὅπως λέει καὶ τὸ ὄνομά τους, χρησιμοποιοῦνται μόνο γιὰ περιπτώσεις ἐμφάσεως, π. χ.:

You **yourself** (you and not anyone else) told me the story.

Δηλαδὴ ἐσὺ μοῦ εἶπες τὴν ἱστορία κι ὄχι κανένας ἄλλος.

Ἡ θέση τῆς ἐμφατικῆς ἀντωνυμίας εἶναι ἢ μετὰ τὴ λέξη, ποὺ θέλει νὰ τονίσῃ μὲ ἔμφαση (you yourself), ἢ στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως.

Ἕνας ἁπλὸς τρόπος νὰ ξεχωρίζουμε, πότε οἱ ἀντωνυμίες αὐτὲς εἶναι αὐτοπαθεῖς καὶ πότε ἐμφατικὲς μέσα στὴν πρόταση, εἶναι ὁ ἑξῆς:

Οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες δὲν μποροῦν ἀνώδυνα νὰ παραλειφθοῦν ἀπὸ τὴν πρόταση, γιατὶ ἀλλοιώνεται τὸ νόημα. Ἀντίθετα οἱ ἐμφατικὲς μποροῦν ἀνώδυνα νὰ παραλειφθοῦν, χωρὶς νὰ ἀλλάξῃ τὸ νόημα, π. χ.:

Ἂν πῶ I can wash myself, σημαίνει, ὅτι μπορῶ νὰ πλύνω τὸν ἑαυτό μου, δηλαδὴ μπορῶ νὰ πλυθῶ μόνος μου. Ἂν ὅμως παραλείψω τὸ myself κι ἔχω μόνο I can wash, σημαίνει, ὅτι εἶμαι πλύντης καὶ μπορῶ νὰ πλύνω ὁ,τιδήποτε, ροῦχα, αὐτοκίνητα κ.λ.π.

Στὶς ἐμφατικὲς ὡστόσο ἀντωνυμίες δὲν συμβαίνει τὸ ἴδιο. Ἂν π. χ. ἀπὸ τὴ φράση: You yourself told me the story, ἀφαιρέσω τὸ yourself, πάλι θὰ παραμείνη ἡ ἔννοια ὅτι «ἐσὺ μοῦ εἶπες τὴν ἱστορία», δὲν θὰ ἀλλάξη ἡ ἔννοια, θὰ παραλειφθῆ μόνον ἡ ἔμφαση.

Ὅταν λοιπὸν μποροῦμε νὰ παραλείψουμε ἀνώδυνα γιὰ τὸ νόημα αὐτὲς τὶς ἀντωνυμίες, τότε εἶναι ἐμφατικές. Κι ὅταν δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ τὶς παραλείψουμε, εἶναι αὐτοπαθεῖς.

Οἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς κι οἱ ἐμφατικὲς ἀντωνυμίες λέγονται καὶ **σύνθετες προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες** (compound personal pronouns).

ΑΛΛΗΛΟΠΑΘΕΙΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Reciprocal pronouns)

Οἱ τύποι each other καὶ one another κάνουν τὴν ἴδια δουλειὰ μὲ τὶς αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες.

Προσέξτε αὐτὲς τὶς φράσεις:

He admires himself.
They admire each other.
They admire one another.

Ἡ διαφορὰ ἔγκειται στὸ ὅτι each other καὶ one another ἐκφράζουν μιὰ **ἀμοιβαία σχέση** καὶ τόσο τὸ each ὅσο καὶ τὸ other παίζουν τὸ καθένα τὸ ρόλο μιᾶς αὐτοπαθοῦς ἀντωνυμίας.

Στὰ παλιότερα ἀγγλικὰ ἡ ἰδέα «they admired each other» (ἐθαύμαζον ἀλλήλους) θὰ ἐκφράζονταν «each admired other» (ὁ καθένας ἐθαύμαζε τὸν ἄλλον) καὶ «each admired the other». Ἀργότερα ὁ τύπος αὐτὸς ἔγινε «they admired each the other» καὶ τελικὰ κατέληξε στὸ «they admired each other». Ἔτσι σήμερα τὴν ἀλληλοπαθῆ ἀντωνυμία each other τὴν θεωροῦμε ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο τοῦ admired.

Οἱ ἀλληλοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίες συναντῶνται καὶ σὲ γενικὴ πτώση, π. χ.:

Washing one another' s clothes.

Ἡ each other χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ἡ ἀμοιβαιότητα ὑπάρχη ἀνάμεσα σὲ δυὸ πρόσωπα. Ἀντίθετα ἡ one another χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ἡ ἀμοιβαιότητα ὑπάρχη ἀνάμεσα σὲ περισσότερα πρόσωπα:

1ο παράδειγμα:

The two teams complimented each other.

2ο παράδειγμα:

The members of the team complimented one another.

Η ΠΡΟΘΕΣΗ **BY**

Ἡ πρόθεση **by** = κοντά, φανερώνει καὶ τὸ ποιητικὸ αἴτιο μιᾶς πράξης, ἀλλὰ ἔχει καὶ πολλὲς ἄλλες ἔννοιες.

Examples:

The boy was knocked down by a bus = τὸ ἀγόρι χτυπήθηκε κάτω (ἔπεσε κάτω) ἀπὸ ἕνα λεωφορεῖο.

Those letters were written by Miss Galanis = αὐτὰ τὰ γράμματα γράφτηκαν ἀπὸ τὴ δεσποινίδα Γαλάνη.

The house was destroyed by the fire = τὸ σπίτι καταστράφηκε ἀπὸ τὴ φωτιά.

My house is by the river = τὸ σπίτι μου εἶναι κοντὰ στὸ ποτάμι.

Come and sit by me = ἔλα καὶ κάθησε κοντά μου.

Did you come here by bus or by car? = ἦλθες ἐδῶ μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο ἢ μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητο;

Did he go to Athens by land or by sea? = πῆγε αὐτὸς στὴν Ἀθήνα διὰ ξηρᾶς ἢ διὰ θαλάσσης;

Can you be here by three o' clock? = μπορεῖς νὰ εἶσαι ἐδῶ κατὰ τὶς τρεῖς ἡ ὥρα;

Miss Galanis finished writing all the letters by twelve o' clock = ἡ δεσποινίδα Γαλάνη τελείωσε νὰ γράφη ὅλα τὰ γράμματα κατὰ τὶς δώδεκα ἡ ὥρα.

You can speak English well by now, I hope = μπορεῖς νὰ μιλᾶς ἀγγλικὰ καλὰ τώρα, ἐλπίζω.

By that time the house was burning = ἐκείνη τὴν ὥρα τὸ σπίτι καιγόταν.
Cloth is sold by the yard or by the meter = τὸ ὕφασμα πουλιέται μὲ τὴν γυάρδα ἢ μὲ τὸ μέτρο.
In England eggs are sold by the dozen = στὴν Ἀγγλία τὰ αὐγὰ πουλιοῦνται μὲ τὴν ντουζίνα.
Some workmen are paid by the hour = μερικοὶ ἐργάτες πληρώνονται μὲ τὴν ὥρα.
Cross the street by the bridge = διάσχισε τὸν δρόμο ἀπὸ τὴν γέφυρα.
Our streets are lighted by electricity = οἱ δρόμοι μας φωτίζονται μὲ τὸν ἠλεκτρισμό.
Don' t take the wrong bus by mistake = μὴν παίρνεις τὸ λανθασμένο λεωφορεῖο κατὰ λάθος.
Can you lift the piano by yourself? (without help?) = μπορεῖς νὰ σηκώσης τὸ πιάνο μόνος σου; (χωρὶς βοήθεια;)
These shoes can walk by themselves = αὐτὰ τὰ παπούτσια μποροῦν νὰ περπατήσουν μόνα τους.
Mary is too young to travel by herself (with no one to take care on her) = ἡ Μαίρη εἶναι πολὺ νέα γιὰ νὰ ταξιδέψη μόνη της (χωρὶς κανέναν νὰ τὴν πρoσέχη).
He lives by himself (no other person lives with him) = μένει μόνος του (κανένα ἄλλο ἄτομο δὲν μένει μαζί του).

ΕΡΩΤΗΣΕΙΣ ΜΕ ΑΡΝΗΣΗ

Ὅπως ἔχουμε ἐρωτήσεις, μποροῦμε νὰ ἔχουμε κι ἀρνητικὲς ἐρωτήσεις. Νὰ εἶναι ἐρωτήσεις ἀλλὰ νὰ ἔχουν καὶ τὴν ἄρνηση. Τότε συνήθως ἔχουμε τὸν σύντομο τύπο, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ πρῶτο ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ be, ποὺ δὲν τὸ ἀλλάζουμε. Λέμε don' t you? κι ὄχι do you not? Ἀλλὰ πάντοτε am I not? Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων σ' αὐτὲς τὶς προτάσεις εἶναι do ἢ does μαζὶ μὲ τὴν ἄρνηση, ὑποκείμενο, κύριο ρῆμα, ἀντικείμενο.

Examples:

Don' t I need a new hat? = δὲν χρειάζομαι ἕνα καινούργιο καπέλο;
Don' t you want to go with us? = δὲν θέλεις νὰ πᾶς μαζί μας;
Doesn' t he rent the house? = δὲν νοικιάζει αὐτὸς τὸ σπίτι;
Doesn' t he like to study? = δὲν τοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ μελετᾶ;

Don' t we have a class today? = δὲν ἔχουμε μάθημα σήμερα;
Don' t they notice the difference? = δὲν παρατηροῦν τὴν διαφορά;
Aren' t you coming with us? = δὲν ἔρχεσαι μαζί μας;
Isn' t Virginia ready to go? = δὲν εἶναι ἡ Virginia ἕτοιμη νὰ πάη;
We study our lessons every day = μελετοῦμε τὰ μαθήματά μας κάθε μέρα.
Don' t we study our lessons every day?
He is a good student = αὐτὸς εἶναι ἕνας καλὸς μαθητής.
Isn' t he a good student?
Mary plays tennis in the garden every day = ἡ Μαίρη παίζει τέννις στὸν κῆπο κάθε μέρα.
Doesn' t Mary play tennis in the garden every day?
Don' t you ever go to school late? = δὲν πᾶς ποτέ σου στὸ σχολεῖο ἀργά;
Doesn' t he ever sleep late at night? = δὲν κοιμᾶται αὐτὸς ποτὲ ἀργὰ τὸ βράδυ;
Don' t you ever swim at night in the summer? = δὲν κολυμπᾶς ποτὲ τὴ νύχτα τὸ καλοκαίρι;
Aren' t you ever late for class? = δὲν ἀργεῖς ποτὲ στὸ μάθημα;
Aren' t there any students in class? = δὲν ὑπάρχουν καθόλου μαθηταὶ στὴν τάξη;
Isn' t there the teacher in class? = δὲν ὑπάρχει (δὲν εἶναι) ὁ δάσκαλος στὴν τάξη;

VOCABULARY

vowel	(βάουελ)	=	φωνῆεν
notice	(νότις)	=	ἀνακοίνωση, παρατήρηση
bridge	(μπριντj)	=	γέφυρα
meter	(μετρ)	=	μέτρο
lift	(λιφ)	=	σηκώνω (raise), ἀσανσὲρ (elevator)
knock	(νοκ)	=	χτυπῶ
destroy	(ντιστρόϊ)	=	καταστρέφω
destroyer	(ντιστρόγερ)	=	καταστροφέας
destruction	(ντιστράκchev)	=	καταστροφὴ
burn	(μπερν)	=	καίω
rare	(ρερ)	=	σπάνιος
rarely	(ρέρλι)	=	σπάνια (seldom)

pocket	(πόκετ)	=	τσέπη
pickpocket	(πικπόκετ)	=	πορτοφολάς, κλέφτης
heat	(hίιτ)	=	θέρμανση, ζεσταίνω
view	(βιοὺ)	=	θέα, ἄποψη
raise	(ρέϊζ)	=	ὑψώνω (lift)
quick	(κουΐκ)	=	γρήγορος - η - ο
quickly	(κουΐκλι)	=	γρήγορα
complete	(καμπλίτ)	=	πλήρης, συμπληρώνω
ring	(ριγκ)	=	δαχτυλίδι
product	(πρόντακτ)	=	προϊὸν
below	(μπιλόου)	=	ἀπὸ κάτω
business letter	(μπίζνες λέτερ)	=	ἐμπορικὴ ἐπιστολὴ
calling card	(κόλιγκ καρντ)	=	ἐπισκεπτήριο
distinguish	(ντιστίνγκουϊch)	=	διακρίνω, ξεχωρίζω
distinguished	(ντιστίνγκουϊchτ)	=	διακεκριμένος (famous)
given name	(γκίβεν νέϊμ)	=	δοθὲν ὄνομα
in order to	(ιν όρντερ του)	=	γιὰ νὰ
is written	(ιζ ρίτ’ ν)	=	εἶναι γραμμένο
junior	(ντjούνιερ)	=	νεώτερος
marriage	(μαέριντj)	=	γάμος
member	(μέμπερ)	=	μέλος
middlename	(μιντλνέϊμ)	=	μεσαῖο ὄνομα
select	(σιλὲκτ)	=	διαλέγω
selection	(σιλέκchεν)	=	ἐκλογή, διαλογὴ
sign	(σάϊν)	=	ὑπογράφω
signature	(σίγκνετchερ)	=	ὑπογραφὴ
surname	(σερνέϊμ)	=	ἐπώνυμο
use	(γιοὺς)	=	χρήση
maiden	(μέϊντ’ ν)	=	κορίτσι ἀνύπαντρο
parenthesis	(παερένθισις)	=	παρένθεση
noise	(νόϊζ)	=	θόρυβος
beside	(μπισάϊντ)	=	πλάϊ, κοντὰ (next to)
besides	(μπισάϊντς)	=	ἐκτὸς ἀπό
fan	(φαν)	=	ἀνεμιστήρας
radical	(ράντικαλ)	=	ριζικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
park	(παρκ)	=	πάρκο
hotel	(hοτὲλ)	=	ξενοδοχεῖο (hostel)
hostel	(hόστελ)	=	ξενοδοχεῖο, ξενώνας

bank	(μπαενκ)	=	ὄχθη, τράπεζα
overcoat	(όβερκοουτ)	=	πανωφόρι
dirty	(ντέρτι)	=	βρώμικος - η - ο
export	(εξπὸρτ)	=	ἐξάγω
exporter	(εξπόρτερ)	=	ἐξαγωγέας
exportation	(εξπορτέϊchev)	=	ἐξαγωγὴ
import	(ιμπὸρτ)	=	εἰσάγω
contain	(κοντέϊν)	=	περιέχω (include)
patience	(πέϊchevς)	=	ὑπομονὴ
patient	(πέϊchevτ)	=	ὑπομονητικὸς
president	(πρέζιντεντ)	=	πρόεδρος
general	(ντjένεραλ)	=	στρατηγὸς
thought	(δόου)	=	although
still	(στιλ)	=	μέχρι τώρα, μέχρι τότε
nearly	(νίιρλι)	=	σχεδὸν
kind	(κάϊντ)	=	εἶδος
health	(hελθ)	=	ὑγεία
oil	(όϊλ)	=	λάδι, πετρέλαιο
eastern	(ίστερν)	=	ἀνατολικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
central	(σέντραλ)	=	κεντρικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
rich	(ριτch)	=	πλούσιος - α - ο
break	(μπρέϊκ)	=	σπάζω
take off	(τέϊκ οφ)	=	βγάζω ἀπὸ πάνω μου
service	(σέρβις)	=	ὑπηρεσία
at your disposal	(αετ γιὸρ ντισπόοζαλ)	=	στὴ διάθεσή σου
cook	(κουκ)	=	μαγειρεύω
compliment	(κάμπλιμεντ)	=	συγχαίρω, συγχαρητήρια
land	(λαεντ)	=	ξηρὰ
workman	(γουέρκμαεν)	=	ἐργάτης (worker)
electricity	(ιλεκτρίσιτι)	=	ἠλεκτρισμὸς
wrong	(ρογκ)	=	λανθασμένος - η - ος
difference	(ντίφερενς)	=	διαφορὰ

ΑΝΩΜΑΛΑ ΡΗΜΑΤΑ

burn (μπερν) **burned** καὶ **burnt** **burn** καὶ **burnt**

	(μπερν καὶ μπερντ)	(μπερν καὶ μπερντ)	= καίω
shine (cháïν)	**shone** (chóον)	**shone** (chóον)	= λάμπω
break (μπρέϊκ)	**broke** (μπρόοκ)	**broken** (μπρόκ' ν)	= σπάω

TEXT

American names

There are five members in the Lloyd family. The father's full name is Charles Edward Lloyd. Charles is his first name or given name, Edward his middlename and Lloyd his last name or surname. An American has only one surname because he never uses his mother's maiden name before or after his father's name. Mr. Lloyd's wife is Mrs. Charles Edward Lloyd or Mrs. Charles E. Lloyd. Before her marriage her name was Alice Smith but now it is Alice Lloyd. In business letters, however, she uses the signature Alice Lloyd with Mrs. Charles E. Lloyd in parentheses below. On her calling card her name is always written Mrs. Charles Edward Lloyd. Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd have two sons and one daughter. The name of the one son is Charles Edward Lloyd, junior. The word junior (Jr.) follows the name of the son in order to distinguish it from the name of his father. The name of the other son is Paul Andrew Lloyd. The daughter's name is Mary Lloyd. On her calling card it is always written Miss Mary Lloyd. The parents select the first two names of their children either given names or family surnames. But the last name is always the father's surname.

TRANLATION

Ὑπάρχουν πέντε μέλη στὴν οἰκογένεια Λόϋντ. Τὸ ὁλοκληρο ὄνομα τοῦ πατέρα εἶναι Charles Edward Lloyd. Charles εἶναι τὸ πρῶτο του ὄνομα ἢ τὸ δοθὲν ὄνομα, Edward εἶναι τὸ μεσαῖο ὄνομά του καὶ Lloyd τὸ τελευταῖο του ὄνομα ἢ τὸ ἐπώνυμό του. Ἕνας Ἀμερικανὸς ἔχει μόνον ἕνα ἐπώνυμο, γιατὶ ποτὲ δὲν χρησιμοποιεῖ τὸ πατρικὸ ὄνομα τῆς μητέρας του πρὶν ἢ μετὰ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ πατέρα του. Ἡ σύζυγος τοῦ κυρίου Lloyd εἶναι ἡ κυρία Charles

Edward Lloyd ἡ κυρία Charles E. Lloyd. Πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸν γάμο της τὸ ὄνομά της ἦταν Alice Smith, ἀλλὰ τώρα εἶναι Alice Lloyd. Στὰ ἐμπορικὰ γράμματα ὅμως αὐτὴ χρησιμοποιεῖ τὴν ὑπογραφὴ Alice Lloyd μὲ «κυρία Charles E. Lloyd» σὲ παρένθεση κάτω. Στὸ ἐπισκεπτήριό της τὸ ὄνομά της εἶναι πάντοτε γραμμένο Mrs. Edward Lloyd. Ὁ κύριος καὶ ἡ κυρία Lloyd ἔχουν δυὸ γιοὺς καὶ μιὰ κόρη. Τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ ἑνὸς γιοῦ εἶναι Charles Edward Lloyd ὁ νεώτερος. Ἡ λέξη νεώτερος ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ γιοῦ, μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ τὸ ξεχωρίσῃ ἀπὸ τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ πατέρα. Τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ ἄλλου γιοῦ εἶναι Paul Andrew Lloyd. Τὸ ὄνομα τῆς κόρης εἶναι Mary Lloyd. Στὸ ἐπισκεπτήριό της εἶναι πάντοτε γραμμένο Δεσποινὶς Mary Lloyd. Οἱ γονεῖς διαλέγουν τὰ πρῶτα δύο ὀνόματα τῶν παιδιῶν τους εἴτε δοθέντα ὀνόματα ἢ οἰκογενειακὰ ἐπώνυμα. Ἀλλὰ τὸ τελευταῖο ὄνομα εἶναι πάντοτε τὸ ἐπώνυμο τοῦ πατέρα.

EXERCISE 219

CONVERSATION

What does this lesson explain?
How many members are there in the Lloyd family?
What is Mr. Lloyd' s full name?
What is his first, middle and last name?
Who selects the first two names?
Does an American use his mother' s maiden name before or after his father' s name?
When does a woman change her name?
What is Mrs. Lloyd' s full name?
What is the name on her calling card?
How does she sign a business letter?
What are the names of the children?
Why is the word junior used after the name of a son?

ΟΙ ΣΥΓΓΕΝΕΙΣ

uncle (ανκλ) = θεῖος
aunt (αντ) = θεία

nephew (νέφιου)	=	ἀνεψιὸς
niece (νις)	=	ἀνεψιὰ
cousin (κάζεν)	=	ἐξάδελφος - η
grandfather (γκράντφάδερ)	=	παποὺς
grandmother (γκράντμάδερ)	=	γιαγιὰ
grandparents (γκράντπαέρεντς)	=	παποὺς καὶ γιαγιὰ (μεγάλοι γονεῖς)
grandson (γκράντσον)	=	ἐγγονὸς
granddaughter (γκράντότερ)	=	ἐγγονὴ
grandchildren (γκράντchίλ-ντρεν)	=	ἐγγόνια
mother in law (μάδερ ιν λόου)	=	πεθερὰ
brother in law (μπράδερ ιν λόου)	=	γαμπρὸς ἀπὸ ἀδελφὴ ἢ κουνιάδος
sister in law (σίστερ ιν λόου)	=	νύφη ἢ κουνιάδα
son in law (σον ιν λόου)	=	γαμπρὸς ἀπὸ θυγατέρα
daughter in law (ντότερ ιν λόου)	=	νύφη
stepfather (στέπφάδερ)	=	πατρυιὸς
stepmother (στέπμάδερ)	=	μητρυιὰ
stepchild (στέπτchάϊλντ)	=	προγονὸς - ἡ
godfather (γκόντφάδερ)	=	νουνὸς
godmother (γκοντμάδερ)	=	νουνὰ
godchild (γκόντtchάϊλντ)	=	ἀναδεκτὸς

NO

Τὸ no ἔχει τὴ θέση τοῦ ἐπιρρήματος ἢ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Ὡς ἐπίρρημα τὸ no χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ ἀπαντήσουμε σὲ μιὰ ἐρώτηση, π. χ.:

Do you come to class on Saturday? No = ἔρχεσαι στὸ μάθημα τὸ Σάββατο; Ὄχι.

Τὸ no ἐδῶ ἔχει θέση ἐπιρρήματος.

Are you a lawyer? No I am a dentist = εἶσαι ἕνας δικηγόρος; ὄχι, εἶμαι ἕνας ὀδοντογιατρός.

Σὰν ἐπίθετο τὸ no χρησιμοποιεῖται πρὶν ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ χωρὶς ἄρθρο ἢ πρὶν ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικό, ποὺ συνοδεύεται ἀπὸ ἕνα ἐπίθετο, ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπὸ τὰ any, much, many ἢ enough, π. χ.:

I have no money in my pocket = δὲν ἔχω χρήματα στὴ τσέπη μου.
There is no paper in the desk = δὲν ὑπάρχει χαρτὶ στὸ θρανίο.
There is no white paper in the desk = δὲν ὑπάρχει καθόλου ἄσπρο χαρτὶ στὸ θρανίο.

Τὸ not εἶναι ἐπίρρημα καὶ τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε στὶς κάτωθι περιπτώσεις:

Πρὶν ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ μὲ ἀόριστο ἄρθρο, π. χ.:

Not a person in the class is absent today =οὔτε ἕνα πρόσωπο στὴν τάξη ἀπουσιάζει σήμερα.

Ἐπίσης τὸ not, πρὶν ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις any, much, many καὶ enough, π.χ.:

There is not any paper in the desk = δὲν ὑπάρχει καθόλου χαρτὶ μέσα στὸ θρανίο.
Not much time is left = δὲν ἔχει μείνει πολὺς χρόνος.
Not many students come to class late = ὄχι πολλοὶ μαθηταὶ ἔρχονται στὸ μάθημα ἀργά.
Not enough students are here to have a class today = ὄχι ἀρκετοὶ (λίγοι) μαθηταὶ βρίσκονται ἐδῶ σήμερα, γιὰ νὰ ἔχουν μάθημα.

Ἐπίσης τὸ not, χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ κάνουμε μία πρόταση ἀρνητικὴ ἢ καὶ σὲ μιὰ σύντομη ἀπάντηση χωρὶς ρῆμα, ὅταν ἐννοοῦμε τὸ ρῆμα της ἐρωτήσεως, π. χ.:

The classes are not large = οἱ τάξεις δὲν εἶναι μεγάλες.
They do not want to go with us = δὲν θέλουν νὰ ἔλθουν μαζί μας.
He is an American, not a Canadian = αὐτὸς εἶναι ἕνας Ἀμερικανός, ὄχι ἕνας Καναδός.
Sometimes they shake hands, sometimes not = μερικὲς φορὲς ἀνταλλάσουν χειραψία, μερικὲς φορὲς ὄχι.
Do they embrace? Not often = ἀγκαλιάζονται; Ὄχι συχνά.

Are they going? Not now = πᾶνε; Ὄχι τώρα.
Are they ready? Not yet = εἶναι ἕτοιμοι; Ὄχι ἀκόμη.

Μέσα σὲ μιὰ πρόταση δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ ἔχουμε καὶ τὸ no καὶ τὸ not, γιατὶ τότε θὰ εἴχαμε δύο ἀρνήσεις σὲ μιὰ πρόταση, ποὺ μᾶς κάνουν μία κατάφαση. Τὸ no χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης γιὰ ἔμφαση, π. χ.:

I have no class today = δὲν ἔχω μάθημα σήμερα.

Ὑπάρχει ἔμφαση μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Τονίζουμε δηλαδὴ τὴν ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως χρησιμοποιώντας τὸ no. Ἐνῶ:

I don't have any class today = δὲν ἔχω μάθημα σήμερα.

Ἐδῶ ὑπάρχει λιγότερη ἔμφαση, γιατὶ δὲν χρησιμοποιήθηκε τὸ no.

FEW - A FEW

Ἡ διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὴν λέξη **few** καὶ **a few**, εἶναι ἡ ἑξῆς:
Τὸ few μέσα στὴν πρόταση χωρὶς ἄρθρο θὰ τὸ ἐξηγήσουμε «λίγα, ὄχι πολλά». A few, μὲ τὸ ἀόριστο ἄρθρο, θὰ τὸ ἐξηγήσουμε «μερικά, ἀρκετά».

Examples:

Few (not many) of us own a car = λίγοι (ὄχι πολλοὶ) ἀπὸ ἐμᾶς κατέχουν ἕνα αὐτοκίνητο.
A few (some) of the boys went by car but most of them went by bus = μερικὰ ἀπὸ τὰ ἀγόρια πῆγαν μὲ αὐτοκίνητο, ἀλλὰ οἱ περισσότεροι ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς πῆγαν μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
George has a large number of English books but very few (not many) French books = ὁ Γιῶργος ἔχει ἕναν μεγάλο ἀριθμὸ ἀπὸ ἀγγλικὰ βιβλία, ἀλλὰ πολὺ·λίγα γαλλικὰ βιβλία.
There are a few knives on the table = ὑπάρχουν μερικὰ μαχαίρια ἐπάνω στό τραπέζι.
He has only a few books at home = αὐτὸς ἔχει μόνο μερικὰ βιβλία στὸ σπίτι.

OF - FROM

'Η πρόθεση **of** ἔχει τὴν ἴδια περίπου σημασία μὲ τὴν πρόθεση **from**.
'Η of ὡστόσο χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση ποσότητα ἀπὸ κάτι ἢ τὸ μέρος ἀντὶ τοῦ ὅλου, λίγο ἀπὸ τὸ πολύ, π. χ.:

A pound of sugar = μία λίτρα ζάχαρη. A gallon of gasoline = ἕνα γαλόνι βενζίνη. A glass of milk = ἕνα ποτήρι γάλα. Some of the students = μερικοὶ ἀπὸ τοὺς μαθητάς. All of the books=ὅλα (ἀπὸ) τὰ βιβλία. None (no one) of the houses = κανένα ἀπὸ τὰ σπίτια.

'Επίσης γιὰ νὰ φανερώση τὴν γενικὴ κτητικὴ πτώση, ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ πράγματα. Στὰ πρόσωπα ἔχουμε τὸ -s καὶ τὴν ἀπόστροφο, στὰ πράγματα τὸ of, π. χ.:

The name of the school = τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ σχολείου.
The capital of the country = ἡ πρωτεύουσα τῆς χώρας.
The color of the walls = τὸ χρῶμα τῶν τοίχων.
The present tense of the verb = ὁ 'Ενεστὼς τοῦ ρήματος.

'Η πρόθεση **from**, χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ νὰ φανερώση προέλευση ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἀντικειμένων, π. χ.:

Where is she from? She is from Italy = ἀπὸ ποῦ εἶναι αὐτή; Εἶναι ἀπὸ τὴν 'Ιταλία.
Where does she come from? = ἀπὸ ποῦ κατάγεται;
She comes from Paris = κατάγεται ἀπὸ τὸ Παρίσι.
She has a letter from her family = ἔχει ἕνα γράμμα ἀπὸ τὴν οἰκογένειά της.

Τὸ from ἐπίσης φανερώνει τὸν τόπο, ὅπου μιά πράξη ἀρχίζει, καὶ τὸν χρόνο ποὺ ἀρχίζει, π. χ.:

He goes directly from his office to class = αὐτὸς πάει κατ' εὐθεῖαν ἀπὸ τὸ γραφεῖο του στὸ μάθημα.
The plane flies from New York to Denver = τὸ ἀεροπλάνο πετᾶ ἀπὸ τὴν Νέα 'Υόρκη στὸ Ντένβερ.
They are always happy from morning to night=εἶναι πάντοτε εὐτυχεῖς ἀπὸ τὸ πρωΐ ὡς τὸ βράδυ.

EXERCISE 220

Συμπληρώστε no ἢ not στὰ κενά:

Example:

Sometimes they go for a walk, sometimes **not**.

He notices .... differences in their pronunciation.
The room has .... windows in it.
That store does .... sell paper.
They have .... fire—place in their house.
They do .... have a class today.
We have .... time for that now.
.... news is good news.
.... man in the room speaks English.
.... sentence is complete without a verb.
There is .... heat in the building.
.... many people like to wait.
.... much light comes into the room.
.... other class wants to do that.
There is .... time like the present.
.... many students are in the library now.
Mr. Smith is .... at home now.
There is .... a store near our home.
There is .... bread in the house.
The teacher is .... difficult to understand.
Is the pronunciation easy? .... easy.
There are .... students absent today.
We have .... hot water today.
She does .... like to speak English.
There are .... new houses on that street.
Do you often go to the movies ? .... often.

EXERCISE 221

Συμπληρώστε the ὅπου χρειάζεται, π. χ.:

Do you speak **the** English language?

....professor is not here today.
....Mrs. Miller speaks ....English.
....Mr. Miller understands ....Spanish.
....President Roosevelt died in 1945.
....president never travels alone.
....General Green was in ....United States.
....general likes his work, but it is difficult.
She lives on ....Park street.
She lives between ....Fourth Street and ....Fifth Avenue.
....Park Street has some nice houses.
....streets in this part of the city are very wide.
....coffee is an important product of Colombia.
....coffee from Colombia is very good.
I prefer ....tea now, but I like ....coffee for breakfast.
....vegetables are good for one' s health.

EXERCISE 222

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις:

The newspaper boy goes ....house ....house ....bottles .....milk.

He leaves a newspaper ....every house ....the street.

The newspaper boy gets up early ....the morning.

Lessons begin ....this school ....nine o' clock.

Some ....the children go home ....lunch and some have lunch ....school.

Mr. Brown was sitting .... the back ....the car and his son was ....front.

Do you take sugar ....your coffee?

There are many nice stores ....Fifth Avenue.

The train leaves ....six o' clock.

He is going ....the station early.

Mr. Lloyd' s office is ....the second floor.

We have our class ....the evening.

We have our class ....Mondays and Fridays.

The book is ....the desk.

Mary is studying ....Louisiana State University.

EXERCISE 223

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Does your teacher explain American names to you?
Does the teacher understand the custom of your country?
What is your complete name?
What is your first name?
How many names do you have?
How do you sign your name?
What are you going to do tonight?
Where did you go last night?
When are you going to write your lesson?
Where will you go tomorrow?
Were you in class yesterday?
Who were absent from class?
What can a glass be full of?
What can a box be full of?
Where were you last night at eight o' clock?
What did Mary give you?
Where did Mr. Brown find his French book?
How can I go to Mary' s school?
How many children do the Lloyds have?

XXII

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 219

This lesson explains American names.
There are five members in the Lloyd family.
Mr. Lloyd' s full name is Charles Edward Lloyd.
Charles is his first name or given name, Edward is his middle name and Lloyd his last name or surname.
The parents select the first two names of their children.
No, an American never uses his mother maiden name before or after his father' s name.
A woman changes her name after her marriage.
Mrs. Lloyd's full name is Mrs. Charles Edward Lloyd.
On her calling card her name is always written Mrs. Charles Edward Lloyd.
In business letters she signs Alice Lloyd with Mrs. Charles E. Lloyd in parentheses below.
The names or the children are Charles Edward Lloyd junior, Paul Andrew Lloyd and Mary Lloyd.
The word junior is used in order to distinguish it from the name of the father.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 220

He notices no differences in their pronunciation.
The room has no windows in it.
That store does not sell paper.
They have no fire - place in their house.
They do not have a class today.
We have no time for that now.

No news is good news.
No man in the room speaks English.
No sentence is complete without a verb.
There is no heat in the building.
Not many people like to wait.
Not much light comes into the room.
No other class wants to do that.
There is no time like the present.
Not many students are in the library now.
Mr. Smith is not at home now.
There is not a store near our home.
There is no bread in the house.
The teacher is not difficult to understand.
Is the pronunciation easy? Not easy.
There are no students absent today.
We have no hot water today.
She does not like to speak English.
There are no new houses on that street.
Do you often go to the movies? Not often.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 221

The professor is not here today.
Mrs. Miller speaks English.
Mr. Miller understands Spanish.
President Roosevelt died in 1945.
The president never travels alone.
General Green was in the United States.
The general likes his work but it is difficult.
She lives on Park Street.
She lives between Fourth Street and Fifth Avenue.
Park Street has some nice houses.
The streets in this part of the city are very wide.
Coffee is an important product of Colombia.
The coffee from Colombia is very good.
I prefer tea now but I like coffee for breakfast.
Vegetables are good for one' s health.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 222

The newspaper boy goes from house to house with bottles of milk.
He leaves a newspaper in every house on the street.
The newspaper boy gets up early in the morning.
Lessons begin at this school at nine o' clock.
Some of the children go home for lunch and some have lunch at school.
Mr. Brown was sitting at the back of the car and his son in front.
Do you take sugar with your coffee?
There are many nice stores on Fifth Avenue.
The train leaves at six o' clock.
He is going to the station early.
Mr Lloyd' s office is on the second floor.
We have our class in the evening.
We have our class on Mondays and Fridays.
The book is on the desk.
Mary is studying at Louisiana State University.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 223

Yes, she explains them to us.
Yes, she understands the custom of my country.
My complete name is ....
My first name is .....
I have two names.
I sign it ....
I am going to stay at home.
I went to the movies.
I an going to write it tonight.
I will go to the theater.
No, I was absent.
Mary was absent from class.
A glass can be full of milk.

A box can be full of pens.
I was at school; I had a lesson.
She gave me a book.
He found his French book in the desk.
You can go there by bus.
They have three children.

Η ΛΕΞΗ ORDER

Ἡ λέξη **order** (όρντερ) ἔχει πολλὲς ἔννοιες. Τὴν συναντοῦμε σὰν ρῆμα καὶ σὰν οὐσιαστικό. Order = διατάζω, order = διαταγή. Ἐπίσης order = παραγγελία. Ἐπίσης σημαίνει τὴν καλὴ σειρὰ ἑνὸς ἀντικειμένου, τὴν τάξη. Φανερώνει ὅμως καὶ σκοπὸ: in order to = γιὰ νά, μὲ σκοπὸ νά. Ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ in order to εἶναι σχεδὸν ἴση μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ to. Τὸ to εἶναι πιὸ συνηθισμένο, τὸ in order to δίνει περισσότερη ἔμφαση στὴν ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως.

Examples:

The teacher ordered the students to stop talking = ὁ δάσκαλος διέταξε τοὺς μαθητὰς νὰ παύσουν νὰ μιλοῦν.
The general ordered the soldiers to fight = ὁ στρατηγὸς διέταξε τοὺς στρατιῶτες νὰ πολεμήσουν.
The waiter took our orders = ὁ σερβιτόρος πῆρε τὶς παραγγελίες μας.
It is an order, he said, you must fight = εἶναι διαταγή, εἶπε, πρέπει νὰ πολεμήσετε.
The machine is out of order = ἡ μηχανὴ χάλασε.
Everything is now in good order = τὰ πάντα εἶναι τώρα σὲ καλὴ κατάσταση.
The telephone is out of order = τὸ τηλέφωνο χάλασε.
Children go to school in order to learn many things = τὰ παιδιὰ πᾶνε στὸ σχολεῖο μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ μάθουν πολλὰ πράγματα.
He stood up in order to see better = σηκώθηκε ἐπάνω μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ δῆ καλύτερα.
She ran across the street in order to catch the bus = αὐτὴ ἔτρεξε κατὰ μῆκος τοῦ δρόμου μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ πάρη τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
Eat to live but do not live in order to eat = τρῶγε γιὰ νὰ ζῆς, ἀλλὰ μὴ ζῆς μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ τρῶς.

In order to go to college she has to study very hard = γιὰ νὰ πάη στὸ κολλέγιο, αὐτὴ πρέπει νὰ μελετήση σκληρά.

In order to go downtown she had to take a bus = γιὰ νὰ πάη κάτω στὴν πόλη, ἔπρεπε νὰ πάρη τὸ λεωφορεῖο, ἢ to go downtown she had to take a bus.

In order to earn money you have to work hard = γιὰ νὰ κερδίσης χρήματα, πρέπει νὰ δουλέψης σκληρὰ ἢ to earn money you have to work hard.

In order to go to the market she had to walk a long way because it was very far = γιὰ νὰ πάη στὴν ἀγορά, ἔπρεπε νὰ περπατήση πολὺ δρόμο, γιατὶ ἦταν πολὺ μακριά, ἢ to go to the market she had to walk a long way because it was very far.

Mary has to study hard in order to go to high school = ἡ Μαίρη πρέπει νὰ μελετήση σκληρά, γιὰ νὰ πάη στὸ γυμνάσιο, ἢ Mary has to study hard to go to high school.

They boiled the milk in order to drink it = ἔβρασαν τὸ γάλα, γιὰ νὰ τὸ πιοῦν, ἢ they boiled the milk to drink it.

ΕΡΩΤΗΜΑΤΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Interrogative Pronouns)

Οἱ ἐρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες **who** (whom, whose), **which** καὶ **what** χρησιμεύουν γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ ἐρωτήσεων καὶ μπαίνουν πάντοτε μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα π. χ.:

Who opened the door? = ποιὸς ἄνοιξε τὴν πόρτα;
Whose are these books? = τίνος εἶναι αὐτὰ τὰ βιβλία;

Οἱ ἐρωτήσεις, ποὺ εἰσάγονται μὲ τὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, εἶναι δύο εἰδῶν, εὐθεῖες ἐρωτήσεις ἢ πλάγιες ἐρωτήσεις (direct questions, indirect questions).

Εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση ἔχουμε, ὅταν σ' αὐτὴν περιέχωνται αὐτούσιες οἱ λέξεις, ποὺ χρησιμοποίησε αὐτός, ποὺ ρώτησε.

Πλάγια ἐρώτηση ἔχουμε, ὅταν σ' αὐτὴν δὲν ὑπάρχουν αὐτούσιες οἱ λέξεις,

πού χρησιμοποίησε αὐτός, πού ρώτησε, ἀλλὰ παραφρασμένες ἀπὸ κάποιον ἄλλον, π. χ.:

Who opened the door? (εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση)
He asked me who opened the door (πλάγια ἐρώτηση).

Ἂς δοῦμε τώρα τὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, τὴν καθεμιὰ χωριστά.

WHO

Τὸ who χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα. Οὐδέποτα γιὰ πράγματα. Χρησιμοποιεῖται τόσο γιὰ τὸν ἑνικὸ ὅσο καὶ γιὰ τὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό. Ἐπίσης χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ ὅλα τὰ γένη. Γιὰ κάθε πτώση ὅμως ἔχει καὶ διαφορετικὸ τύπο. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε;

Ὀνομαστική:	who
Γενική:	whose
Αἰτιατική:	whom

Examples:

Who can answer that question?
Mary can ἢ John can.
Whose are these gloves? They are Mary' s ἢ :They are John' s.
Whom did you see? I saw George.

Πολλὲς φορὲς ὅμως στὴν καθομιλουμένη ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, ὅταν ἔχουμε ἐρώτηση, ἀντὶ τοῦ whom μὲ πρόθεση μπαίνει ἡ ὀνομαστικὴ who. Ἔτσι ἀντὶ νὰ ποῦμε:

With whom are you going? ἢ
Whom are you going with?

λέμε συχνά:

Who are you going with?

Μπαίνει δηλαδὴ ἡ ὀνομαστικὴ ἀντὶ τῆς αἰτιατικῆς.

Στὴ σωστὴ ἀγγλικὴ αὐτὸ εἶναι λάθος. Τὸ σωστὸ εἶναι νὰ λέμε καὶ νὰ γράφουμε:

With whom are you going? ἢ
Whom are you going with?

Πιθανότατα ὅμως θὰ τ' ἀκούσουμε στὴν προφορικὴ ὁμιλία καὶ μὲ τὸν ἄλλον τρόπο:

Who are you going with?

Δὲν πρέπει νὰ ἐκπλαγοῦμε.

Παρατήρηση:

Ὅταν τὸ whom χρησιμοποιῆται σὰν ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, θέλει πάντοτε πρόθεση. Ἐνῶ ἡ προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία him μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ σὰν ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο καὶ χωρὶς πρόθεση.

Examples:

To whom did they give the book? = σὲ ποιὸν ἔδωσαν τὸ βιβλίο;
They gave him the book = τοῦ ἔδωσαν τὸ βιβλίο.

WHAT

Τὸ what χρησιμοποιεῖται γενικὰ γιὰ πράγματα. Μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι εἴτε ἑνικοῦ εἴτε πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ὑποκείμενο ἢ ἀντικείμενο. Γενικὴ πτώση δὲν ἔχει. Στὴν ὀνομαστικὴ καὶ αἰτιατικὴ μένει ἐπίσης ἀμετάβλητο, π. χ.:

What is this strange object?

Ἡ διάκριση ἀνάμεσα σὲ who (γιὰ τὰ πρόσωπα) καὶ what (γιὰ τὰ πράγματα) φαίνεται καθαρὰ στὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα:

What are you doing? I am cleaning the car.
Whom have you seen? I' ve seen the gardener.

Ἐπίσης τὸ what χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ρωτήσουμε γιὰ τὸ ἐπάγγελμα ἑνὸς προσώπου, π. χ.:

What is that man talking to your father? He' s a lawyer = τί εἶναι (τί δουλειὰ κάνει) ἐκεῖνος ὁ ἄντρας, ποὺ μιλάει μὲ τὸν πατέρα σου; εἶναι δικηγόρος.
What is that girl? She is a nurse.

Προσέξτε τὴν διαφορά:

Ὅταν ρωτήσω:

Who is that man talking to your father? (ποιὸς εἶναι ἐκεῖνος ποὺ μιλάει μὲ τὸν πατέρα σου;)

θὰ ἔχω γιὰ ἀπάντηση:

He is Mr .... (Εἶναι ὁ κύριος ....).

Ὅταν ὅμως ρωτήσω:

What is that man talking to your father? (Τί εἶναι ἐκεῖνος, ποὺ μιλάει μὲ τὸν πατέρα σου;),

θὰ ἔχω γιὰ ἀπάντηση:

He is a lawyer ἢ he is a gardener, οὐδέποτε ὅμως he is George ἢ he is Mr. Smith.

Γιατὶ μὲ τὸ what ρωτᾶμε γιὰ τὸ ἐπάγγελμα καὶ οὐδέποτε γιὰ τὸ πρόσωπο. Ἔτσι ἂν θέλουμε νὰ ποῦμε στὰ ἀγγλικὰ «δὲν ξέρω ποιὸς εἶναι ἢ τὶ δουλειὰ κάνει», θὰ ποῦμε: I don' t know who or what he is.

WHICH

Τὸ which χρησιμοποιεῖται τόσο γιὰ πρόσωπα ὅσο καὶ γιὰ πράγματα. Δὲν ἔχει γενική. Κι εἶναι ἀμετάβλητο στὸν ἑνικὸ καὶ πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, σὰν ὑποκείμενο ἢ σὰν ἀντικείμενο.

Διαφορὰ μεταξὺ what καὶ which. Τὸ what τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε, ὅταν κάνουμε ἐπιλογὴ ἀνάμεσα σ' ἕναν σχεδὸν ἀπεριόριστο ἀριθμὸ πραγμάτων. Ἐνῶ τὸ which τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε, ὅταν κάνουμε ἐπιλογὴ ἀνάμεσα σὲ ἕναν περιορισμένο ἀριθμό, π. χ.:

What would you like to read this summer?
A Shakespeare play.
Very good, which would you like?

Διαφορὰ μεταξὺ who καὶ which. Τὸ who χρησιμοποιεῖται γενικά, ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ρωτήσουμε γιὰ πρόσωπο.

Ἐνῶ τὸ which τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε, ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ρωτήσουμε γιὰ πρόσωπο, ποὺ θὰ ξεχωρίση ἀπὸ ἕναν περιορισμένο σύνολο. Τὰ ἑπόμενα παραδείγματα δίνουν μιὰ σαφῆ εἰκόνα αὐτῆς τῆς διακρίσεως:

Who would like to come for a game of football?
Which of you would like to come for a game of football?

ΕΡΩΤΗΜΑΤΙΚΑ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΑ

Ἡ ἴδια διαφορά, ποὺ ὑπάρχει ἀνάμεσα στὶς κτητικὲς καὶ δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες ἀφ' ἑνὸς καὶ στὰ κτητικὰ καὶ δεικτικὰ ἐπίθετα ἀφ' ἑτέρου, ὑπάρχει κι ἀνάμεσα στὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες καὶ στὰ ἐρωτηματικὰ ἐπίθετα. Στὶς πρῶτες παραλείπεται τὸ οὐσιαστικό, στὶς δεύτερες δὲν παραλείπεται.

Τὰ ἐρωτηματικὰ ἐπίθετα εἶναι **whose**, **what** καὶ **which**. Ὅπως ὅλα τὰ ἐπίθετα ἔτσι κι αὐτὰ εἶναι ἀμετάβλητα κατὰ γένος, ἀριθμὸ καὶ πτώση, π. χ.:

Whose car is that?
Whose little girl are you?
What kind of chocolates do you like best?
Which subject is your best one?

EVER

Γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσουμε ζωηρότερα συναισθήματα καταπλήξεως, θυμοῦ, ἀγανακτήσεως κ.λ.π., προσθέτουμε στὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες who, what καὶ which τὴν λέξη ever, π.χ.:

Whoever heard of such a strange idea? = ποιὸς ἄκουσε ποτὲ μιὰ τέτοια παράξενη ἰδέα;

ΙΔΙΩΜΑΤΙΚΕΣ ΕΚΦΡΑΣΕΙΣ

What about a cigarette? = θὰ ἤθελες ἕνα τσιγάρο;

There' s Mr . . . what' s - his - name?=εἶναι ὁ κύριος. . .πῶς τὸν λένε;

ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ

(the Subjunctive Mood)

Σᾶς ἔχω μιλήσει γιὰ τὴν **Περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτική**, γι' αὐτὴν ποὺ σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸ should ἢ τὸ would καὶ τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος, π. χ.:

I should write a letter to my father.

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπ' αὐτὴν τὴν Περιφραστικὴ Ὑποτακτική, ποὺ ἐπεκράτησε πιὰ ἀπόλυτα τόσο στὴν ἀγγλικὴ ὅσο καὶ στὴν ἀμερικανικὴ γλῶσσα, χρησιμοποιεῖται ἔστω καὶ σπάνια κι ἡ παλιά, **ἡ μονολεκτικὴ Ὑποτακτική**. Μ' αὐτὴν ἀκριβῶς θ' ἀσχοληθοῦμε σήμερα.

Ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ ἔχει τέσσερις χρόνους: Ἐνεστῶτα (the Present Subjunctive), Ἀόριστο (the Past Subjunctive), Παρακείμενο (the Present Perfect Subjunctive) κι Ὑπερσυντέλικο (the Past Perfect Subjunctive).

Ἄς ἐξετάσουμε τώρα, πότε χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ πῶς σχηματίζεται ὁ κάθε χρόνος τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς χωριστά:

ΕΝΕΣΤΩΣ ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗΣ

(The Present Subjunctive)

Ὁ **Ἐνεστὼς τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς** (the Present Subjunctive) χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς ἑξῆς περιπτώσεις:

α) **Ὕστερα ἀπὸ ρήματα ποὺ δείχνουν θέληση, εὐχή, ἐπιθυμία γιὰ τὸ μέλλον (θελήσεως σημαντικά), ὅπως ask, urge, order, propose, suggest κ. λ. π., π. χ.:**

He asked that I **come** to his office = ζήτησε νὰ ἔλθω στὸ γραφεῖο του.

I wish that **he do** what he pleases = ἐπιθυμῶ νὰ κάνῃ ὅ, τι τοῦ ἀρέσει.
She insists that **he write** and **accept** the post = αὐτὴ ἐπιμένει νὰ γράψῃ αὐτὸς καὶ νὰ δεχθῇ τὴ θέση.

Δὲν μποροῦμε στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ὕστερα ἀπὸ τέτοια ρήματα νὰ βάλουμε Ὁριστικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστῶτα. Δὲν μποροῦμε δηλαδὴ νὰ ποῦμε:

I wish that **he does** what he pleases.

Αὐτὸ δὲν εἶναι ἀγγλικὸ καὶ δὲν λέγεται ποτέ.

β) **Ὕστερα ἀπὸ ἐπίθετα, ποὺ ἔχουν τὴν ἴδια σημασία μὲ τὰ ρήματα τῆς παραπάνω κατηγορίας, δηλαδὴ ποὺ σημαίνουν θέληση, εὐχή, ἐπιθυμία γιὰ τὸ μέλλον**, π. χ.:

It is imperative that **he take** the next plane = εἶναι ἐπιτακτικὸ νὰ πάρῃ τὸ ἑπόμενο ἀεροπλάνο.

γ) **Σὲ ἐπιρρηματικὲς προτάσεις, ποὺ σημαίνουν ὑπόθεση** ἢ **παραχώρηση** (adverbial clauses of concession or condition), π. χ.:

Though **he make** a million dollars, what does he gain? = κι ἂν κάνῃ ἕνα ἑκατομμύριο δολλάρια, τί κερδίζει;

δ) **Γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσουμε εὐχὴ** ἢ **προσευχὴ** (wish or prayer) καὶ μάλιστα σὲ ὁρισμένες καθιερωμένες ἐκφράσεις, π. χ.:

God **save** the King = ὁ Θεὸς σώζοι τὸν Βασιλέα.
Heaven **preserve** us = ὁ Θεὸς νὰ μᾶς φυλάξῃ.

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπὸ τὴν τελευταία περίπτωση, ἡ χρήση τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς στὴ σύγχρονη ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ὁλοένα περιορίζεται κι ἡ ἔγκλιση αὐτὴ τείνει νὰ ἀχρηστευθῇ. Χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνο στὴν «καθαρεύουσα». Ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ ἀντικαθίσταται συχνότατα ἀπὸ ἕνα ἄλλο **ἰσοδύναμο** (equivalent), τὸ should ἢ would + Ἀπαρέμφατο. Ἔτσι τὰ παραδείγματα, ποὺ ἀναφέραμε πιὸ πάνω, στὴ σύγχρονη ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα θὰ γίνουν ἔτσι:

He asked that I **should come** to his office.
I wish that **he should do** what he pleases.

She insisted that **he should write** and **accept** the post.
It is imperative that **he should take** the next plane.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΤΗΣ ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗΣ ΤΟΥ ΕΝΕΣΤΩΤΑ

Ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα be, εἶναι ἴδια μὲ τὴν Ὁριστικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα, μόνο ποὺ στὸ τρίτο ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο δὲν παίρνει s, σχηματίζεται δηλαδὴ καὶ στὸ πρόσωπο αὐτὸ ὅπως ἀκριβῶς καὶ στὰ ἄλλα πρόσωπα. Ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα τοῦ ρήματος be κάνει be γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα. Ἂς δοῦμε τώρα, πῶς κλίνεται ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα ἑνὸς ὁμαλοῦ ρήματος, π. χ. τοῦ love.

Subjunctive Mood

Present Tense

(if) **I love**
You love
He love
She love
It love
We love
You love
They love

Ὅπως εἴπαμε, μόνο στὸ ρῆμα **be** ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα εἶναι διαφορετικὴ ἀπὸ τὴν Ὁριστικὴ τοῦ ἴδιου χρόνου. Ἡ Ὑποτακτικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα τοῦ ρήματος be κάνει:

(if) **I be**
You be
He be
She be
It be
We be
You be
They be

ΑΟΡΙΣΤΟΣ ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗΣ

Ὁ **Ἀόριστος τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς** εἶναι ὁλότελα ἴδιος μὲ τὸν ἁπλὸν Ἀόριστο τῆς Ὁριστικῆς, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα be, ποὺ κάνει **were** γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα.

Ἔτσι ὁ Ἀόριστος τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς τῶν ρημάτων **love** καὶ **be** κλίνεται ἔτσι:

(if)	**I loved**	(if)	**I were**
	You loved		**You were**
	He loved		**He were**
	She loved		**She were**
	It loved		**It were**
	We loved		**We were**
	You loved		**You were**
	They loved		**They were**

ΠΑΡΑΚΕΙΜΕΝΟΣ ΚΙ ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΣ ΤΗΣ ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗΣ

Ὁ **Παρακείμενος κι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς** ἑνὸς κυρίου ρήματος σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο κι Ὑπερσυντέλικο τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς τοῦ **have** ἀντιστοίχως καὶ μὲ τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Ἔτσι ὁ Παρακείμενος κι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς τοῦ ρήματος love κάνουν (if) I have love καὶ (if) I had loved καὶ κλίνονται ἔτσι σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα:

Subjunctive Mood

Present Perfect Tense		Past Perfect Tense	
(if)	**I have loved**	(if)	**I had loved**
	You have loved		**You had loved**
	He have loved		**He had loved**
	She have loved		**She had loved**
	It have loved		**It had loved**
	We have loved		**We had loved**
	You have loved		**You had loved**
	They have loved		**They had loved**

ΟΙ ΛΕΞΕΙΣ WAY ΚΑΙ RIGHT

'Η λέξη way χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ πολλοὺς τρόπους.
Way = δρόμος, τρόπος.

Examples:

Look this way, that way = κύτταξε ἀπὸ αὐτὸν τὸν δρόμο, ἐκεῖνο τὸν δρόμο.

Don' t look this way, look that way = μὴν κυττᾶς αὐτὸν τὸν δρόμο, δὲς ἀπὸ ἐκεῖνον τὸν δρόμο.

My mother told me this morning «look both ways before you cross the street» = ἡ μητέρα μου μοῦ εἶπε σήμερα τὸ πρωΐ «κύτταξε καὶ ἀπὸ τὶς δυὸ μεριές, πρὶν διασχίσης τὸν δρόμο».

He looked both ways before opening the door of his car = αὐτὸς κύτταξε καὶ ἀπὸ τὶς δυὸ μεριές, πρὶν νὰ ἀνοίξη τὴν πόρτα τοῦ αὐτοκινήτου του.

The man asked « is this the way to the station»? = ὁ ἄντρας ρώτησε «εἶναι αὐτὸς ὁ δρόμος γιὰ τὸν σταθμό»;

Yes, this is the way to the station = ναί, αὐτὸς εἶναι ὁ δρόμος γιὰ τὸ σταθμό.

Mary answered = ἡ Μαίρη ἀπάντησε.

Can you tell me the way to the post office? = μπορεῖς νὰ μοῦ πῆς τὸ δρόμο γιὰ τὸ ταχυδρομεῖο;

Yes, you will go this way and then you will turn left = ναί, θὰ πᾶτε ἀπὸ αὐτὸν τὸν δρόμο καὶ κατόπιν θὰ στρίψετε ἀριστερά.

The boy lost his way coming down the mountain = τὸ ἀγόρι ἔχασε τὸ δρόμο του κατεβαίνοντας ἀπὸ τὸ βουνό.

It is a long way from London to New York = εἶναι μεγάλος δρόμος ἀπὸ τὸ Λονδίνο γιὰ τὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη.

It is a long way from here to Athens = εἶναι μακριὰ (πολὺς δρόμος) ἀπὸ ἐδῶ στὴν 'Αθήνα.

John walks a long way to go to school = ὁ John περπατᾶ ἕνα μακρὺ δρόμο, γιὰ νὰ πάη στὸ σχολεῖο.

We have walked a long way up to here = ἔχουμε περπατήσει πολὺ δρόμο ὡς ἐδῶ.

Do it this way = κάμε το μ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπο.

Don' t do it this way = μὴν τὸ κάνης μ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπο.

I like the other way = μ' ἀρέσει ὁ ἄλλος τρόπος.

Is this the right way to do it? = εἶναι αὐτὸς ὁ σωστὸς τρόπος νὰ τὸ κάνω;
No, you are doing it the wrong way = ὄχι, τὸ κάνεις λάθος.
John has helped me in many ways = ὁ John μ' ἔχει βοηθήσει μὲ πολλοὺς τρόπους.
There are many ways of using the word «way» = ὑπάρχουν πολλοὶ τρόποι, γιὰ νὰ μεταχειριστῆς τὴ λέξη way = (τρόπος, δρόμος).

Ἡ λέξη **right** ἔχει πολλὲς ἔννοιες.
Right = δεξιό, σωστό. **All right** = ἐν τάξει.

Is this the right word? = εἶναι αὐτὴ ἡ σωστὴ λέξη;
He turned his car to the right = ἔστρεψε τὸ αὐτοκίνητό του πρὸς τὰ δεξιά.
He turned to the right and he saw his wife = γύρισε πρὸς τὰ δεξιὰ κι εἶδε τὴ γυναίκα του.
All right, he said. I will give you the money = ἐν τάξει, εἶπε, θὰ σοῦ δώσω τὰ χρήματα.

EXERCISE 224

Συμπληρῶστε, my, your, his, her, our, their στὰ κενά:

The boy usually helps .... sister.
The boys usually help .... sisters.
Mary has a letter for .... sister.
We like to visit .... friends.
We are waiting for .... class to begin.
On what days do you have .... English class?
Mrs. Lloyd loves .... children.
Alice says that .... American friends use short greetings.
Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd have three children .... last name is Lloyd and .... first names are Charles, Paul and Mary.
The American man does not use .... mother's name.
.... middle name is Edward.

EXERCISE 225

'Αντικαταστῆστε τὶς λέξεις στὴν παρένθεση μέ: mine, yours, his, hers, ours, theirs.

The signature is (her signature).
Is the book (your book)?
The letter is (my letter).
The shoes are (his shoes).
The house is (their house).
Is the hat (your hat) or (Paul' s hat)?
The room is (his room).
The radio is (my sister' s radio).
The car is (Mr. Miller' s car).
The calling card is (Charles' calling card).
Here is (my calling card) on the desk.
The desk is (my brother' s desk).
The coat is (Ann coat).
Is the newspaper (your newspaper)?
Is her name the same as (my name)?
The dog in the yard is (our dog).

VOCABULARY

appointment	(απόϊντμεντ)	= ραντεβοὺ (date), διορισμὸς
basis	(μπέϊσιζ)	= βάση (base)
chaperon	(τchάπερον)	= συνοδὸς
engagement	(ινγκέϊντjμεντ)	= πρόσληψη, ὑποχρέωση
I am interested on	(άϊ αεμ ίντρεστιντ ον)	= ἐνδιαφέρομαι γιὰ
sex	(σεξ)	= φῦλο
regards	(ριγκάρντζ)	= χαιρετίσματα
regard	(ριγκάρντ)	= παρατηρῶ, ἐκτιμῶ
omit	(ομὶτ)	= παραλείπω
omission	(ομίchεν)	= παράλειψη
clergyman	(κλέρντjιμαεν)	= παπὰς

reason	(ρίζ' ν)	= αἰτία
bury	(μπέρι)	= θάβω
cleaner	(κλίνερ)	= καθαριστήριο
knee	(νίι)	= γόνατο
comfortable	(κάμφερταεμπ' λ)	= ἄνετος η ο
comfortably	(κάμφερταεμπλι)	= ἄνετα, ἀναπαυτικὰ
asleep	(αεσλὶπ)	= νυσταγμένος, κοιμισμένος
borrow	(μπόροου)	= δανείζομαι
bracelet	(μπρέϊσλετ)	= βραχιόλι
guide	(γκάϊντ)	=ὁδηγός, ὁδηγῶ
danger	(ντεϊντjερ)	= κίνδυνος (peril)
dangerous	(ντέϊντjερες)	= ἐπικίνδυνος (perilous)
climb	(κλάϊμ)	= σκαρφαλώνω
journey	(ντjέρνι)	= ταξίδι (trip)
list	(λιστ)	= κατάλογος (catalogue)
juice	(ντjους)	= χυμὸς
comb	(κομ)	= χτένι, χτενίζω
brush	(μπραch)	= βούρτσα, βουρτσίζω
toothbrush	(τούθμπραch)	= ὀδοντόβουρτσα
shake	(chέϊκ)	= τινάζω, κλονίζω
shake hand	(chέϊκ hαεντ)	= ἀνταλλάσσω χειραψία
embrace	(εμπρέϊς)	= ἀγκαλιάζω
few	(φιοὺ)	= λίγοι -ες -α
knife	(νάϊφ)	= μαχαίρι
pound	(πάουντ)	= λίτρα (454 γραμμάρια)
gallon	(γκάλεν)	= γαλόνι
directly	(ντάϊρεκτλι)	= κατ' εὐθεῖαν
verb	(βερμπ)	= ρῆμα
without	(ουϊδάουτ)	= χωρὶς
professor	(προφέσερ)	= καθηγητὴς
profession	(προφέchεν)	= ἐπάγγελμα
professional	(προφέchεναλ)	= ἐπαγγελματικὸς-ὴ-ό, ἐπαγγελματίας

fight	(φάϊτ)	= μάχη, πολεμῶ
war	(γουὸρ)	= πόλεμος
(it is) **out of order**	(άουτ οφ όρντερ)	= χαλασμένος -η -ο
catch	(κατch)	= ἁρπάζω, πιάνω
earn	(ερν)	= κερδίζω (gain)
boil	(μπόϊλ)	= βράζω
boiler	(μπόϊλερ)	= καζάνι
object	(όμπντjεκτ)	= ἀντικείμενο
urge	(ερντj)	= προτρέπω, προτροπὴ
suggestion	(σαντjέστchev)	= ὑπαγόρευση
propose	(προπόοζ)	= προτείνω
proposal	(προπόζαλ)	= πρόταση
proposition	(προποζίchev)	= πρόταση
please	(πλίϊζ)	= προξενῶ εὐχαρί - στηση
insist	(ινσίστ)	= ἐπιμένω
insistence	(ινσίστενς)	= ἐπιμονὴ
post	(ποστ)	= ταχυδρομῶ, στρατιωτικὸ φυλάκιο, θέση (ἔμμισθη)
imperative	(ιμπέρατιβ)	= Προστακτικὴ (ἔγκλιση), ἐπιτακτικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
adverb	(άντβερμπ)	= ἐπίρρημα
adverbial	(αντβέρμπιαλ)	= ἐπιρρηματικὸς -ὴ ὸ
clause	(κλόουζ)	= φράση, πρόταση
concession	(κανσέchev)	= παραχώρηση
condition	(καντίchev)	= ὅρος, προϋπόθεση
gain	(γκέϊν)	= κερδίζω (earn)
god	(γκοντ)	= θεὸς
preserve	(πριζέρβ)	= διαφυλάσσω
heaven	(hέβεν)	= οὐρανὸς (sky)
both	(μπόουθ)	= ἀμφότεροι -αι -α
cross	(κρος)	= διασχίζω
station	(στέϊchev)	= σιδηροδρομικὸς σταθμὸς
mountain	(μάουντιν)	= βουνὸ

greeting	(γκρίτιγκ)	= χαιρετισμὸς (salutation)
send	(σεντ)	= στέλνω

IRREGULAR VERBS

catch (κατch)	**caught** (κόουτ)	**caught** (κόουτ)	= ἁρπάζω
fight (φάϊτ)	**fought** (φόουτ)	**fought** (φόουτ)	= πολεμῶ
shake (chέϊκ)	**shook** (chouκ)	**shaken** (chέϊκεν)	= τραντάζω
will (γουΐλ)	**would** (γουντ)	—	= μέλλω νὰ
shall (chαλ)	**should** (chouντ)	—	= μέλλω νὰ
send (σενd)	**sent** (σεντ)	**sent** (σεντ)	= στέλνω

IDIOMS

ask someone to go	= ζητῶ ἀπὸ κάποιον νὰ πάη
for instance	= παραδείγματος χάριν
go for a walk	= πάω περίπατο
have a wonderful time	= περνῶ θαυμάσια
have dinner	= δειπνῶ
have to	= εἶμαι ὑποχρεωμένος νὰ
invite someone to go	= προσκαλῶ κάποιον νὰ πάη
let me hear from you	= θὰ ἤθελα νὰ ἔχω νέα σου
so many things to do	= τόσα πολλὰ πράγματα νὰ κάνω
to walk home with someone	= περπατῶ ὡς τὸ σπίτι μαζὶ μὲ κάποιον ἄλλον.

Προσοχή:

I will not	= I won't (ἀϊ γουόντ)
you will not	= you won't κ.λ.π.

TEXT

One day Mr. Reed, the clergyman, as he was walking down the street of his town, he met Mrs. Smith. He stopped to talk

with her. «I haven't seen you at church for a long time» he said. «Won't you come next Sunday?» Mrs. Smith only answered: «It is a long time since I was at church and you won't see me there next Sunday». Mr. Reed was very sorry for that. «What is the reason?» he asked. «I will tell you the reason» Mrs. Smith said. «My husband died a year ago. You must know that. You buried him. I have five small children. You must know that, too, because you have them at church. I have to work to get money for their food and clothes. I am an office cleaner. I am down on my knees cleaning office floors six mornings a week. I go to work at seven o'clock, when you are still comfortably asleep in your bed. And when I go home I am down on my knees cleaning floors and washing clothes. So when Sunday comes I don't want to go to church and get down on my knees again. I like to put my feet up and have rest.» That was Mrs. Smith's reply and the clergyman Mr. Reed could not say a word.

TRANSLATION

Μιὰ μέρα ὁ κύριος Ρήντ, ὁ παπάς, καθὼς περπατοῦσε κάτω στὸ δρόμο τῆς πόλης του, συνάντησε τὴν κυρία Σμίθ. Αὐτὸς σταμάτησε νὰ μιλήση μαζί της. «Δὲν σᾶς ἔχω δῆ στὴν ἐκκλησία γιὰ πολὺν καιρὸ» εἶπε. «Δὲν θὰ ἔλθετε καὶ τὴν ἑπομένη Κυριακή;» Ἡ κυρία Σμὶθ μόνο ἀπάντησε: «Εἶναι πολὺς καιρὸς, ἀφ' ὅτου ἤμουν στὴν ἐκκλησία καὶ δὲν θὰ μὲ δῆτε ἐκεῖ τὴν ἑπομένη Κυριακή». Ὁ κύριος Ρὴντ λυπήθηκε πολὺ γι' αὐτό. «Ποιὰ εἶναι ἡ αἰτία;» ρώτησε. «Θὰ σᾶς πῶ τὴν αἰτία», εἶπε ἡ κυρία Σμίθ. «Ὁ ἄντρας μου πέθανε πρὶν ἀπὸ ἕνα χρόνο. Πρέπει νὰ τὸ ξέρετε αὐτό. Ἐσεῖς τὸν θάψατε. Ἔχω πέντε μικρὰ παιδιά. Πρέπει νὰ τὸ ξέρετε κι αὐτὸ ἐπίσης, γιατὶ τὰ ἔχετε στὴν ἐκκλησία. Πρέπει νὰ δουλέψω, γιὰ νὰ πάρω χρήματα γιὰ τὴν τροφὴ καὶ τὰ ροῦχα τους. Εἶμαι καθαρίστρια γραφείου. Εἶμαι γονατισμένη (κάτω στὰ γόνατά μου) καθαρίζοντας τὸ πάτωμα τοῦ γραφείου ἕξι πρωϊνὰ τὴν ἑβδομάδα. Πάω στὴν δουλειά μου στὶς ἐφτὰ τὸ πρωΐ, ὅταν ἐσεῖς ἀκόμη κοιμᾶστε ἀναπαυτικὰ στὸ κρεββάτι σας, κι' ὅταν πάω στὸ σπίτι εἶμαι γονατισμένη καθαρίζοντας πατώματα καὶ πλένοντας ροῦχα. Ἔτσι ὅταν ἔρχεται ἡ Κυριακή, δὲν θέλω νὰ πάω στὴν ἐκκλησία καὶ νὰ γονατίσω πάλι. Μοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ βάζω τὰ πόδια μου ψηλὰ καὶ νὰ ξεκουράζωμαι». Αὐτὴ ἦταν ἡ ἀπάντηση τῆς κυρίας Σμὶθ κι ὁ κύριος Ρήντ, ὁ παπάς, δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ πῆ οὔτε λέξη.

EXERCISE 226

What was Mr. Reed?
Whom did he meet?
What did he ask her?
What did she reply?
Was he sorry?
Did Mrs. Smith's husband live?
How many children did she have?
Where did she work?
What did she do there?
What time did she go to work?
How many mornings did she go?
What did she like to do on Sunday?

ΟΥΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΑ ΣΑΝ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΑ

Στὰ ἀγγλικὰ συχνὰ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ σὰν ἐπίθετο πρὶν ἀπὸ ἕνα ἄλλο οὐσιαστικό. Τὸ οὐσιαστικό, ποὺ προηγεῖται, εἶναι πάντοτε στὸν ἑνικὸ ἀριθμό. Ἔτσι ἀποφεύγουμε τὴν πρόθεση **of** μέσα σὲ μιὰ πρόταση.

Ἀντὶ δηλοδὴ νὰ ποῦμε the dress of evening = τὸ φόρεμα τοῦ βραδιοῦ, λέμε the evening dress = τὸ βραδινὸ φόρεμα. Παρατάσσουμε δηλαδὴ τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ στὴ σειρὰ κι ἀποφεύγουμε τὴν πρόθεση of. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

a morning dress	= ἕνα πρωϊνὸ φόρεμα
a grocery list	= ἕνας κατάλογος παντοπωλείου
some silver bracelets	= μερικὰ ἀσημένια βραχιόλια
the coffee cups	= τὰ φλυτζάνια τοῦ καφὲ
an address book	= ἕνα βιβλίο διευθύνσεων
a telephone book	= ἕνας τηλεφωνικὸς κατάλογος
the window stores	= οἱ βιτρίνες τοῦ καταστήματος
a floor lamp	= μιὰ λάμπα πατώματος

Examples:

He goes to the city's high school every day = αὐτὸς πάει στὸ γυμνάσιο τῆς πόλης κάθε μέρα.

People go to this city because of the city's dry, cool. fresh mountain air = οἱ ἄνθρωποι πᾶνε σ'αὐτὴν τὴν πόλη ἐξ αἰτίας τοῦ ξηροῦ, δροσεροῦ, φρέσκου, βουνήσιου ἀέρα τῆς πόλης.

He gave me his telephone number last night = μοῦ ἔδωσε τὸν ἀριθμὸ τοῦ τηλεφώνου του χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

Many children take the school bus to go to school = πολλὰ παιδιὰ παίρνουν τὸ σχολικὸ λεωφορεῖο, γιὰ νὰ πᾶνε στὸ σχολεῖο.

Mary has her piano lessons three times a week = ἡ Μαίρη ἔχει τὰ μαθήματά της τοῦ πιάνου τρεῖς φορὲς τὴν ἑβδομάδα.

She does not have her house key with her = αὐτὴ δὲν ἔχει τὸ κλειδὶ τοῦ σπιτιοῦ της μαζί της.

Tom and George live together. They have a corner room at an old house = ὁ Τὸμ καὶ ὁ Γιῶργος ζοῦν μαζί. Αὐτοὶ ἔχουν ἕνα γωνιακὸ δωμάτιο σ' ἕνα παλιὸ σπίτι.

Mary always likes to go to school and play table tennis = στὴ Μαίρη ἀρέσει πάντοτε νὰ πηγαίνη στὸ σχολεῖο καὶ νὰ παίζη ἐπιτραπέζιο τέννις (πὶγκ πόγκ).

Virginia's afternoon classes are from five to seven o'clock = τῆς Virginia τὰ ἀπογευματινὰ μαθήματα εἶναι ἀπὸ τὶς πέντε ὥς τὶς ἑφτὰ ἡ ὥρα.

He works at the corner shoe store = αὐτὸς ἐργάζεται στὸ γωνιακὸ κατάστημα παπουτσιῶν.

Her father gave her a silver cup for her birthday = ὁ πατέρας της τῆς ἔδωσε ἕνα ἀσημένιο φλυτζάνι γιὰ τὰ γενέθλιά της.

Mrs. Lloyd bought a new winter coat last week and another new hat this week = ἡ κυρία Λόυντ ἀγόρασε ἕνα καινούργιο χειμωνιάτικο παλτὸ τὴν περασμένη ἑβδομάδα κι ἕνα ἄλλο καπέλο αὐτὴ τὴν ἑβδομάδα.

She gave the clerk a ten-dollar bill for the coat and the hat = ἔδωσε στὸν ὑπάλληλο ἕνα χαρτονόμισμα τῶν δέκα δολλαρίων γιὰ τὸ παλτὸ καὶ τὸ καπέλο.

She went to the post-office to mail a letter and she bought a ten-cents stamp for it = πῆγε στὸ ταχυδρομεῖο νὰ ταχυδρομήση ἕνα γράμμα κι ἀγόρασε ἕνα γραμματόσημο τῶν δέκα σέντς γι' αὐτό.

ΜΕΤΟΧΕΣ ΣΑΝ ΟΥΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΑ

Μερικοὺς τύπους ρήματος (Μετοχὲς) τοὺς συναντοῦμε σὰν οὐσιαστικὰ μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Ἔχουν διαφορετικὴ θέση μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Μπορεῖ

νὰ τοὺς συναντήσουμε σὲ θέση ἀντικειμένου, ὑποκειμένου ἀλλὰ καὶ σὰν ἀντικείμενα μιᾶς προθέσεως.

Συνήθως οἱ ρηματικοὶ αὐτοὶ τύποι εἶναι **γερούνδια**, καὶ δὲν διαφέρουν ἀπὸ τὴ Μετοχή. Γιὰ τοὺς ρηματικοὺς τύπους θὰ μιλήσουμε ἀργότερα πιὸ διεξοδικά. Ἂς ἀρκεσθοῦμε τώρα στὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα.

Examples:

Do you like flying? = σ' ἀρέσει τὸ πέταγμα;· (νὰ πετᾶς);

Mrs. Lloyd likes cooking. She is a good cook = Στὴν κυρία Λόϋντ ἀρέσει ἡ μαγειρική. Αὐτὴ εἶναι μιὰ καλὴ μαγείρισσα.

She does not like very much writing, she prefers walking = δὲν τῆς ἀρέσει πάρα πολὺ τὸ γράψιμο, αὐτὴ προτιμᾶ τὸν περίπατο.

I don't remember borrowing any book from you = δὲν θυμᾶμαι νὰ δανείσθηκα κανένα βιβλίο ἀπὸ σένα.

He likes swimming better than horseback riding = τοῦ ἀρέσει τὸ κολύμπι καλύτερα ἀπὸ τὴν ἱππασία.

She left yesterday without saying good-bye = ἔφυγε χθὲς χωρὶς νὰ πῆ ἀντίο.

I am tired of reading. Let's go for a walk = κουράστηκα ἀπὸ τὸ διάβασμα. Ἂς πᾶμε γιὰ ἕναν περίπατο.

Miss Smith teaches typing = ἡ δεσποινὶς Smith διδάσκει δακτυλογραφία.

Ἄλλες φορὲς συναντοῦμε τὴ Μετοχὴ σὲ θέση οὐσιαστικοῦ, σὰν ὑποκείμενο μιᾶς προτάσεως, π.χ.:

Swimming is his favorite sport = τὸ κολύμπι εἶναι τὸ ἀγαπημένο του σπόρ.

Flying is better for very long journeys = τὸ νὰ πετᾶς (μὲ ἀεροπλάνο) εἶναι καλύτερο γιὰ πολὺ μακρινὰ ταξίδια.

Travelling by car is more interesting = τὸ νὰ ταξιδεύῃς μὲ αὐτοκίνητο εἶναι πιὸ ἐνδιαφέρον,

Climbing in the Alps without a guide is very dangerous = τὸ νὰ σκαρφαλώνῃς στὶς Ἄλπεις χωρὶς ὁδηγὸ εἶναι πολὺ ἐπικίνδυνο.

Cleaning office floors makes Mrs. Smith tired = τὸ νὰ καθαρίζῃ (καθάρισμα) πατώματα γραφείου κάνει τὴν κυρία Σμὶθ νὰ κουράζεται.

Living in England will help you to learn English = τὸ νὰ ζῇς στὴν Ἀγγλία θὰ σὲ βοηθήσῃ νὰ μάθῃς ἀγγλικά.

Ἐπίσης συναντοῦμε τὴ Μετοχὴ σὰν ἀντικείμενο μιᾶς προθέσεως, π.χ.:

George is very fond of climbing = τοῦ George τοῦ ἀρέσει πάρα πολὺ ἡ ὀρειβασία.
We thanked Mr. Smith for helping = ἐμεῖς εὐχαριστήσαμε τὸν κύριο Σμίθ, ποὺ μᾶς βοήθησε (γιὰ τὴ βοήθειά του).
We are thinking of going to Italy = σκεπτόμαστε νὰ πᾶμε στὴν Ἰταλία.
Before sending a letter you must put a stamp on the envelope = πρὶν νὰ στείλης ἕνα γράμμα πρέπει νὰ βάλης ἕνα γραμματόσημο ἐπάνω στὸν φάκελλο.
After finishing this book you will know a lot of English = μετὰ τὸ τέλος αὐτοῦ τοῦ βιβλίου θὰ ξέρης πολλὰ ἀγγλικά.

Η ΣΕΙΡΑ ΤΩΝ ΛΕΞΕΩΝ

Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων μέσα σὲ μία πρόταση εἶναι γνωστή. Ἔχουμε ὑποκείμενο, ρῆμα, ἄρθρο καὶ ἀντικείμενο σὲ μιὰ καταφατικὴ πρόταση. Ρῆμα, ὑποκείμενο, ἄρθρο, ἀντικείμενο σὲ μιὰ ἐρώτηση καὶ ὑποκείμενο, ρῆμα, ἄρνηση καὶ ἀντικείμενο σὲ μιὰ ἀρνητικὴ πρόταση. Ἄρθρα, κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, δεικτικές, ἐπίθετα, προηγοῦνται.

Ἕνα ἀπόλυτο ἀριθμητικὸ προηγεῖται τοῦ τακτικοῦ, π.χ.:

The three first lessons.

Τὸ very προηγεῖται τοῦ ἐπιθέτου. Ἕνα ἐπίθετο ἐθνικότητας προηγεῖται τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ, ἐκτὸς ἐὰν ὑπάρχη ἕνα ἄλλο οὐσιαστικό, ποὺ χρησιμοποιεῖται σὰν ἐπίθετο. Ἕνα γενικῆς περιγραφῆς ἐπίθετο προηγεῖται τοῦ ἐπιθέτου τοῦ χρώματος, π.χ.:

A pretty green suit, a wool silk dress, their two first names, an American student, a very nice green coat

ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ

To = πρός, **at** = εἰς, **before** = πρίν, **after** = μετά, **until** = ἕως, **as far as** = ἕως.

Ἡ πρόθεση **to** φανερώνει κίνηση σὲ κάποιον τόπο, τὴν εἰς τόπον κίνησιν.

'Η πρόθεση **at** φανερώνει τὸν τόπο, ὅπου κάποιος ἢ κάτι βρίσκεται, τὴν ἐν τόπῳ στάσιν, π.χ.:

They are going to the movies = αὐτοὶ πᾶνε στὸν κινηματογράφο.
He walked to the office = αὐτὸς βάδισε πρὸς τὸ γραφεῖο.
Now they are at the movies = τώρα βρίσκονται στὸν κινηματογράφο.
He is at the office now = αὐτὸς εἶναι στὸ γραφεῖο τώρα.

Οἱ προθέσεις **before** καὶ **after** ἀναφέρονται σὲ χρόνο, π.χ.:

I am going to leave before noon today = θὰ φύγω πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ μεσημέρι σήμερα.
I am going to leave before seeing him = θὰ φύγω πρὶν νὰ τὸν δῶ.
I don't need to work after five o'clock = δὲν χρειάζεται νὰ ἐργάζωμαι μετὰ ἀπὸ τὶς πέντε ἡ ὥρα.
I didn't work after seeing them = δὲν ἐργάστηκα, ἀφοῦ τοὺς εἶδα.

Οἱ προθέσεις **until** καὶ **as far as**, ἔχουν τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια, μόνο ποὺ τὸ **until** εἶναι γιὰ χρόνο, ἐνῶ τὸ as far as εἶναι γιὰ ἀπόσταση, π.χ.:

We waited for them until six o'clock = τοὺς περιμέναμε ὥς τὶς ἕξι ἡ ὥρα.
Mary was at school until six o'clock = ἡ Μαίρη ἦταν στὸ σχολεῖο ὥς τὶς ἕξι ἡ ὥρα.
I waited for him until nine o'clock and then I went to bed = τὸν περίμενα ὥς τὶς ἐννέα ἡ ὥρα καὶ κατόπιν πῆγα γιὰ ὕπνο.
We walked as far as Forty Second Street = ἐμεῖς περπατήσαμε ὥς τὴν τεσσαρακοστὴ δευτέρα ὁδό.

EXERCISE 227

'Ενῶστε τὰ οὐσιαστικά, γιὰ νὰ ἔχουμε μιὰ ἔννοια (ἕνα ἐπίθετο).

Example:

book . . . . . telephone = a telephone book.

lesson . . English	lamp . . table
dress . . silk	station . . radio
class . . music	book . . address

hat .. summer
coat .. winter
suit .. wool
plate .. salad
glass .. water
cup .. tea
juice .. orange

cup .. silver
bill .. five dollars
stamp .. ten cents
check .. fifty dollars
order .. words
program .. radio
classes .. afternoon

EXERCISE 228

Γράψτε μὲ τὴ σωστὴ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων τὶς προτάσεις:

Do, you, have, a, book, new, telephone?
The, library, has, English, easy, books, very, several.
Mrs. Lloyd, has suit, pretty, a, green, very.
The, church, has, pictures, very, old, some, Spanish.
I, like, two, silk, those, dresses, blue.
black, dress, pretty, her, wool, is, at, the, cleaner's.
the, parents, select, names, first, their, two, children's.
these, bills, one, dollar, new, five, are, for, you.
he is, young, a, student, American.
first, names, daughter's, her, two, are, Mary, Grant.

EXERCISE 229

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὶς προθέσεις to, at, before, after, until, as far as.

He isn't ..... home now. He is ..... the office.
They are going ..... the lecture tonight.
The train arrived ..... five o'clock.
I always read the newspaper ..... breakfast.
Our friends were here ..... midnight.
I like to study ..... class.
She is going to be busy ..... four o'clock.
We walked ..... the corner together.
I went to see him ..... writing this letter.

John invited Mary to go ..... the party.
We played bridge ..... dinner.
She listened to the radio ..... going to bed.
They are going ..... Miami by plane.
I was tired ..... dancing so much.
Good-bye ..... tomorrow.

XXIII

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 224

The boy usually helps his sister.
The boys usually help their sisters.
Mary has a letter for her sister.
We like to visit our friends.
We are waiting for our class to begin.
On what days do you have your English class?
Mrs. Lloyd loves her children.
Alice says that her American friends use short greetings.
Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd have three children. Their last name is Lloyd and their first names are Charles, Paul and Mary.
The American man does not use his mother's name.
His middle name is Edward.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 225

The signature is hers.
Is the book yours?
The letter is mine.
The shoes are his.
The house is theirs.
Is the hat yours or his?
The room is his.
The radio is hers.
The car is his.
The calling card is his.
Here is mine, on the desk.

The desk is his.
The coat is hers.
Is the newspaper yours?
Is her name the same as mine?
The dog in the yard is ours.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 226

Mr. Reed was a clergyman.
He met Mrs. Smith.
He asked her : «Won't you come to church next Sunday?»
Mrs. Smith replied: «It is a long time since I was at church and you won't see me there next Sunday».
Yes, Mr. Reed was very sorry for that.
No, Mrs. Smith's husband died a year ago.
She had five small children.
She worked as an office cleaner.
She cleaned office floors.
She went to work (or she used to go to work) at seven o'clock in the morning.
She went there six mornings a week.
On Sunday she liked to put her feet up and have rest.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 227

English lesson
silk dress
music class
summer hat
winter coat
wool suit
salad plate
water glass
tea cup
orange juice
table lamp
radio station
address book
silver cup
five dollars bill
ten cents stamp
fifty dollars check
radio program
afternoon classes

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 228

Do you have a new telephone book?
The library has several very easy English books.
Mrs. Lloyd has a very pretty green suit.
The church has some very old Spanish pictures.
I like those two blue silk dresses.
Her pretty black wool dress is at the cleaner's.
The parents select their children's first two names.
These new one dollar five bills are for you.
He is a young American student.
Her daughter's first two names are Mary Grant.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 229

He isn't at home now. He is at the office.
They are going to the lecture tonight.
The train arrived at five o'clock.
I always read the newspaper before breakfast.
Our friends were here until midnight.
I like to study after class.
She is going to be busy until four o'clock.
We walked as far as the corner together.
I went to see him before writing this letter.
John invited Mary to go to the party.
We played bridge until dinner.
She listened to the radio before going to bed.
They are going as far as Miami by plane.
I was tired after dancing so much.
Good bye until tomorrow.

ΕΠΙΡΡΗΜΑΤΑ

Τὰ περισσότερα ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπιρρήματα, συνήθως τὰ τροπικά, σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπίθετα.

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε ἀπὸ ἕνα ἐπίθετο τὸ τροπικό του ἐπίρρημα, προσθέτουμε στὸ τέλος τὴν κατάληξη **-ly**. Ἔτσι ἀπὸ τὴν κατάληξη μποροῦμε εὔκολα νὰ ἀναγνωρίσουμε τὸ ἐπίρρημα.

Ὅταν τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειώνη σὲ **-y**, μετατρέπεται τὸ **y** σὲ **i**, πρὶν νὰ προστεθῇ ἡ κατάληξη **-ly**.

Ὅταν τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειώνη σὲ **-ble** ἢ **-ple**, τὸ **e** παραλείπεται καὶ μόνο τὸ **y** προστίθεται στὸ ἐπίθετο. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

usual	— usually	= συνήθως
general	— generally	= γενικὰ
frequent	— frequently	= συχνὰ
rare	— rarely	= σπάνια
actual	— actually	= τώρα
careful	— carefully	= προσεκτικὰ
possible	— possibly	= δυνατὸν
correct	— correctly	= σωστὰ
sure	— surely	= σίγουρα
slow	— slowly	= ἀργὰ
easy	— easily	= εὔκολα
busy	— busily	= ἀπασχολημένα
simple	— simply	= ἁπλά

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα κι οἱ ἐπιρρηματικὲς ἐκφράσεις συνήθως ἀκολουθοῦν τὸ ρῆμα καὶ τὸ ἀντικείμενο, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπιρρήματα συχνότητας, ποὺ μπαίνουν μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα.

Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν ἐπιρρημάτων μέσα στὴν πρόταση εἶναι: ἐπίρρημα τόπου, ἐπίρρημα τρόπου, ἐπίρρημα χρόνου. Καθὼς βλέπετε, πρῶτο μπαίνει τὸ ἐπίρρημα τοῦ τόπου καὶ τελευταῖο τὸ ἐπίρρημα τοῦ χρόνου.

Examples:

I found the letter on my desk yesterday.
ὑποκ. ρῆμα ἀντικείμενο ἐπίρ. τοπικὸ ἐπίρ. χρονικὸ
= βρῆκα τὸ γράμμα πάνω στὸ γραφεῖο μου χτές.

They usually go to the movies after dinner.
ὑποκ. ἐπ. συχν. ρῆμα ἐπιρ. τοπικὸ ἐπίρ. χρονικὸ
= αὐτοὶ συνήθως πᾶνε στὸν κινηματογράφο μετὰ τὸ δεῖπνο.

We drove the car very fast last night.

ὑποκ. ρῆμα ἀντικείμ. ἐπ. τροπικὸ ἐπίρ. χρονικό.
= ὁδηγήσαμε τὸ αὐτοκίνητο πολὺ γρήγορα χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.

She understands English very well now.
ὑποκ. ρῆμα ἀντικ. τρόπος χρόνος.
= αὐτὴ καταλαβαίνει ἀγγλικὰ πολὺ καλὰ τώρα.

He is living on Fifth Avenue now.
ὑποκ. ρῆμα ἐπίρ. τοπικὸ ἐπίρ. χρονικό.
= αὐτὸς κατοικεῖ στὴν Πέμπτη Λεωφόρο τώρα.

She went to her first class at the University on Monday.
ὑποκ. ρῆμα προσδιορ. τόπου ἐπίρ. τόπου ἐπίρ. χρόνου.
= αὐτὴ πῆγε στὸ πρῶτο της μάθημα στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο τὴ Δευτέρα.

She saw her friends at the party yesterday.
ὑποκ. ρῆμα ἀντικείμ. ἐπίρ. τόπου ἐπίρ. χρόνου
= αὐτὴ εἶδε τοὺς φίλους της στὸ πάρτυ χθές.

Where is the book I saw on your desk yesterday?
= ποῦ εἶναι τὸ βιβλίο, ποὺ εἶδα στὸ θρανίο σου χθές;
I saw her on the street last night = τὴν εἶδα στὸν δρόμο χθὲς τὸ βράδυ.
Please write the sentences on your paper correctly = παρακαλῶ, γράψτε τὶς προτάσεις πάνω στὸ χαρτί σας σωστά.
She seldom plays the piano now = αὐτὴ σπάνια παίζει πιάνο τώρα.
We had our coffee in the dining room after dinner = ἐμεῖς εἴχαμε τὸν καφέ μας στὸ καθημερινὸ δωμάτιο μετὰ τὸ δεῖπνο.
I was downtown all the afternoon = ἤμουν κάτω στὴν πόλη ὅλο τὸ ἀπόγευμα.

ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ

Ἡ πρόθεση **towards** (τόγουαρντς) = πρός, φανερώνει τὴν κατ᾽ εὐθεῖαν κίνηση σὲ ἕνα τόπο. Τὸ **to** φανερώνει κίνηση, ποὺ συνεχίζεται σὲ ἕναν ὁρισμένο τόπο. Τὸ **at** φανερώνει τὴν ἄφιξη σὲ ἕναν ὁρισμένο τόπο, τὴν στάση. Τὸ **into** φανερώνει κίνηση, ποὺ τελειώνει μέσα σ᾽ ἕναν τόπο. Τὸ **out of** φανερώνει κίνηση, ποὺ ἀρχίζει ἀπὸ μέσα καὶ τελειώνει ἔξω ἀπὸ ἕναν τόπο. Τὸ

through (θρου) = διὰ μέσου, εἶναι συνδυασμὸς τοῦ into καὶ τοῦ out of.
Τὸ **from** φανερώνει κίνηση μακριὰ ἀπὸ ἕναν ὁρισμένο τόπο.

Examples:

Mary went to school = ἡ Μαίρη πῆγε στὸ σχολεῖο.
He went into the church = αὐτὸς μπῆκε μέσα στὴν ἐκκλησία.
Now he is at school = αὐτὸς τώρα βρίσκεται στὸ σχολεῖο.
He went out of the room = βγῆκε ἀπὸ τὸ δωμάτιο.
He walks towards the house = βαδίζει πρὸς τὸ σπίτι.
We ran through the garden = ἐμεῖς τρέξαμε διὰ μέσου τοῦ κήπου.
She came out of the Bank and walked towards the house in a hurry = αὐτὴ βγῆκε ἀπὸ τὴν Τράπεζα καὶ βάδισε πρὸς τὸ σπίτι βιαστικά.

ΤΟ ΡΗΜΑ ASK

Τὸ ρῆμα ask συντάσσεται μὲ διάφορα ἀντικείμενα κι ἔχει διάφορες σημασίες:
Ask somebody for something = ρωτῶ κάποιον γιὰ κάτι.
Ask somebody about something = ρωτῶ κάποιον γιὰ (περὶ) κάτι.
Ask somebody to do something = ζητῶ ἀπὸ κάποιον νὰ κάνῃ κάτι.
Ask somebody in = ζητῶ ἀπὸ κάποιον νὰ ἔλθῃ μέσα.

Examples:

He asked me for a book = μοῦ ζήτησε ἕνα βιβλίο.
What did he ask you for? = τί σοῦ ζήτησε;
He came and asked me an English book = ἦλθε καὶ μοῦ ζήτησε ἕνα ἀγγλικὸ βιβλίο.
You asked him about the journey = τὸν ρώτησες γιὰ τὸ ταξίδι.
He asked me about my new car = μὲ ρώτησε γιὰ τὸ καινούργιο μου αὐτοκίνητο.
I asked him what time he used to go to school = τὸν ρώτησα, τί ὥρα συνηθίζει νὰ πηγαίνῃ στὸ σχολεῖο.
Mr. Miller asked Miss Davis to write a letter = ὁ κύριος Μίλλερ ζήτησε (ἀπὸ) τὴν δεσποινίδα Ντέϊβις νὰ γράψῃ ἕνα γράμμα.
She asked Mary to bring her a glass of water = ζήτησε ἀπὸ τὴν Μαίρη νὰ τῆς φέρῃ ἕνα ποτήρι νερό.

The policeman asked us a lot of questions = ὁ ἀστυνομικὸς μᾶς ρώτησε (μᾶς ἔκανε) πολλὲς ἐρωτήσεις.
He asked me my name = μοῦ ζήτησε τὸ ὄνομά μου.
She wanted to ask him the way = ἤθελε νὰ τὸν ρωτήση (γιὰ) τὸ δρόμο.
Ask your teacher how to pronounce the words = ρώτησε τὸ δάσκαλό σου, πῶς νὰ προφέρης τὶς λέξεις.
I will ask her what she wants = θὰ τὴν ρωτήσω, τί θέλει.
Ask her whether she can come at the movies = ρώτησέ την, ἂν μπορῇ νὰ ἔλθη στὸν κινηματογράφο.
I asked the driver where to get off the bus = ρώτησα τὸν ὁδηγό, ποῦ νὰ κατεβῶ ἀπὸ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
They asked me in = μὲ κάλεσαν νὰ ἔλθω μέσα. (they asked me to come into the house).
Shall we ask her to have dinner at home? = θὰ τὴν καλέσουμε νὰ ἔχη δεῖπνο στὸ σπίτι; (to come and have dinner with us?)
I saw him coming and I asked him to come in = τὸν εἶδα νὰ ἔρχεται καὶ ζήτησα νὰ ἔλθη μέσα.

ΑΟΡΙΣΤΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Indefinite Pronouns)

Πολλὲς εἶναι οἱ ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες:

Some, something, somebody, someone, any, anything, anybody, anyone, all, one, none, nothing, nobody, no one, everything, everybody, everyone, other, another, much, less, (a) few, enough, either, neither.

Ὁ ὅρος «ἀόριστη» ἀντωνυμία. Συνηθίσαμε νὰ λέμε, πὼς τὸ κύριο χαρακτηριστικό, ποὺ ξεχωρίζει τὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες, εἶναι ἡ ἀοριστία τους. Πραγματικὰ στὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα ἀορίστων ἀντωνυμιῶν ἡ ἀοριστία εἶναι τὸ κυριότερο χαρακτηριστικό τους:

S o m e o n e is ringing the bell.
Is a n y t h i n g wrong?
F e w will miss Roger.

Ἀλλὰ ὑπάρχουν καὶ πολλὲς ἄλλες ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες, ποὺ κάθε ἄλλο

παρὰ ἡ ἀοριστία τους εἶναι τὸ κυριότερο χαρακτηριστικό τους. Ποιὰ ἀοριστία θὰ μποροῦσε κανεὶς νὰ ἐπισημάνῃ στὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες τῶν παρακάτω παραδειγμάτων:

All is o.k.
Enough has been said.
Both of them are young.
Each of them learn English.
Nothing happened.
Nobody is right.

Ὄχι μόνο ἀοριστία δὲν ὑπάρχει στὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες all, enough, both, nothing, nobody κλπ., ἀλλὰ ἡ ἔννοιά τους εἶναι ὁλότελα ὁρισμένη, σὲ σημεῖο ποὺ νὰ μὴ ἀφήνῃ κανένα κενό, καμιὰ ἀμφιβολία.

Ἀλλοῦ λοιπὸν κι ὄχι στὴν ἀοριστία πρέπει νὰ ψάξουμε τὸ κοινὸ χαρακτηριστικὸ τῶν ἀορίστων ἀντωνυμιῶν: στὸ ὅτι ὅλες ἔχουν μέσα τους κάποια ἔννοια ἀριθμοῦ ἢ ποσότητας. Ὁ ἀριθμὸς αὐτὸς μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι ὁλότελα ἀόριστος (some, few κ.ἄ.), μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι εἰδικὰ καθορισμένος (all, both, none, κ.ἄ.), μπορεῖ τέλος νὰ εἶναι γενικὰ καθορισμένος (each, either, anything κ.ἄ.).

Ἀόριστες Ἀντωνυμίες ἑνικοῦ ἢ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ

Οἱ ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες, ἀνάλογα μὲ τὸ ρῆμα, μὲ τὸ ὁποῖο συντάσσονται, διακρίνονται σὲ ἀντωνυμίες ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

Ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ εἶναι: each, everyone, everybody, anyone, anybody, someone, somebody, no one, nobody, one, another, anything, something, either, neither.

Μ' αὐτὲς τὶς ἀντωνυμίες τὸ ρῆμα συντάσσεται πάντοτε στὸ γ' ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο, κι ὄχι στὸ γ' πληθυντικό.

Γιὰ νὰ τὸ καταλάβετε, παραθέτω τρία ζεύγη φράσεων, ποὺ οἱ μισὲς εἶναι λανθασμένες κι οἱ μισὲς σωστές.

Λάθος : Each of the boys play some game well.
Σωστὸ : Each of the boys plays some game well.

Λάθος : Everyone in Greece are concerned about the problem of life.

Σωστὸ : Everyone in Greece is concerned about the problem of life.

Λάθος : Neither of the senators show any uncertainty.
Σωστὸ : Neither of the senators shows any uncertainty.

Παρατήρηση : Ἡ ἀντωνυμία none μπορεῖ νὰ συνταχθῆ μὲ ρῆμα εἴτε ἑνικοῦ εἴτε πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ἀνάλογα μὲ τὴ σημασία τῆς προτάσεως. Ὅπως καὶ τὸ some καὶ τὸ any, συντάσσεται μὲ ρῆμα στὸν ἑνικὸ ἀριθμό, ὅταν ἀναφέρεται σὲ ποσότητα. Ἀντίθετα συντάσσεται μὲ ρῆμα στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, ὅταν ἀναφέρεται σὲ ἀριθμό, π.χ.:

Is there any coffee? no, there is none.
Are there any eggs? no, there are none.

Στὴν τελευταία ὅμως αὐτὴ περίπτωση, μπορεῖ κάποτε νὰ συνταχθῆ καὶ μὲ ρῆμα ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, π.χ.:

None of us is perfect.

Ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ εἶναι:

all, any, both, enough, few, more, plenty, several, some.

Οἱ ἀντωνυμίες αὐτὲς συντάσσονται μὲ ρήματα στὸ γ' πληθυντικὸ πρόσωπο, π.χ.:

Both of the apples are red.
All of the boys raised their hands.

Μερικὲς ἀπ' αὐτὲς ὡστόσο συντάσσονται καὶ μὲ ρήματα ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅταν ἀναφέρωνται σὲ ποσότητα.

Προσωπικὲς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες: (Personal Indefinite Pronouns): Ὄχι σπάνια στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα χρησιμοποιοῦμε προσωπικὲς ἀντωνυμίες ἀντὶ γιὰ ἀόριστες.

Ἔτσι παρατηροῦμε :

O n e never knows when he'll be dead.
Y o u never know when you'll be dead.
W e never know when we'll be dead.

'Αόριστες ἀντωνυμίες καὶ ἀόριστα ἐπίθετα. 'Η ἴδια διάκριση, ποὺ εἴδαμε, ἀνάμεσα στὶς κτητικὲς καὶ δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίες ἀπὸ τὴ μιὰ μεριὰ καὶ στὰ κτητικὰ καὶ δεικτικὰ ἐπίθετα ἀπὸ τὴν ἄλλη, ἰσχύει κι ἐδῶ μὲ τὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες. Ἔτσι ὅταν ἡ ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία συνοδεύεται ἀπὸ τὸ οὐσιαστικό, δὲν εἶναι καθαρὴ ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία, ἀλλὰ ἀ ό ρ ι σ τ ο ἐ π ί θ ε τ ο (indefinite adjective), π.χ.:

At the party e a c h child was given an orange (adjective).
Each of them was also given a present from the Christmas tree (pronoun).

Ἂς δοῦμε τώρα ἀναλυτικότερα τὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες, μιὰ - μιὰ χωριστά.

A L L

Τὸ **all** μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ σὰν ἀντωνυμία ἢ σὰν ἐπίθετο ἑνικοῦ ἢ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

Χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ everything (τὸ κάθε τι) π.χ.:

A l l is lost.

Σὰν ἐπίθετο μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ the whole of (τὸ σύνολο) π.χ.:

We spent a l l the money in London.

Στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμὸ χρησιμοποιεῖται εἴτε σὰν ἐπίθετο εἴτε σὰν ἀντωνυμία, π.χ.:

A l l the students were present (adjective).
A l l are welcome (pronoun).

Παρατήρηση : Ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι οὐσιαστικό, τὸ all μπορεῖ νὰ μπῇ εἴτε πρὶν εἴτε μετὰ ἀπ' αὐτό. Συνηθέστερα ὅμως μπαίνει πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ οὐσιαστικό.

A l l the students agreed that the teacher is good.

Ἢ σπανιότερα :

The students a l l agreed that the teacher is good.

Ἀντίθετα ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι ἀντωνυμία, τὸ all πάντοτε ἀκολουθεῖ τὴν ἀντωνυμία, π.χ.:

They all agreed that the teacher is good.

Κι ὄχι:

All they agreed that the teacher is good.

Πολλὲς φορὲς τὸ all ἔχει τὴν σημασία τοῦ every. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ τὸ all συντάσσεται μὲ ρῆμα στὸ γ' πληθυντικὸ πρόσωπο κι ἰσοδυναμεῖ μὲ every, ποὺ συντάσσεται μὲ ρῆμα στὸ γ' ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο.

Ἔτσι ἔχουμε: All + plural verb = every + singular verb, π.χ.:

All boys like doing it.
Every boy likes doing it.

Τέλος τὸ all χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ πολλὲς ἐκφράσεις καὶ σὰν ἐπίρρημα, π.χ.:

If it is all the same to you, I'd rather go by car than by plane.

EACH, EVERY

Οἱ ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες each καὶ every, ἐπειδὴ δείχνουν ἐπιμερισμὸ ἀπὸ κάποιο σύνολο, λέγονται καὶ **ἐπιμεριστικὲς ἀντωνυμίες** (distributive pronouns). Τὸ ἴδιο συμβαίνει καὶ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γραμματικὴ μὲ τὴν ἀντωνυμία ἕκαστος, ἑκάστη, ἕκαστον κλπ.

Ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ἐπιμερισμοῦ εἶναι ἐντονότερη στὸ each παρὰ στὸ every, ἰδιαίτερα ὅταν αὐτὰ χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὰν ἐπίθετα. Αὐτὸ φαίνεται καθαρὰ στὰ παρακάτω δύο παραδείγματα:

I visited him every day, while he was in hospital.
I visited him each day, while he was in hospital.

Στὸ δεύτερο παράδειγμα ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ἐπιμερισμοῦ τῶν ἡμερῶν εἶναι πιὸ ἔντονη.

Τέλος, ὑπάρχει καὶ μιὰ ἀκόμη διαφορὰ μεταξὺ τοῦ each καὶ τοῦ every:

Τὸ each μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ, ὅταν ὁ συνολικὸς ἀριθμός, ὅπου ἀναφέρεται, εἶναι δύο ἢ περισσότερα. Τὸ every μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ μόνον, ὅταν ὁ συνολικὸς ἀριθμὸς ξεπερνάη τὰ δύο.

BOTH

Τὸ both, ὅπως καὶ τὸ all, μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι εἴτε ἀντωνυμία εἴτε ἐπίθετο. Δείχνει κι αὐτὸ μιὰ ὁλότητα, ἀλλὰ χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνο γιὰ δυὸ πρόσωπα ἢ δυὸ πράγματα, ἀντιστοιχεῖ δηλαδὴ μὲ τὸ ἑλληνικὸ «ἀμφότεροι, -αι,-α», π.χ.:

I have two sisters; they are both nurses (pronoun).
Both his legs were broken in the accident (adjective).

Τὸ both ἀκόμη χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ σὰν ἐπίρρημα, π.χ.:

The book is both useful and amusing.

Ὅταν τὸ both προηγῆται ἀντωνυμίας, τότε μπαίνει καὶ ἡ πρόθεση of π.χ.:

both of them, both of us

Στὴν καθομιλουμένη γλώσσα ὅμως ὄχι σπάνια μπαίνει τὸ of καὶ μπροστὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικό, π.χ. both of brothers.
Αὐτὸ ὅμως δὲν εἶναι σωστό.
Στὰ σωστὰ ἀγγλικὰ λέμε both brothers κι ὄχι both of brothers.

SOME (THING - BODY - ONE)

Τὸ some χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς παρακάτω περιπτώσεις:

α) Εἴτε σὰν ἐπίθετο, εἴτε σὰν ἀντωνυμία χρησιμοποιεῖται μπροστὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικὰ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ ἢ οὐσιαστικὰ ποὺ δὲν μετριοῦνται, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράση μιὰ ἀκαθόριστη ποσότητα ἢ ἀριθμό, π.χ.:

I want some books (adjective).
If you have no money I will lend you some (pronoun).

β) Εἴτε σὰν ἐπίθετο εἴτε σὰν ἀντωνυμία χρησιμοποιεῖται μπροστὰ σὲ

οὐσιαστικὰ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ ἢ οὐσιαστικὰ ποὺ μετριοῦνται, γιὰ νὰ δείξη ἀντίθεση, π.χ.:

Some people like coffee, others like milk (adjective).
Some of us agree with that statement; some disagree.

γ) Σὰν ἐπίθετο χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνον μπροστὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικὰ ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ποὺ δὲν μετριοῦνται, μὲ τὴν ἔννοια «ἕνα ἰδιαίτερο, ἀλλ' ὄχι σαφῶς καθορισμένο πρόσωπο ἢ πρᾶγμα», π.χ.:

He arrived with some old book that he had picked up at a book-shop.

δ) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ «περίπου» π.χ.:

It happened some ten years ago.

ANY (THING - BODY - ONE)

Ὅταν τὸ any χρησιμοποιῆται μὲ ἔμφαση, δείχνει γενικότητα, ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια «δὲν ἐνδιαφέρει ποιὸς καὶ τί», π.χ.:

Get me cigarettes, please; any kind will do (ὁποιοδήποτε εἶδος, ὁποιαδήποτε μάρκα, δὲν μᾶς ἐνδιαφέρει).

Ὅταν τὸ any βρίσκεται χωρὶς ἔμφαση, τότε χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς ἴδιες περιπτώσεις, ποὺ χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ τὸ some, ὅπως ἀναφέραμε πιὸ πάνω.

Ἐπὶ πλέον χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ στὶς ἑξῆς δύο περιπτώσεις:

α) Τὸ any μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ μὲ οὐσιαστικὸ εἴτε ἑνικοῦ εἴτε πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ποὺ μετριέται ἢ δὲν μετριέται, π.χ.:

Don't you have any book to give me?
Are there any students in the classroom?

β) Τὸ any χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ σὰν ἐπίρρημα, π.χ.:

I could't come any sooner.

ΔΙΑΦΟΡΕΣ ΜΕΤΑΞΥ SOME KAI ANY

1) Ἀπὸ τὶς δυὸ φράσεις, ποὺ παραθέτουμε πιὸ κάτω, φαίνεται ἡ διαφορὰ τοῦ some καὶ τοῦ any στὸ δεύτερο ὅρο τῆς συγκρίσεως.

α'. George is more handsome than s o m e of the other boys in his class (=he is not the most handsome but he is not the most ugly).

β'. George is more handsome than a n y of the other boys in his class (= he is the most handsome).

Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα μὲ τὸ some ὁ Γιῶργος εἶναι ὀμορφότερος ἀπὸ πολλὰ παιδιὰ τῆς τάξης του. Δὲν εἶναι οὔτε ὁ πιὸ ὄμορφος οὔτε ὁ πιὸ ἄσχημος.
Στὸ δεύτερο ὅμως παράδειγμα με τὸ any ὁ Γιῶργος εἶναι ὁ πιὸ ὄμορφος ἀπὸ ὅλη τὴν τάξη. Ὥστε: ὅταν στὸ β' ὅρο τῆς συγκρίσεως, ὕστερα ἀπὸ παραθετικὸ συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ, ἔχουμε τὸ some, τότε ἔχουμε καθαρὰ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ (πιὸ ὄμορφος ἀπὸ πολλοὺς ἄλλους, ἀλλὰ ὄχι ὁ πιὸ ὄμορφος).
Ἀντίθετα, ὅταν στὸ β' ὅρο τῆς συγκρίσεως, ὕστερα ἀπὸ παραθετικὸ συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ, ἔχουμε τὸ any, τότε στὴν πραγματικότητα δὲν ἔχουμε συγκριτικὸ βαθμό, ἀλλὰ ὑπερθετικὸ (ὁ πιὸ ὄμορφος ἀπ' ὅλους).

2) Σύμφωνα μὲ ἕναν γενικὸ κανόνα, ποὺ θὰ μπορούσαμε νὰ διατυπώσουμε, τὸ some χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις (affirmative sentences), ἐνῶ τὸ any σὲ ἀρνητικὲς κι ἐρωτηματικὲς (negative and interrogative sentences), π.χ.:

I am looking for s o m e matches. (affirmative)
I don't have a n y matches. (negative)
Do you have a n y matches? (interrogative)

Ὡστόσο, ὅταν στὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς προτάσεις ἡ ἀπάντηση, ποὺ περιμένουμε, εἶναι «ναί», τότε βάζουμε τὸ some κι ὄχι τὸ any. Ἐξαρτᾶται δηλαδὴ ἀπὸ τὴν ἀπάντηση, ποὺ περιμένουμε. Ὅταν ρωτᾶμε γιὰ κάτι ἀπίθανο, ποὺ εἴμαστε σχεδὸν βέβαιοι ἢ τουλάχιστον θεωροῦμε πιθανότατο, ὅτι θὰ μᾶς ἀπαντήσουν «ὄχι», τότε βάζουμε τὸ any στὴν ἐρώτηση.
Ἀντίθετα ὅταν ρωτᾶμε γιὰ κάτι, γιὰ τὸ ὁποῖο κατὰ πᾶσαν πιθανότητα περιμένουμε τὴν ἀπάντηση «ναί», τότε χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ some στὴν ἐρώτηση ἀντὶ τοῦ any, π.χ.:

Βλέπουμε κάποιον, πού μ' έναν φακό ψάχνει κάτι στό πάτωμα. Τόν ρωτᾶμε λοιπόν:

Have you lost s o m e t h i n g? (κι ὄχι have you lost a n y t h i n g?)

Γιατί βλέποντάς τον νά ψάχνη θεωροῦμε πιθανό, ὅτι πράγματι αὐτός κάτι ἔχει χάσει καί θά μᾶς ἀπαντήση «yes».

'Αντίθετα ἄν ἔχουμε βρῆ ἕνα ρολόϊ μέσα σέ μιά συγκέντρωση ἑκατό ἀτόμων καί θέλοντας νά βροῦμε τόν ἰδιοκτήτη του, γιά νά τό ἀποδώσουμε, ἀρχίζουμε νά ρωτᾶμε γι' αὐτό ἀπό τόν πλαϊνό μας, θά τοῦ ποῦμε:

Have you lost anything? (κι ὄχι have you lost something?)

Γιατί οἱ πιθανότητες νἄχη χάσει τό ρολόϊ ὁ πλαϊνός μας εἶναι ἐλάχιστες καί κατά συνέπειαν ἡ ἀπάντηση, πού περιμένουμε, εἶναι «no».

Φυσικά, ὅπως θά καταλαβαίνετε, οἱ ἴδιες διαφορές, πού ὑπάρχουν ἀνάμεσα στό some καί στό any, παρατηροῦνται ἐπίσης κι ἀνάμεσα στά παράγωγά τους something καί anything.

NO, NOTHING, NOBODY, NO ONE, NONE

Τό no ἔχει τήν ἔννοια τοῦ «not any» καί τοῦ «not a», π.χ.:

N o smoking allowed.

Τό nothing μπορεῖ νά ἀντικατασταθῆ ἀπό τό not anything, 'Επίσης τό nobody καί τό no one μποροῦν νά ἀντικατασταθοῦν ἀπό τά not anybody καί not anyone.

Τό nobody καί no one χρησιμοποιοῦνται μόνο γιά πρόσωπα.

Τό none χρησιμοποιεῖται καί γιά πρόσωπα καί γιά πράγματα, π.χ.:

There is n o b o d y in the room.
I wanted some more coffee but there was n o n e left.

Τά nobody, nothing καί no one εἶναι ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ καί γι' αὐτό συντάσσονται μέ ρήματα ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

Τό none μπορεῖ νά συνταχθῆ μέ ρῆμα εἴτε ἑνικοῦ εἴτε πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, π.χ.:

N o n e of us is perfect; we all make mistakes.
There are n o n e so deaf as those who will no hear.
Is there any coffee? no, there is none.

Πολλοὶ ὡστόσο συγγραφεῖς ὑποστηρίζουν, ὅτι μὲ τὸ none εἶναι πιὸ σωστὸ νἄχουμε ρῆμα ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ κι ὄχι πληθυντικοῦ. Στὴν καθομιλουμένη ὅμως συναντοῦμε ἐξ ἴσου καὶ τοὺς δύο τύπους. Καὶ νομίζουμε, πὼς κι οἱ δυὸ αὐτοὶ τύποι εἶναι σωστοί, φτάνει νὰ χρησιμοποιηθοῦν σωστά: Δηλαδή, ὅταν τὸ none ἀναφέρεται σὲ ποσότητα, θὰ πρέπη νὰ συνταχθῆ πάντοτε μὲ ρῆμα ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ. Ἀντίθετα ὅταν ἀναφέρεται σὲ ἀριθμό, συντάσσεται μὲ ρῆμα εἴτε ἑνικοῦ εἴτε πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

Οἱ ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίες none, nothing, nobody καὶ no one χρησιμοποιοῦνται συνήθως καὶ σὲ σύντομες ἀπαντήσεις, π.χ.:

How many sisters do you have?
N o n e.

Ὑπάρχει ὡστόσο κάποια διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὸ nothing καὶ στὸ none σ' αὐτὲς τὶς σύντομες ἀπαντήσεις. Τὶς μὲν ἀντωνυμίες nothing καὶ nobody τὶς χρησιμοποιοῦμε, γιὰ νὰ ἀπαντήσουμε σὲ ἐρωτήσεις, ποὺ ἀρχίζουν μὲ τὸ what καὶ μὲ τὸ who, π.χ.:

What is on the wall?
N o t h i n g.

Who is in the room?
N o b o d y.

Τὴν δὲ ἀντωνυμία none τὴν χρησιμοποιοῦμε, γιὰ νὰ ἀπαντήσουμε σὲ ἐρωτήσεις ποὺ ἀρχίζουν μὲ τὸ how many καὶ τὸ how much, π.χ.:

How many pictures are there on the wall?
N o n e.

How much petrol is there in the car?
N o n e.

Τέλος οἱ ἀντωνυμίες something καὶ anything μποροῦν νὰ χρησιμοποιηθοῦν καὶ μὲ ἐ π ι ρ ρ η μ α τ ι κ ὴ ν ἔ ν ν ο ι α, π.χ.:

He is s o m e t h i n g like what his father was at that age.

OTHER, ANOTHER

Τὸ other μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι εἴτε ἀόριστο ἐπίθετο εἴτε ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία.

Ὅταν εἶναι ἀόριστο ἐπίθετο, εἶναι ἀμετάβλητο. Ὅταν ὅμως εἶναι ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία, κάνει τὸν πληθυντικὸ others.

Ὅταν τὸ other χρησιμοποιῆται μαζὶ μὲ τὸ ἀόριστο ἄρθρο an, γίνεται another.

ΣΗΜΑΣΙΕΣ ΤΟΥ OTHER

α) The other στὸν ἑνικὸ ἀριθμὸ σημαίνει «ὁ δεύτερος ἀπὸ τοὺς δύο», π.χ.:

One of my sisters is named Mary, **the other** is named Sue.

β) The other(s), εἴτε στὸν ἑνικὸ εἴτε στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, σημαίνει «οἱ ὑπόλοιποι, οἱ ἐναπομείναντες», π.χ.:

John got home by 7 o'clock, but **the others** didn't get back until about 9 o'clock.

γ) Other(s), εἴτε στὸν ἑνικὸ εἴτε στὸν πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμό, μπορεῖ νὰ σημαίνη «διάφορος, συμπληρωματικός», π.χ.:

I have no **other** friend but you.
Some like milk, **others** prefer coffee.

ΣΗΜΑΣΙΕΣ ΤΟΥ ANOTHER

α) Τὸ another ἔχει τὴ σημασία τοῦ «ἀκόμα ἕνας - μία - ἕνα», π.χ.:

I already have two cars, and now I have bought another.

β) Ἐπίσης ἔχει τὴ σημασία τοῦ «ἕνας ἄλλος -η -ο», π.χ.:

The point of this pencil is broken; can you lend me another?

VOCABULARY

bill	(μπιλ)	= χαρτονόμισμα, λογαριασμὸς
favor ἢ **favour**	(φέϊβερ)	= χάρη, ἐκτίμηση, βοήθεια
favorite	(φέϊβεριτ)	= ἀγαπημένος -η -ο,
sport	(σπορτ)	= σπόρ, ἀθλητισμὸς
type	(τάϊπ)	= δακτυλογραφῶ (typerite)
typewrite	((τάϊπράϊτ)	= type
typewriter	(τάϊπράϊτερ)	= γραφομηχανή, δακτυλογράφος
typing	(τάϊπινγκ)	= δακτυλογράφηση (typewriting)
reply	((ριπλαϊ)	= ἀπαντῶ (answer, respond), ἀπάντηση
O.K.	(ο - κέϊ)	= ἐν τάξει (all right)
concern	(κανσέρν)	= ἀφορῶ (relate to)
concerning	(κανσέρνιγκ)	= ἀφορῶν -ῶσα -ῶν (relating to)
problem	(πρόμπλεμ)	= πρόβλημα
senator	(σέναετερ)	= γερουσιατὴς
senate	(σένιτ)	= γερουσία
uncertain	(ανσέρτιν)	= ἀβέβαιος -η -ο (indeterminate)
uncertainty	(ανσέρτιντι)	= ἀβεβαιότητα
none	(νόον)	= οὐδεὶς -μία -ὲν
present	(πριζέντ)	= παρουσιάζω, δῶρο (gift)
present	(πρέζεντ)	= παρών, Ἐνεστὼς
agree	(αεγκρὶ)	= συμφωνῶ (assent)
have rather	(hεβ ράδερ)	= προτιμῶ (prefer)
rather	(ράδερ)	= μᾶλλον
accident	(άκσιντεντ)	= δυστύχημα
amuse	(αμιοὺζ)	= διασκεδάζω (entertain)
amusing	(αμιούζινγκ)	= διασκεδαστικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
useful	(γιούσφουλ)	= χρήσιμος -η -ο
lend	(λεντ)	= δανείζω
statement	(στέϊτμεντ)	= ἔκθεση
disagree	(ντισαγκρὶ)	= διαφωνῶ
happen	(hάπεν)	= συμβαίνει

match	(μatch)	= σπίρτο
allow	(αελάου)	= ἐπιτρέπω (permit)
perfect	(περφέκτ ἢ πέρφεκ)	= τέλειος -α -ο
deaf	(ντεφ)	= κουφὸς -ὴ -ὸ
deafness	(ντέφνες)	= κουφαμάρα
petrol	(πέτρολ)	= βενζίνη (gasoline)
gasoline	(γκάζολιν)	= βενζίνη
age	(έϊντj)	= ἡλικία
point	(πόϊντ)	= μύτη (π.χ. μολυβιοῦ)
give up	(γκιβ απ)	= παραιτοῦμαι
cover	(κάβερ)	= σκεπάζω
aloud	(αελάουντ)	= δυνατὰ
Christmas	(κρίστμας)	= Χριστούγεννα
guest	(γκεστ)	= ξένος - φιλοξενούμενος
distribute	(ντιστρίμπιουτ)	= μοιράζω
souvenir	(σουβενὶρ)	= ἐνθύμιο
comparison	(καμπάρισεν)	= σύγκριση
dictionary	(ντίκchενερι)	= λεξικὸ
the other day	(δι άδερ ντέϊ)	= τὶς προάλλες
extraordinary	(εξτραόρντινερι)	= ἔκτακτος, ἀσυνήθιστος -η -ο
strong	(στρογκ)	= δυνατὸς -ὴ -ὸ (powerful)
especially	(εσπέchαλι)	= εἰδικὰ
sideways	(σάϊντγουέϊζ)	= λοξὰ
manner	(μάνερ)	= τρόπος
seize	(σὶιζ)	= πιάνω
blow	(μπλόου)	= φυσῶ
edge	(εντj)	= ἄκρη
land	(λαεντ)	= προσγειώνομαι, γῆ
owner	(όουνερ)	= ἰδιοκτήτης
hold	(hολντ)	= κρατῶ
firm	(φιρμ)	= σταθερὸς -ὴ -ὸ
firmly	(φίρμλι)	= σταθερὰ
roll	(ρολ)	= κυλῶ
mirror	(μίρερ)	= καθρέφτης (looking glass)
hang	(hαγκ)	= κρεμῶ
hole	(hόολ)	= τρύπα
opportunity	(οπαρτιούνιτι)	= εὐκαιρία
zero	(ζίρο)	= μηδὲν

speed	(σπιντ)	= ταχύτητα
tractor	(τράκτερ)	= τρακτὲρ
probable	(πρόμπαμπλ)	= πιθανὸς -ὴ -ὸ
probably	(πρόμπαμπλι)	= πιθανὸν
monkey	(μάνκι)	= μαϊμοὺ
able	(έϊμπ'λ)	= ἱκανὸς -ὴ -ὸ
be able to	(μπι έϊμπλ του)	= μπορῶ (can)
chain	(τchέϊν)	= ἀλυσσίδα, ἀλυσσοδένω
lead	(λιντ)	= ὁδηγῶ
miserable	(μίζεραμπλ)	= ἄθλιος, δυστυχισμένος -η -ο
beggar	(μπέγκαρ)	= ζητιάνος
coin	(κόϊν)	= νόμισμα
grateful	(γκρέϊτφουλ)	= εὐγνώμων
pick up	(πικ απ)	= μαζεύω (gather)
kindness	(κάϊντνες)	= καλωσύνη
master	(μάστερ)	= ἀφεντικὸ
join	(ντjόϊν)	= ἑνώνω (unite)
pity	(πίτι)	= οἶκτος
what a pity!	(γουὸτ ε πίτι)	= τί κρῖμα!
instead of	(ινστέντ οφ)	= ἀντὶ (in the place of)
block	(μπλοκ)	= τετράγωνο
fool	(φουλ)	= τρελλὸς
foolish	(φούλιch)	= τρελλὸς
afterward ἢ **afterwards**	(άφτεργουερντζ)	= ἔπειτα
light	(λάϊτ)	= ἀνάβω
suddenly	(σάντενλι)	= ξαφνικὰ
above	(αεμπὰβ)	= ὑπεράνω
float	(φλόουτ)	= πλέω
keep	(κίιπ)	= φυλάγω
escape	(ισκέϊπ)	= δραπετεύω
smile	(σμάϊλ)	= χαμογελῶ, χαμόγελο
gather	(γκάδερ)	= μαζεύω (pick up)
angry	(άγκρι)	= θυμωμένος -η -ο
sad	(σαντ)	= λυπημένος -η -ο
deserve	(ντιζέρβ)	= ἀξίζω (merit)

Irregular verbs

light (λάϊτ)	**lit** (λιτ) καὶ **lighted**	**lit** (λιτ) καὶ **lighted**	= ἀνάβω
lend (λενd)	**lent** (λεντ)	**lent** (λεντ)	= δανείζω
let (λετ)	**let** (λετ)	**let** (λετ)	= ἀφήνω, ἐπιτρέπω
blow (μπλόου)	**blew** (μπλιού)	**blown** (μπλόουν)	= φυσῶ
draw (ντρόου)	**drew** (ντριού)	**drawn** (ντρόουν)	= ζωγραφίζω
hold (hoλντ)	**held** (hελντ)	**held** (hελντ)	= κρατῶ
keep (κίιπ)	**kept** (κεπτ)	**kept** (κεπτ)	= φυλάγω
hang (hαεγκ)	**hung** (hαγκ) καὶ **hanged**	**hung** (hαγκ) καὶ **hanged**	= κρεμῶ
lead (λιντ)	**led** (λεντ)	**lead** (λεντ)	= ὁδηγῶ

TEXT

It was Mrs. Lloyds' birthday and they had a few old friends in to dinner. She was fifty years old. Their friends were the doctor, the teacher of the school, the clergyman and their wives. Like most old people they began to talk and they spent most of the evening talking about old times.

Mr. Brown, the teacher, told that the other day as he was going across the bridge an extraordinary thing had happened. «You know, Mr. Brown said, how you come round the corner to cross the bridge and suddenly you meet the wind which comes from the river? On this day the wind was especially strong, so strong that people half turned their backs to it, and walked across sideways. I was walking across in this manner when I saw the wind catch the hat of the man who was just in front of me. He tried to seize it before the wind had blown it away but of course he was too late and before he could say a word there it was high above the river. We all ran to the edge of the bridge to see what could happen when the hat landed in the water. But instead, it came floating back and landed on the bridge at my feet. We all laughed, especially the owner of the hat. He took it from me and held it firmly in his hands until he reached the other side of the river».

The clergyman told the following story:

One day a rich man who kept all his money in gold pieces in his own house bought a monkey because a friend of him told him that he would soon be able to sell it for very much more than he paid for it. He gave the monkey as little food as possible and chained it up in his house so that it would not escape. It led a very miserable life. But one day the man went out and left the monkey sitting at the window of his house. Soon a very poor beggar came down the street. The monkey watched him. A man who lived in a house near by threw a coin at the beggar, who picked it up gratefully. The man smiled and seemed happy to have done this kindness. The beggar was happy, too. «This» thought the monkey «is a good idea». And reaching for the box in which his master kept all his gold pieces he threw them all into the street. The beggar ran to pick them up and he was soon joined by a lot of other people all happily gathering up the money and laughing to themselves. When the monkey's master returned he was very angry and very sad bud his neighbours were very happy and showed no pity for him. They said that he had deserved everything that had happened.

TRANSLATION

Ἦταν τὰ γενέθλια τῆς κυρίας Λόϋντ κι εἶχαν μερικοὺς παλιοὺς φίλους γιὰ δεῖπνο. Αὐτὴ ἦταν 50 χρονῶν. Οἱ φίλοι τους ἦσαν ὁ γιατρός, ὁ δάσκαλος τοῦ σχολείου, ὁ παπὰς κι οἱ γυναῖκες τους. Σὰν τοὺς περισσοτέρους γέρους ἄρχισαν νὰ κουβεντιάζουν καὶ ξόδεψαν τὸ μεγαλύτερο μέρος τοῦ ἀπογεύματος μιλῶντας γιὰ τὸν παλιό καιρό.

Ὁ κύριος Brown, ὁ δάσκαλος, εἶπε (διηγήθηκε), ὅτι τὶς προάλλες, καθὼς περπατοῦσε κατὰ μῆκος τῆς γέφυρας, ἕνα ἀσυνήθιστο πρᾶγμα συνέβη. Ξέρεις, εἶπε ὁ κ. Brown, ὅπως ἔρχεσαι γύρω ἀπὸ τὴν γωνία, γιὰ νὰ διασχίσης τὴν γέφυρα καὶ ξαφνικὰ συναντᾶς τὸν ἄνεμο ποὺ ἔρχεται ἀπὸ τὸ ποτάμι; Ἐκείνη τὴν ἡμέρα ὁ ἄνεμος ἦταν εἰδικὰ δυνατός, τόσο δυνατὸς ὥστε οἱ ἄνθρωποι μισογύριζαν τὶς πλάτες τους σ' αὐτὸν καὶ περπατοῦσαν κατὰ μῆκος λοξά. Περπατοῦσα κατὰ μῆκος μ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπο, ὅταν εἶδα τὸν ἄνεμο νὰ πιάνη τὸ καπέλλο τοῦ ἄντρα, ποὺ ἦταν ἀκριβῶς μπροστά μου. Προσπάθησε νὰ τὸ ἐμποδίση, πρὶν νὰ φυσήξη ὁ ἄνεμος μακριά, ἀλλὰ βέβαια ἄργησε καί,

πρὶν νὰ μπορέση νὰ πῆ μιὰ λέξη, αὐτὸ ἦταν ἐκεῖ ψηλὰ πάνω ἀπὸ τὸ ποτάμι. Ἐμεῖς ὅλοι τρέξαμε στὴν ἄκρη τῆς γέφυρας νὰ δοῦμε, τί θὰ μποροῦσε νὰ συμβῆ, ὅταν τὸ καπέλο θὰ προσγειώνονταν στὸ νερό. Ἀλλὰ ἀντὶ γι' αὐτό, γύρισε πλέοντας πίσω καὶ προσγειώθηκε στὴ γέφυρα στὰ πόδια μου. Ἐμεῖς ὅλοι γελάσαμε, κυρίως ὁ ἰδιοκτήτης τοῦ καπέλου. Τὸ πῆρε ἀπὸ μένα καὶ τὸ κράτησε σφιχτὰ στὰ χέρια του, ὥσπου ἔφθασε στὴν ἄλλη πλευρὰ τοῦ ποταμοῦ.

Ὁ παπὰς διηγήθηκε τὴν ἀκόλουθη ἱστορία:

«Μιὰ μέρα ἕνας πλούσιος ἄντρας, ποὺ κρατοῦσε ὅλα του τὰ χρήματα σὲ χρυσὰ κομμάτια στὸ σπίτι του, ἀγόρασε μιὰ μαϊμού, γιατὶ ἕνας φίλος του τοῦ εἶπε, ὅτι σύντομα θὰ μποροῦσε (θὰ ἦταν σὲ θέση) νὰ τὴν πουλήση γιὰ πολὺ περισσότερο ἀπὸ ὅ,τι τὴν εἶχε πληρώσει. Ἔδινε στὴ μαϊμοὺ ὅσο πιὸ λίγη τροφὴ μποροῦσε καὶ τὴν ἁλυσσόδεσε στὸ σπίτι του ἔτσι ὥστε νὰ μὴ μπορῆ νὰ δραπετεύση. Διῆγε (περνοῦσε) μιὰ δυστυχισμένη ζωή. Ἀλλὰ μιὰ μέρα ὁ ἄντρας βγῆκε ἔξω καὶ ἄφησε τὴ μαϊμοὺ νὰ κάθεται στὸ παράθυρο τοῦ σπιτιοῦ του. Σύντομα ἕνας πολὺ φτωχὸς ζητιάνος κατέβαινε στὸ δρόμο. Ἡ μαϊμοὺ τὸν παρακολουθοῦσε. Ἕνας ἄντρας, ποὺ κατοικοῦσε σὲ ἕνα σπίτι ἐκεῖ κοντά, ἔρριξε μιὰ δεκάρα στὸ ζητιάνο, ποὺ τὴν μάζεψε μ' εὐγνωμοσύνη. Ὁ ἄντρας χαμογέλασε καὶ φάνηκε εὐτυχισμένος νὰ ἔχη κάνει αὐτὴ τὴν καλωσύνη. Ὁ φτωχὸς ζητιάνος ἐπίσης ἦταν πολὺ εὐτυχισμένος. «Αὐτὸ» σκέφθηκε ἡ μαϊμοὺ «εἶναι μιὰ καλὴ ἰδέα». Κι ἁπλώνοντας γιὰ τὸ κουτί, μέσα στὸ ὁποῖο τὸ ἀφεντικό της φύλαγε ὅλα τὰ χρυσὰ κομμάτια, τὰ ἔρριξε ὅλα στὸ δρόμο. Ὁ ζητιάνος ἔτρεξε νὰ τὰ μαζέψη καὶ γρήγορα ἑνώθηκε μὲ πολλοὺς ἄλλους ἀνθρώπους, ποὺ μάζευαν εὐτυχισμένοι τὰ χρήματα καὶ γελοῦσαν μὲ τὸν ἑαυτό τους. Ὅταν τὸ ἀφεντικὸ τῆς μαϊμοῦς γύρισε, ἦταν πολὺ θυμωμένος καὶ πολὺ λυπημένος, ἀλλὰ οἱ γείτονές του ἦσαν πολὺ εὐτυχισμένοι καὶ δὲν τοῦ ἔδειχναν οἶκτο. Εἶπαν, ὅτι τοῦ ἄξιζαν ὅλα, ὅσα εἶχαν συμβῆ.

EXERCISE 230

Conversation

Whose birthday was it?
What did they have?
How old was she?
Who were their friends?
What did they talk about?
What did Mr. Brown tell?

What did it happen?
Where was he walking?
How was the weather that day?
How did the people walk?
How did Mr. Brown walk?
What did the wind do?
What did the man try to do?
Was he too late?
Where was the hat?
What did the other people do?
What did the wind bring back?
Where did it leave it?
Did everybody laugh?
How did the owner hold it?
What did the rich man keep?
What did he buy?
Did he want to sell it?
Did he give the monkey much food?
Did he chain it?
Why did he chain it?
Who came soon?
What did the monkey do?
What did a man throw him?
Did he pick them up?
What did the monkey do?
Did the beggar pick them up?
Did he throw all the gold pieces?
Was his master happy?
What did the neighbours think?

EXERCISE 231

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὸν Ἀόριστο τοῦ say ἢ τοῦ tell.

The man ..... me that my suit was ready.
He ..... that the suit was ready.
She ..... that those people were not at home.

She ..... us they were not at home.
She ..... that she went to the lecture last night.
She ..... me that she went there last night.
She ..... «the lecture was wonderful».
She ..... to me «I understood almost all the lecture».
She ..... me that she understood almost all the lecture.
Mr. Miller ..... his wife that he was going to New York.
My friends ..... that English was difficult.
I ..... that I did not understand English.
He ..... me he had been sick last week.
What did you ..... ?
What did you ..... her?
Did he ..... you about his vacation?
He always ..... the truth.
Did you ever ..... a lie?
Did she ..... you your fortune?
He ..... «the people is» instead of «the people are».
Ann ..... that she liked her friends.
They ..... some good stories last night.
What did she ..... when you saw her?
She ..... to me «I don't believe everything he ..... us».
They ..... that the movie was good.
They ..... us that they were very tired.
Ann ..... that she preferred to sit downstairs.
She ..... me about the movie afterwards.
She ..... that the acting was very good.
I think that she ..... the truth.
She ..... that she had a wonderful time at the party.
She ..... him that she had to be home early.
She ..... that she had to write many letters.
Robert ..... me that she wasn't at home.
He ..... «I will call her up later».
She ..... John that she did not have time.
She ..... «it is nice to hear your voice».
She ..... to John «it is nice to hear your voice».
She ..... that she was tired.

EXERCISE 232

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ how much ἢ how many:

..... dresses does Mary have?
..... milk do you drink every morning?
..... glasses of milk does Robert drink?
..... coffee do Americans drink?
..... cups of milk do you drink?
..... tea do English drink?
..... eggs do you eat a day?
..... books do you have?
..... sugar do you put in your milk?
..... pieces of chalk do you need?
..... ice cream can you eat?
..... pieces of bread do you usually eat?
..... cars do the Millers have?
..... people do you know?
..... shopping does Mrs. Lloyd do at the grocery store?
..... hours does Ann study?
..... hours are there in a day?
..... papers do you read every day?
..... paper is on the teacher's desk?
..... time do we have for our English class?

EXERCISE 233

Μετατρέψτε τὶς προτάσεις σὲ ἐρωτήσεις:

Ann lives with Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd.
Mr. Lloyd says he is going to fly to New York.
He often eats his lunch downtown.
John likes to speak Spanish with Ann.
She came to class late this morning.
She went to bed early last night.
She feels better today.
You had time to study your lesson.
You understand your teacher very well.
He speaks very clearly in class.

EXERCISE 234

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενά: my your, his, her, our, their ἀναλόγως.

Paul broke ..... arm.
I signed ..... name twice.
She says that ..... history class is interesting.
Mr. Brown missed ..... train last night.
Do you like ..... new car?
Ann is having ..... English class now.
They are living in ..... new house.
She has a date with ..... friend Robert.
He had an appointment with ..... lawyer.
They rented ..... house for a year.
I have to wash ..... gloves today.
She combs ..... hair many times a day.
I always brush ..... teeth before going to bed.
Do you like ..... blue suit better than ..... gray suit?

EXERCISE 235

Δῶστε ὁλοκληρωμένες ἀπαντήσεις στὶς παρακάτω ἐρωτήσεις :

Where do you try to speak English?
Where do you prefer to study?
When do you prefer to study?
Where do you want to go?
When do you want to go there?
What do you want to do there?
Do you like to get up early?
What do you like to do on Sundays?
Do you ever try to read an English newspaper?
Do you need to see your dentist soon?
What do you need to buy?
What are you learning to do this year?
Are you learning to drive a car?
Are you beginning to understand English?

Do you prefer to live in a city or in a small town?
Where are you learning to speak English?
Why do you want to know English?
What do you like to do in the evening?

EXERCISE 236

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ some, any, much, many, a lot of:

We have ..... bread, but we don't have ..... butter.
We need ..... sugar, but we don't need ..... cream.
Let's have ..... toast, but let's not have ..... fruit.
She always buys ..... fruit, but she seldom buys ..... bananas.
She often makes ..... sandwiches, but she never makes ..... hamburgers.
He usually drinks ..... water, but he does not drink ..... milk.
He often eats ..... vegetables but he seldom eats ..... salad.
He wants ..... pie but he doesn't want ..... ice cream on it.
There are ..... restaurants, but there aren't ..... cafeterias.
I have ..... time now, but I don't have ..... money.

EXERCISE 237

Συμπληρῶστε τὶς προτάσεις βάζοντας τὸ σωστὸ τύπο τοῦ have to

Those women ..... do their own housework.
Mrs. Lloyd ..... clean the house every day.
Ann ..... help her mother every day.
She ..... be at school at eight o'clock.
Mr. Lloyd ..... eat dinner early tonight.
He ..... cut the grass this evening.
He ..... leave the city next week.
They ..... get up early tomorrow.
They ..... go downtown in the morning.
They ..... buy a bed for the new house.
They ..... see the doctor.
He ..... take his book with him.
She ..... buy a new dress.

Mary ..... move to the suburb.
I ..... get up early tomorrow.

EXERCISE 238

Γράψτε τὶς προτάσεις σχηματίζοντας ἐρωτήσεις κι ἀρνήσεις, π.χ.:

He speaks English. — Does he speak English? He does not speak English.

She goes to the store.
We understand lesson ten.
Dr. Clark has a large house.
I like those white books.
That house has nine rooms.
Mary studies the lesson.
George does the homework.
He asks questions.
The teacher pronounces the words.
The students copy the examples.
Your sister comes to class on time.
The children play in the yard.
Mrs. Lloyd goes to the store.
George plays football.
We like to listen to the radio.
Mrs. Brown gets up early.
That student learns the new words.
John swims very well.
I like to read the newspaper.

XXIV

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 230

Conversation

It was Mrs. Lloyd's birthday.
They had a few old friends in to dinner.
She was fifty years old.
Their friends were the doctor, the teacher of the school, the clergyman and their wives.
They talked about old times.
Mr. Brown, the teacher, told a fact.
It happened an extraordinary thing.
He was walking across the bridge.
The weather was windy.
People half turned their backs to the wind and walked across sideways.
He was walking across in this manner.
The wind caught the hat of the man who was just in front of Mr. Brown.
The man tried to seize it before the wind had blown it away.
Yes, he was too late.
The hat was high above the river.
The other people ran to the edge of the bridge to see what could happen.
The wind brought back the hat.
It left it on the bridge at Mr. Brown's feet.
Yes, everybody laughed and especially the owner of the hat.
The owner held it firmly in his hands until he reached the other side of the river.
The rich man kept all his money in gold pieces in his own house.
He bought a monkey.
Yes, he wanted to sell it later for very much more than he paid for it.
No, he gave the monkey as little food as possible.
Yes, he chained it in his house.

He chained it so that it would not escape.
A very poor beggar came soon.
The monkey watched him.
A man threw a coin to the beggar.
Yes, he picked it up gratefully.
The monkey reaching for the box in which his master kept all his gold pieces threw them all into the street.
Yes, the beggar picked them up.
Yes, he threw all the gold pieces.
No, he was very angry and sad.
They thought that he had deserved everything thad had happened.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 231

The man told me that my suit was ready.
He said that the suit was ready.
She said that those people were not at home.
She told us that they were not at home.
She said that she went to the lecture last night.
She told me that she went there last night.
She said «the lecture was wonderful».
She said to me «I understood almost all the lecture».
She told me that she understood almost all the lecture.
Mr. Miller told his wife that he was going to New York.
My friend said that English was difficult.
I said that I did not understand English.
He told me he had been sick last week.
What did you say?
What did you tell her?
Did he tell you about his vacation?
He always told the truth.
Did you ever tell a lie?
Did she tell you your fortune?
He said «the people is» instead of «the people are».
Ann said that she liked her friends.
They told some good stories last night.
What did she say when you saw her?
She said to me «I don't believe everything he told us».

They said that the movie was good.
They told us that they were very tired.
Ann said that she preferred to sit downstairs.
She told me about the movie afterwards.
She said that the acting was very good.
I think that she told the truth.
She said that she had a wonderful time at the party.
She told him that she had to be home early.
She said that she had to write many letters.
Robert told me that she wasn't at home.
He said «I will call her up later».
She told John that she did not have time.
She said «it is nice to hear your voice».
She said to John «it is nice to hear your voice».
She said that she was tired.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 232

How many dresses does Mary have?
How much milk do you drink every morning?
How many glasses of milk does Robert drink?
How much coffee do Americans drink?
How many cups of milk do you drink?
How much tea do English drink?
How many eggs do you eat a day?
How many books do you have?
How much sugar do you put in your milk?
How many pieces of chalk do you need?
How much ice cream can you eat?
How many pieces of bread do you usually eat?
How many cars do the Millers have?
How many people do you know?
How much shopping does Mrs. Lloyd do at the grocery store?
How many hours does Ann study?
How many hours are there in a day?
How many papers do you read every day?
Hou much paper is on the teacher's desk?
How much time do we have for our English class?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 233

Does Ann live with Mr. and Mrs. Lloyd?
Does Mr. Lloyd say he is going to fly to New York?
Does he often eat his lunch downtown?
Does John like to speak Spanish with Ann?
Did she come to class late this morning?
Did she go to bed early last night?
Does she feel better today?
Did you have time to study your lesson?
Do you understand your teacher very well?
Does he speak very clearly in class?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 234

Paul broke his arm.
I signed my name twice.
She says that her history class is interesting.
Mr. Brown missed his train last night.
Do you like my new car?
Ann is having her English class now.
They are living in their new house.
She has a date with her friend Robert.
He had an appointment with his lawyer.
They rented their house for a year.
I have to wash my gloves today.
She combs her hair many times a day.
I always brush my teeth before going to bed.
Do you like my blue suit better than my gray suit?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 235

I try to speak English in class.
I prefer to study at home.
I prefer to study in the morning.
I want to go to the movies.
I want to go there in the evening.

I want to meet my friend there.
No, I don't like to get up early.
I like to go for a walk.
Yes, I often try to read an English newspaper.
No, I don't need to see my dentist soon.
I need to buy a new hat.
I am learning to speak English.
No, I am not learning to drive a car.
Yes, I am beginning to understand English.
I prefer to live in a small town.
I am learning to speak English at school.
Because I want to go to the United States.
I like to read.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 236

We have some bread, but we don't have any butter.
We need some sugar but we don't need any cream.
Let's have some toast but let's not have any fruit.
She always buys some fruit, but she seldom buys any bananas.
She often makes some sandwiches but she never makes any hamburgers.
He usually drinks a lot of water but he does not drink any milk.
He often eats some vegetables but he seldom eats any salad.
He wants some pie but he does not want any ice cream on it.
There are many restaurants but there aren't any cafeterias.
I have much time now, but I don't have any money.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 237

Those women **have to** do their own housework.
Mrs. Lloyd **has to** clean the house every day.
Ann **has to** help her mother every day.
She **has to** be at school at eight o'clock.
Mr. Lloyd **has to** eat dinner early tonight.
He **has to** cut the grass this evening.
He **has to** leave the city next week.
They **have to** get up early tomorrow.

They **have to** go downtown in the morning.
They **have to** buy a bed for the new house.
They **have to** see the doctor.
He **has to** take his book with him.
She **has to** buy a new dress.
Mary **has to** move to the suburb.
I **have to** get up early tomorrow.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 238

Does she go to the store? — She does not go to the store.
Do we understand lesson ten? — We do not understand lesson ten.
Does Dr. Clark have a large house? — Dr. Clark does not have a large house.
Do I like those white books? — I don't like those white books.
Does that house have nine rooms? — It does not have nine rooms.
Does Mary study the lesson? — She does not study the lesson.
Does George do the homework? — He does not do the homework.
Does he ask questions? — He does not ask questions.
Does the teacher pronounce the words? — He does not pronounce the words.
Do the students copy the examples? — They don't copy the examples.
Does your sister come to class on time? — She does not come to class on time.
Do the children play in the yard? — They don't play in the yard.
Does Mrs. Lloyd go to the store? — She does not go to the store.
Does George play football? — He does not play football.
Do we like to listen to the radio? — We don't like to listen to the radio.
Does Mrs. Brown get up early? — She does not get up early.
Does that student learn the new words? — He does not learn the new words.
Does John swim very well? — He does not swim very well.
Do I like to read the newspaper? I don't like to read the newspaper.

Η ΛΕΞΗ HOW

Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ λέξη **how** χρησιμοοιεῖται σὲ ἐρωτήσεις πρὶν ἀπὸ ἐπίθετα ἢ ἐπιρρήματα, π.χ.:

How old is your brother? = πόσων χρονῶν εἶναι ὁ ἀδελφός σου;
He is twenty years old = εἶναι εἴκοσι χρονῶν.
How soon is he going? = πόσο σύντομα θὰ φύγη;
He is going in an hour = αὐτὸς θὰ φύγη σὲ μία ὥρα.

Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ ἔκφραση **how far** χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἐρωτήσεις, ποὺ ἀναφέρονται σὲ ἀπόσταση, π.χ.:

How far ir your house from here? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι τὸ σπίτι σου ἀπὸ δῶ;
It is three blocks from here = εἶναι τρία τετράγωνα ἀπὸ δῶ.
How far is it from your house to the school? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι σου ὡς τὸ σχολεῖο;
It is half an hour by bus = εἶναι μισὴ ὥρα μέ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.
How far is it to your house? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι ὡς τὸ σπίτι σου;
It is not very far = δὲν εἶναι πολὺ μακριά.

Οἱ ἐκφράσεις **how much** καὶ **how many** εἶναι γιὰ ἐρωτήσεις, ποὺ ἀναφέρονται σὲ ποσότητα. Τὸ **how much** εἶναι γιὰ τὰ μὴ ἀριθμούμενα οὐσιαστικά, δηλαδὴ γιὰ ἐκεῖνα ποὶ ζυγίζονται, λογαριάζονται, ὑπολογίζονται, ἀλλὰ δὲν μετριοῦνται. Ἐνῶ τὸ **how many** εἶναι γιὰ τὰ ἀριθμούμενα οὐσιαστικά, δηλαδὴ γιὰ ἐκεῖνα, ποὺ μετριοῦνται, π.χ.:

How much bread did you buy? = πόσο ψωμὶ ἀγόρασες;
I bought one loaf = ἀγόρασα ἕνα καρβέλι.
How much time did you spend there? = πόσο καιρὸ (χρόνο) ξόδεψες ἐκεῖ;
I spent a week there = πέρασα μιὰ ἑβδομάδα ἐκεῖ.
How many children do the Browns have? = πόσα παιδιὰ ἔχουν οἱ Μπράουν;
They have three children = αὐτοὶ ἔχουν τρία παιδιά.
How many people are there in the class? = πόσοι ἄνθρωποι ὑπάρχουν μέσα στὴν τάξη;
There are about twenty = ὑπάρχουν περίπου εἴκοσι.
How many fingers do you have? = πόσα δάχτυλα ἔχεις;
I have ten fingers = ἔχω δέκα δάχτυλα.
How many students are there in the class? = πόσοι μαθηταὶ ὑπάρχουν μέσα στὴν τάξη;
How much milk do you drink? = πόσο γάλα πίνεις;
I drink much milk = πίνω πολὺ γάλα.
How many people did you meet? = πόσους ἀνθρώπους συνάντησες;

I met two people = συνάντησα δύο ἀνθρώπους.
How much money did you get? = πόσα χρήματα πῆρες;
I got ten dollars = πῆρα δέκα δολλάρια.
How many languages do you speak? = πόσες γλῶσσες μιλᾶς;
I speak two languages, French and English = μιλῶ δύο γλῶσσες, γαλλικὰ κι ἀγγλικά.
How much paper do you need? = πόσο χαρτὶ χρειάζεσαι;
I need a lot of paper = χρειάζομαι πολὺ χαρτί.
How fast do you run? = πόσο γρήγορα τρέχεις;
I run very fast = τρέχω πολὺ γρήγορα.
How far is New York from here? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι ἡ Νέα Ὑόρκη ἀπὸ ἐδῶ;
It is very far = εἶναι πολὺ μακριά.
How far is the hotel from here? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι τὸ ξενοδοχεῖο ἀπὸ ἐδῶ;
It is not very far, only two blocks = δὲν εἶναι πολὺ μακριά, μόνο δύο τετράγωνα.
How far is the ocean from here? = πόσο μακριὰ εἶναι ὁ ὠκεανὸς ἀπὸ ἐδῶ;
It is not very far = δὲν εἶναι πολὺ μακριά.

Η ΛΕΞΗ AS

Ἡ λέξη **as** ἔχει πολλὲς ἔννοιες καὶ διάφορες θέσεις μέσα σὲ μία πρόταση. Τὴν συναντοῦμε σὰν ἐπίρρημα, σὰν σύνδεσμο, σὲ σύγκριση **as .....as** καὶ μὲ ἄλλες λέξεις μὲ διαφορετικὴ ἔννοια, π.χ.:

Σὰν ἐπίρρημα μαζὶ μὲ τὸν σύνδεσμο as :

John is as tall as his sister = ὁ John εἶναι τόσο ψηλὸς ὅσο ἡ ἀδελφή του·
Is it as difficult as they say? = εἶναι τόσο δύσκολο ὅσο λένε;
You can get there as quickly by bus as by train = μπορεῖς νὰ πᾶς ἐκεῖ τόσο (τὸ ἴδιο) γρήγορα μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο ὅσο καὶ μὲ τὸ τραῖνο.

Τὸ as μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ when (ὅταν) καὶ τοῦ while (ἐνῶ).

I saw Tom as I was coming here = εἶδα τὸν Τὸμ, καθὼς ἐρχόμουν ἐδῶ.

As she was going downtown she met an old friend = καθὼς πήγαινε κάτω στὴν πόλη, αὐτὴ συνάντησε ἕναν παλιὸ φίλο.
She threw a box at the thief as he was running down the stairs = ἔρριξε ἕνα κουτὶ στὸν κλέφτη, καθὼς αὐτὸς ἔτρεχε κάτω στὰ σκαλιά.
As I was running I fell down = καθὼς ἔτρεχα, ἔπεσα κάτω.
As he was reading the students were laughing = ἐνῶ αὐτὸς διάβαζε, οἱ μαθηταὶ γελοῦσαν.

Τὸ as σὰν σύνδεσμος σὲ σύγκριση ὁμοίων ἢ ἀνομοίων πραγμάτων μετὰ τὸ as ἢ τὸ so μέσα σὲ πρόταση:

I want a box twice as large as this = θέλω ἕνα κουτὶ δυὸ φορὲς μεγαλύτερο ἀπὸ αὐτό.
It is not so difficult as you think = δὲν εἶναι τόσο δύσκολρ, ὅσο νομίζεις.
He ran as fast as he could but he arrived late for the train = αὐτὸς ἔτρεξε ὅσο πιὸ γρήγορα μποροῦσε, ἀλλὰ ἔφτασε ἀργὰ γιὰ τὸ τραῖνο.

Τὸ as σὰν σύνδεσμος μετὰ ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις same = ἴδιο καὶ such τέτοιο:

We drove out of the town by the same road as we had entered = ὁδηγήσαμε ἔξω ἀπὸ τὴν πόλη ἀπὸ τὸν ἴδιο δρόμο, ἀπὸ τὸν ὁποῖον εἴχαμε μπῆ.
You are not such a fool as you look (not so foolish as you look) = δὲν εἶσαι τόσο τρελλὸς ὅσο φαίνεσαι (μοιάζεις), (ὄχι τόσο τρελλὸς ὅσο μοιάζεις).

Τὸ as σὰν σύνδεσμος, ὅταν φανερώνη τὴν ἀφορμή, τὴν αἰτία:

As it is so cold today we had better light a fire = καθὼς κάνει τὸσο κρύο σήμερα, θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ ἀνάψουμε μιὰ φωτιά.
As I have never seen that man I can't tell you whether he is good-looking or not = καθὼς δὲν ἔχω δῆ ποτὲ ἐκεῖνο τὸν ἄντρα, δὲν μπορῶ νὰ πῶ, ἂν εἶναι ὄμορφος ἢ ὄχι.
As I have never been to England I can't tell you what to do and to see there = καθὼς δὲν ἔχω πάει ποτὲ στὴν Ἀγγλία, δὲν μπορῶ νὰ σᾶς πῶ, τί νὰ κάνετε καὶ νὰ δῆτε ἐκεῖ.

Τὸ as ἐπίσης σὰν σύνδεσμος μὲ τὴν ἔννοια in the way that, in the same way that = τρόπο:

Leave it as it is (don't touch it, move it, change it) = ἄφησέ το μὲ τὸν τρόπο ποὺ εἶναι (μὴ τὸ ἐγγίζεις, κουνᾶς, ἀλλάζεις).
Say the word as I said it = πὲς τὴν λέξη, ὅπως τὴν εἶπα.

Ἐπίσης μετὰ τὸ such κι ὅταν δίνωνται παραδείγματα:

Countries in the North of Europe (such) as Finland, Sweden and Norway = χῶρες στὰ βόρεια τῆς Εὐρώπης ὅπως ἡ Φινλανδία, ἡ Σουηδία κι ἡ Νορβηγία.
Latin languages as Italian, French and Spanish = Λατινικὲς γλῶσσες, ὅπως ἰταλικά, γαλλικά, ἰσπανικά.

WHAT ... FOR

Τὸ **what for** ἔχει τὴν ἴδια σημασία μὲ τὸ **why**, π.χ.:

Why are you studying English? = γιατί μελετᾶς ἀγγλικά;
What are you studying English for? = γιατί μελετᾶς ἀγγλικά;

Τὸ what μπαίνει στὴν ἀρχὴ τῆς ἐρωτήσεως καὶ τὸ for στὸ τέλος τῆς ἐρωτήσεως. Μποροῦμε στὴν ἐρώτηση: What are you studying English for? νὰ δώσουμε τέσσερις ἀπαντήσεις μὲ διαφορετικὲς λέξεις. Μία μὲ τὸ because, μιὰ μὲ τὸ in order to, μιὰ μὲ τὸ to καὶ μιὰ μὲ τὸ for, π.χ.:

I am studying English because I want to go to the United States = μελετῶ ἀγγλικά, γιατὶ θέλω νὰ πάω στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες.
I am studying English in order to get a good job = μελετῶ ἀγγλικὰ μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ πιάσω μιὰ καλὴ δουλειά.
I am studying English to be able to speak and understand it when I go to Chicago = μελετῶ ἀγγλικά, γιὰ νὰ μπορέσω νὰ τὰ μιλῶ καὶ νὰ τὰ καταλαβαίνω, ὅταν θὰ πάω στὸ Σικάγο.
I am studying English for pleasure = μελετῶ ἀγγλικὰ γιὰ εὐχαρίστηση.
Why did Ann go to the United States? = γιατί πῆγε ἡ Ann στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες;

What did Ann go to the United States for? She went there because she wanted to see the country = αὐτὴ πῆγε ἐκεῖ, γιατὶ ἤθελε νά δῆ τὴ χώρα. She went there in order to see the country. She went there to see the country. She went there for seeing the country.

What are you listening to the radio for? = γιατί ἀκοῦς τὸ ραδιόφωνο; ἢ Why are you listening to the radio?

I am listening to the radio because I want to hear the news = ἀκούω τὸ ραδιόφωνο, γιατὶ θέλω νὰ μάθω τὰ νέα.

I am listening to the radio in order to learn the program = ἀκούω τὸ ραδιόφωνο μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ μάθω τὸ πρόγραμμα.

I am listening to the radio to have a good time = ἀκούω τὸ ραδιόφωνο, γιὰ νὰ περάσω καλά.

I am listening to the radio for amusement = ἀκούω τὸ ραδιόφωνο γιὰ διασκέδαση.

TO — IN ORDER TO

Τὸ **to** καὶ τὸ **in order to** χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος σὲ ἐκφράσεις σκοποῦ. Ὁ σύντομος τύπος **to** εἶναι περισσότερο συνηθισμένος.

Examples:

I came here to learn English = ἦλθα ἐδῶ, γιὰ νὰ μάθω ἀγγλικὰ καὶ I came here in order to learn English.

Robert called for Mary to take her to the movies = ὁ Ρόμπερτ τηλεφώνησε στὴ Μαίρη, γιὰ νὰ τὴν πάη στὸν κινηματογράφο καὶ Robert called for Mary in order to take her to the movies.

They went early to get a good seat = αὐτοὶ πῆγαν νωρίς, γιὰ νὰ βροῦν μιὰ καλὴ θέση, καί: They went early in order to get a good seat.

Let's take a taxi to arrive on time = ἄς πάρουμε ἕνα ταξί, γιὰ νὰ φθάσουμε ἐγκαίρως, καί: Let's take a taxi in order to arrive on time.

I called Mrs. White to ask her about the lesson = τηλεφώνησα στὴν κυρία Χουάϊτ νὰ τὴν ρωτήσω γιὰ τὸ μάθημα, καί: I called Mrs. White in order to ask her about the lesson.

Mrs. Galanis went to the store to buy some vegetables. She went there in order to meet an old friend = αὐτὴ πῆγε ἐκεῖ μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ συναντήση ἕναν παλιὸ φίλο, καί: She went there to meet an old friend.

Η ΠΡΟΘΕΣΗ FOR:

Ἡ πρόθεση **for** χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικά, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση σκοπό. π.χ.:

She went to the store for some vegetables (to buy some vegetables) = αὐτὴ πῆγε στὸ κατάστημα, γιὰ νὰ ἀγοράση μερικὰ λαχανικά.

Ἡ διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὸ **for** καὶ στὸ **to** εἶναι, ὅτι τὸ **for**, ὅταν φανερώνη σκοπό, συντάσσεται μὲ οὐσιαστικό, ὄχι μὲ ρῆμα, ἐνῶ το **to** ἔχει ἀμέσως ἔπειτα ρῆμα, κι εἰδικότερα Ἀπαρέμφατο.

Examples:

I am going to the hotel for lunch (to have lunch) = πάω στὸ ξενοδοχεῖο γιὰ τὸ γεῦμα (γιὰ νὰ ἔχω γεῦμα).
She went to the post office to mail a letter = αὐτὴ πῆγε στὸ ταχυδρομεῖο, γιὰ νὰ ταχυδρομήση ἕνα γράμμα.
Then she went to the florist's to buy some flowers = κατόπιν αὐτὴ πῆγε στὸ ἀνθοπωλεῖο, νὰ ἀγοράση μερικὰ λουλούδια.
We invited Betty to our house to have dinner = προσκαλέσαμε τὴν Μπέτυ στὸ σπίτι μας, γιὰ νὰ ἔχη δεῖπνο.
They stayed after class for the lecture = ἔμειναν μετὰ τὸ μάθημα γιὰ τὴ διάλεξη.
Robert is studying tonight for an examination = ὁ Ρόμπερτ μελετᾶ ἀπόψε γιὰ μιὰ ἐξέταση.
Robert is doing his homework for his Spanish class = ὁ Ρόμπερτ κάνει τὴ γραφική του ἐργασία γιὰ τὸ μάθημά του τῆς ἰσπανικῆς.
Robert called Mary to ask her for a date = ὁ Ρόμπερτ τηλεφώνησε τὴν Μαίρη, γιὰ νὰ τῆς ζητήση ἕνα ραντεβού.
Robert called up Mary for a date = ὁ Ρόμπερτ τηλεφώνησε στὴν Μαίρη γιὰ ἕνα ραντεβού.

Καμιὰ φορὰ ἔχουμε **for** καὶ γερούνδιο (κατάληξη τοῦ ρήματος **-ing** χωρὶς τὸ βοηθητικὸ I am), ἀλλὰ αὐτὸ δὲν εἶναι καὶ τόσο συνηθισμένο.

I wear glasses for reading = φορῶ γιαλιὰ γιὰ τὸ διάβασμα.
He uses his pen for writing letters = αὐτὸς χρησιμοποιεῖ τὴν πέννα του, γιὰ νὰ γράφη γράμματα.

Τὸ **for** ἐπίσης φανερώνει χρονικὴ διάρκεια μιᾶς πράξης. Μ' αὐτὴν τὴν ἔννοια τὸ **for** συχνὰ παραλείπεται, ἀλλὰ πάντοτε τὸ ἐννοοῦμε. π.χ.:

I read (for) an hour before going to bed = διαβάζω (γιὰ) μιὰ ὥρα, πρὶν νὰ πάω γιὰ ὕπνο.
He waited (for) half an hour and then he left = αὐτὸς περίμενε (γιὰ) μισὴ ὥρα καὶ κατόπιν ἔφυγε.
How long did you wait for her? = πόσο τὴν περίμενες;
I waited (for) two hours and then she came = τὴν περίμενα (γιὰ) δύο ὧρες καὶ κατόπιν αὐτὴ ἦλθε.
How long did you play tennis yesterday? = πόση ὥρα ἔπαιζες τέννις χθές;
I played (for) one hour and then I gave up because I was very tired = ἔπαιξα μία ὥρα καὶ κατόπιν παραιτήθηκα, γιατὶ ἤμουν πολὺ κουρασμένος.
How long were you downtown this morning? = πόσην ὥρα ἤσουν στὴν πόλη σήμερα τὸ πρωΐ;
I was downtown (for) two hours and then I had lunch with my married sister = ἤμουν στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης δύο ὧρες καὶ κατόπιν εἶχα γεῦμα μὲ τὴν παντρεμένη μου ἀδελφή.
How long was he sick? = πόσο καιρὸ ἦταν ἄρρωστος;
He was sick (for) two weeks, but now he is all right = ἦταν ἄρρωστος (γιὰ) δύο ἑβδομάδες, ἀλλὰ τώρα εἶναι μιὰ χαρά.
How long did you stay in the country? = πόσο καιρὸ ἔμεινες στὴν ἐξοχή;
I stayed there (for) two months = ἔμεινα ἐκεῖ (γιὰ) δύο μῆνες.

Ἡ πρόθεση **for** φανερώνει ἐπίσης τὸ ἀντάλλαγμα, κυρίως γιὰ ποσὰ χρημάτων, π.χ.:

He rented the house for one hundred dollars a month = αὐτὸς νοίκιασε τὸ σπίτι γιὰ ἑκατὸ δολλάρια τὸ μήνα.

He paid ten dollars for his new English dictionary = αὐτὸς πλήρωσε δέκα δολλάρια γιὰ τὸ καινούργιο του ἀγγλικὸ λεξικό.
She paid five dollars for her new hat = αὐτὴ πλήρωσε πέντε δολλάρια γιὰ τὸ καινούργιο της καπέλο.

Τὸ **for** ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ **for the pleasure of** = γιὰ τὴν εὐχαρίστηση κάποιου, π.χ. :

Virginia sang some Spanish songs for us = ἡ Virginia τραγούδησε μερικὰ ἱσπανικὰ τραγούδια γιὰ μᾶς.
She sat down and wrote the exercises for us = αὐτὴ κάθησε κι ἔγραψε τὶς ἀσκήσεις γιὰ μᾶς.

Τὸ **for** σημαίνει ἐπίσης **instead of** = ἀντὶ τοῦ, ἢ **in (he) place of** = στὴ θέση ἀπὸ κάτι, π.χ. :

I am busy now, will you please go to the post office for me? = εἶμαι ἀπασχολημένος τώρα, πᾶς σὲ παρακαλῶ στὸ ταχυδρομεῖο γιὰ (ἀντὶ) μένα;
Will you please write the letter for me? I don't know how to write a letter = σὲ παρακαλῶ, γράφεις τὸ γράμμα γιὰ μένα; δὲν ξέρω πῶς νὰ γράψω ἕνα γράμμα.
Will you please buy a loaf of bread for me? I can't go to the shop now = σὲ παρακαλῶ, ἀγοράζεις ἕνα καρβέλι ψωμὶ γιὰ μένα; Δὲν μπορῶ νὰ πάω στὸ κατάστημα τώρα.

Τὸ **for** ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ ρῆμα be καὶ ἕνα ἐπίθετο, ὅταν ἡ πρόταση εἶναι συμπληρωμένη μὲ ἕνα ἀπαρέμφατο (to + ρῆμα στὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο), π.χ. :

It is difficult for Ann to understand English over the telephone = εἶναι δύσκολο γιὰ τὴν Ἄννα νὰ καταλάβη ἀγγλικὰ ἀπὸ τὸ τηλέφωνο.
It is easy for me to speak English over the telephone because I know the language very well = μοῦ εἶναι εὔκολο νὰ μιλήσω ἀγγλικὰ ἀπὸ τὸ τηλέφωνο, γιατὶ ξέρω πολὺ καλὰ τὴν γλώσσα.
It is too hot for me to live there=κάνει πολλὴ ζέστη γιὰ μένα νὰ ζήσω ἐκεῖ.
Some American movies are difficult for me to understand = μερικὰ ἀμερικάνικα ἔργα εἶναι δύσκολα γιὰ μένα νὰ τὰ καταλάβω.

That radio is expensive for George to buy it = ἐκεῖνο τὸ ραδιόφωνο εἶναι ἀκριβὸ γιὰ τὸν Γιῶργο νὰ τὸ ἀγοράση.
This book is easy for all of us to understand = αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο εἶναι εὔκολο γιὰ ὅλους μας νὰ τὸ καταλάβουμε.
It is necessary for Robert to call Mary = εἶναι ἀνάγκη ὁ Ρόμπερτ νὰ τηλεφωνήση στὴ Μαίρη.
It is important for me to dial the right number this time because I am in a hurry = εἶναι σπουδαῖο γιὰ μένα νὰ πάρω τὸ σωστὸ ἀριθμὸ αὐτὴ τὴ φορά, γιατὶ βιάζομαι.
It is possible for her to make herself understood = εἶναι δυνατὸν γι' αὐτὴν νὰ γίνη ἀντιληπτή.
It is difficult for all of us to speak English over the telephone = εἶναι δύσκολο γιὰ ὅλους μας νὰ μιλήσουμε ἀγγλικὰ ἀπὸ τὸ τηλέφωνο.
I think that it is too late for me to go to class now = νομίζω, ὅτι εἶναι πολὺ ἀργὰ γιὰ μένα νὰ πάω στὸ μάθημα τώρα.

Η ΠΡΟΘΕΣΗ DURING

Ἡ πρόθεση **during**, φανερώνει χρονικὴ διάρκεια, ἀλλὰ στὴν ὁποία κάτι συμβαίνει, μία πράξη λαμβάνει χώραν.

Examples:

It rained for an hour during the afternoon = ἔβρεξε γιὰ μιὰ ὥρα κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τοῦ ἀπογεύματος.
I went to the lake for a week during my vacation = πῆγα στὴ λίμνη γιὰ μία ἑβδομάδα κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῶν διακοπῶν μου.
I saw him twice during the week = τὸν εἶδα δύο φορὲς κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἑβδομάδας.
I seldom go to the movies during the week but I like to go on weekends = σπάνια πηγαίνω στὸν κινηματογράφο κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἑβδομάδας, ἀλλὰ μ' ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνω τὰ Σαββατοκύριακα.
I went to the University twice during the day = πῆγα στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο δύο φορὲς κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἡμέρας.
I talked with him for an hour during the examination = μίλησα μαζί του ἐπὶ μιὰ ὥρα κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἐξετάσεως.

I heard him talk for half an hour during the English lecture = τὸν ἄκουγα νὰ μιλᾶ ἐπὶ μισὴ ὥρα κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἀγγλικῆς διαλέξεως

ΑΝΑΦΟΡΙΚΕΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

(Relative pronouns)

Οἱ κυριότερες ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι: who, which, that καὶ what.

Λιγότερο συχνὰ χρησιμοποιοῦνται οἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες whoever, whichever καὶ whatever. Τέλος ἔχουν σχεδὸν ὁλότελα ἀπομακρυνθῆ ἀπὸ τὴ σημερινὴ γλώσσα, ἰδίως στὴν 'Αμερική, οἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες whosoever, whichsoever καὶ whatsoever.

'Απὸ τὶς παρακάτω ἀντωνυμίες οἱ who καὶ whoever εἶναι οἱ μόνες, ποὺ ἔχουν τύπους γιὰ ὅλες τὶς πτώσεις. Θὰ πρέπει ἐδῶ νὰ σημειώσουμε, ὅτι οἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι ἀμετάβλητες σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα, γένη κι ἀριθμούς. Μόνο οἱ ἀντωνυμίες, ποὺ ἀναφέραμε, ἀλλάζουν, καὶ μόνον κατὰ πτώση. Νὰ πῶς κάνουν οἱ who καὶ whoever σ' ὅλες τὶς πτώσεις:

Nominative	**Possessive**	**Objective**
who	whose	whom
whoever	whosever	whomever

ΧΡΗΣΗ ΑΝΑΦΟΡΙΚΩΝ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΩΝ

α) 'Η ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία who (whose, whom) χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνον γιὰ πρόσωπα, π.χ.:

The flier **who** served world war II is now an airline official = ὁ πιλότος, ποὺ ὑπηρέτησε στὸν β' παγκόσμιο πόλεμο, εἶναι τώρα ἀξιωματοῦχος ἀεροπορικῆς ἑταιρίας.

Ἡ which χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ ζῶα καὶ γιὰ πράγματα, π. χ.:

The dog which was lost has been found.

Ἂν ὅμως τὸ ζῶο εἶναι ὁρισμένο, πρόκειται γιὰ τὸ δικό μας ζῶο, τὸ οἰκιακό, ποὺ ἀγαποῦμε, τότε θεωρεῖται ἀπὸ τοὺς Ἐγγλέζους «πρόσωπο» καὶ μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ καὶ τὸ who, π. χ.:

Our dog Jock, who has been lost for two days, was found.

Μὲ τὰ συλλογικὰ οὐσιαστικὰ (collective nouns), ποὺ δείχνουν πρόσωπα, ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία which χρησιμοποιεῖται, ἂν τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ παίρνεται σὰν ἑνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ἡ who (m) δὲ χρησιμοποιεῖται, ἂν τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ παίρνεται σὰν πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, π. χ.:

The crew which won the race was excused from classes.
The team, who are just getting their tickets, will meet on the platform at 2.30.

γ) Ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία that χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα καὶ γιὰ πράματα κι εἶναι ἀμετάβλητη .

Ὑποχρεωτικὰ χρησιμοποιεῖται ἡ that — κι ὄχι ἡ who ἢ ἡ which — στὶς ἑξῆς περιπτώσεις:

1) Ὕστερα ἀπὸ παραθετικὸ στὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό, π. χ.:

This book is the best that has ever been written on that subject = αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο εἶναι τὸ καλύτερο, ποὺ ἔχει γραφῆ γι' αὐτὸ τὸ θέμα.

2) Ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὶς ἐκφράσεις it is, it was κλπ. καὶ τοὺς ἀντίστοιχους ἐρωτηματικοὺς τύπους, π. χ.:

It is the teacher that is important, not the classroom = ὁ δάσκαλος ἔχει σημασία, ὄχι ἡ τάξη.
What was it that he wanted? = τί ἦταν αὐτό, ποὺ ἤθελε;

3) Ὅταν οἱ λέξεις, ὅπου ἀναφέρεται ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία (antecedent), εἶναι καὶ πρόσωπο καὶ πρᾶγμα, π. χ.:

He talked brilliantly of the men and the books t h a t interested him.

Μπροστὰ στὸ that δὲν μπαίνει ποτὲ πρόθεση. Μπαίνει στὸ τέλος τῆς φράσης, π. χ.:

Here is the car t h a t I told you a b o u t.

Κι ὄχι:

Here is the car a b o u t t h a t I told you.

ΕΙΔΗ ΑΝΑΦΟΡΙΚΩΝ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΩΝ

Οἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι δύο εἰδῶν: ὁριστικὲς ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες (definite relative pronouns) κι ἀόριστες ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες (indefinite relative pronouns).

α) **Ὁριστικές ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες** (definite relative pronouns).

Ὅταν ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία ἀναφέρεται σ' ἕνα συγκεκριμένο πρόσωπο, ζῶο ἢ πρᾶγμα (οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀντωνυμία), τότε εἶναι ὁ ρ ι σ τ ι κ ὴ ἀ ν α φ ο ρ ι κ ὴ ἀ ν τ ω ν υ μ ί α, π. χ.:

The man w h o came in last was uncle Fred.
Do you know the man w h o s e horse finished last?
The man w h o m the police questioned was Mr. Brown.
The house, w h i c h was sold recently, was built in 1821.
The man t h a t I saw was named Mortimer Taylor.

Οἱ ὁριστικὲς ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες ἐκπληροῦν διπλὴ ἀποστολή: ἀπὸ τὴ μιὰ μεριὰ χρησιμεύουν γιὰ ὑποκείμενα ἢ ἀντικείμενα μέσα στὴ δευτερεύουσα ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση κι ἀπὸ τὴν ἄλλη συνδέουν τὴν ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση μ' ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ μιὰ ἰδέα μιᾶς ἄλλης προτάσεως. Αὐτὸ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἡ ἰδέα τῆς ἄλλης κυρίας προτάσεως, ὅπου ἀναφέρεται ἡ ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση, λέγεται **antecedent.**

Γιὰ νὰ τὸ καταλάβετε καλύτερα, ἂς πάρουμε ἕνα παράδειγμα:

The man who came in the last was uncle Fred.

Στὴν πρόταση αὐτὴ κατ' ἀρχὴν τὸ who εἶναι ὁριστικὴ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία, γιατὶ ἀναφέρεται σὲ συγκεκριμένο, καθορισμένο οὐσιαστικό, τὸ the

man. Ἡ ὁριστικὴ λοιπὸν ἀντωνυμία who χρησιμεύει σὰν ὑποκείμενο μέσα στὴν δευτερεύουσα ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση who came in the last. Ἀλλὰ κάνει καὶ κάποια ἄλλη δουλειά: συνδέει τὴν ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση μὲ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ man, τὸ ὑποκείμενο δηλαδὴ τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, the man . . . was uncle Fred. Τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ the man, ὅπου ἀναφέρεται ἡ ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση, λέγεται antecedent. Τὸ antecedent μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι πρόσωπο, ζῶο ἢ πρᾶμα, οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀντωνυμία. Μπορεῖ ἀκόμη νὰ εἶναι μιὰ ὁλόκληρη πρόταση ἢ μιὰ ἰδέα π. χ.:

> The pieces in that book written two years ago have lost little of their freshness, **which** suggests a change.

Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα μεταφράζουμε τὴν ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία «πρᾶγμα τὸ ὁποῖον». Εἶναι ὅμως πιὸ σωστὸ στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ νὰ βάζουμε στὰ ἀγγλικὰ πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ which τὶς λέξεις a fact of ἢ a procedure of, ἰδίως μάλιστα στὸν γραπτὸ λόγο.

ΠΑΡΑΤΗΡΗΣΕΙΣ

Ὅταν ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία εἶναι ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος μέσα στὴν ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση, ἡ κανονικὴ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων μέσα στὴν πρόταση (ὑποκείμενο - ρῆμα - ἀντικείμενο) ἀλλάζει καὶ τὸ ἀντικείμενο μπαίνει πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο.

Ἔτσι ἐνῶ σὲ μιὰ κανονικὴ πρόταση ἔχουμε:

> my father had known him,

στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ τῆς ἀναφορικῆς προτάσεως θὰ ἔχουμε:

> whom my father had known.

Ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία whom, ποὺ εἶναι ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος had known, θὰ μπῇ πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο my father.

Ὅταν ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία εἰσάγεται μὲ πρόθεση κι ἀποτελῇ ἐμπρόθετο προσδιορισμό, μποροῦμε τότε νὰ βάλουμε τὴν πρόθεση εἴτε μπροστὰ στὴν ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία εἴτε στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως, π. χ.:

α) This is the pen **with which** he signed the contract.
β) This is the pen **which** he signed the contract **with**.

Ἐπίσης:

α) The man **to whom** the money was sent.

β) The man w h o m the money was sent t o.

Ὡστόσο εἶναι συνηθέστερο, στὴν περίπτωση ποὺ ἡ πρόθεση θὰ μπῆ στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως, νὰ παραλειφθῆ ὁλότελα ἡ ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία, π. χ.:

This is the pen he signed the contract with.
The man the money was sent to.

Στὴ σύγχρονη ἀμερικανικὴ γλώσσα, ἰδιαίτερα στὸν προφορικὸ λόγο, τὴν αἰτιατικὴ whom τῆς ἀναφορικῆς ἀντωνυμίας τὴν ἀποφεύγουν σὰν κακόηχη.

Δυὸ εἶναι στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ οἱ τρόποι, γιὰ ν' ἀποφευχθῆ τὸ whom. Πρῶτον, νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ ἡ ὀνομαστικὴ who ἀντὶ τῆς αἰτιατικῆς whom, ἀκόμη κι ἂν ἡ ἀντωνυμία εἶναι ἀντικείμενο, π.χ.:

a girl who I used to go with.

Παρὰ τὸ γεγονός, ὅτι οἱ τύποι αὐτοὶ χρησιμοποιοῦνται εὐρύτατα ἀπὸ τοὺς Ἀμερικανούς, εἶναι λανθασμένοι. Καὶ πρέπει νὰ τοὺς ἀποφεύγουμε.

Σωστὴ στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς εἶναι ἡ χρήση τῆς αἰτιατικῆς:

a girl whom I used to go with.

Ἂν ὡστόσο θεωροῦμε τὸ whom κακόηχο καὶ θέλουμε ὁπωσδήποτε νὰ τ' ἀποφύγουμε, μποροῦμε νὰ τὸ κάνουμε αὐτὸ μ' ἕναν ἄλλο δεύτερο τρόπο: νὰ παραλείψουμε ὁλότελα τὴν ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία. Ἔτσι μὲ τὸν τρόπο αὐτὸ στὸ παραπάνω παράδειγμα θἄχουμε:

a girl I used to go with.

Ἡ τελευταία αὐτὴ φράση εἶναι ἀπόλυτα σωστὴ στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα.

Ὁριστικὰ ἀναφορικὰ ἐπιρρήματα (definite relative adverbs). Μὲ τὶς ὁριστικὲς ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες μοιάζουν κατὰ κάποιον τρόπο καὶ τὰ ὁ ρ ι σ τ ι κ ὰ ἀ ν α φ ο ρ ι κ ὰ ἐ π ι ρ ρ ή μ α τ α (definite relative adverbs). Αὐτὰ εἶναι when, where, whence καὶ μερικὰ ἄλλα. Ἀναφέρονται κι αὐτὰ σὲ οὐσιαστικὸ καὶ συνδέουν αὐτὸ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ μὲ τὴ δευτερεύουσα ἀναφορικὴ πρόταση. Μέσα στὴν δευτερεύουσα ὅμως πρόταση προσδιορίζουν ἐπιρρηματικὰ τὸ ρῆμα, ἐνῶ οἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες, ὅπως εἴδαμε, χρησιμεύουν σὰν οὐσιαστικά, π. χ.:

There was a time w h e n he would not have minded.

Is that the house w h e r e Willigan was born?
We returned to the spot w h e n c e we had started.

β) **'Αόριστες ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες** (indefinite relative pronouns). Οἱ ἀντωνυμίες who, whose, whom, which, what κι οἱ σύνθετες μὲ τὸ ever καὶ soever μποροῦν νὰ εἶναι κι ἀ ό ρ ι σ τ ε ς ἀ ν α φ ο ρ ι κ ὲ ς ἀ ν τ ω ν υ μ ί ε ς. Οἱ ἀόριστες ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίες διαφέρουν ἀπὸ τὶς ὁριστικὲς στὸ ὅτι δὲν ἔχουν antecedent. 'Από τὰ παρακάτω δύο παραδείγματα φαίνεται αὐτὴ ἡ διαφορά:

Definite: I knew the girl w h o broke the record.
Indefinite: I knew w h o broke the record.

Στὴν πρώτη φράση τὸ who ἀναφέρεται σ' ἕνα antecedent, τὸ girl. Στὴ δεύτερη φράση τὸ who, ἂν καὶ συνδέῃ τὶς δύο προτάσεις, δὲν ἔχει antecedent.

ΠΑΡΑΤΗΡΗΣΗ

Τὸ whom, ὅταν εἶναι ἀόριστη ἀναφορικὴ ἀντωνυμία, δὲν παραλείπεται, ἀλλὰ μπαίνει ὑποχρεωτικά, π. χ.:

She knew w h o m she wanted.

ΓΕΝΙΚΕΣ ΠΑΡΑΤΗΡΗΣΕΙΣ ΓΙΑ ΤΙΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΕΣ

1) **'Αποφεύγετε τὴν ἀόριστη χρήση τοῦ it καὶ τοῦ they.**

'Αόριστο: In this book it shows that war is horrible.
Σωστό: This book shows that war is horrible.

'Αόριστο: They have good roads in Athens.
Σωστό: Athens has good roads.

'Αόριστο: They say that time is money.
Σωστό: It is said that time is money.

Ὅταν ἀπρόσωπα ἐκφράζουμε μιὰ ἰδέα, τότε δὲν χρειάζεται antecedent, π. χ.:

It is a long way to Tipperary.

Οἱ ἐκφράσεις it is necessary, it is time, it is certain, it is likely, it is imperative κλπ. εἶναι σωστές.

2) Μὴ χρησιμοποιεῖτε τὸ ἀπρόσωπο it καὶ τὴν ἀντωνυμία it στὴν ἴδια φράση, π. χ.:

Ἀόριστο: We can send the car today, or we can keep it if it is necessary.

Σωστό: We can send the car today or we can keep it.

3) Ἀποφεύγετε τὴ χρήση τοῦ you, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσετε γενικὰ τὴν ἔννοια «οἱ ἄνθρωποι».

Στὴν καθημερινὴ ὁμιλία οἱ Ἄγγλοι λένε ὄχι σπάνια:
Dancing makes you graceful.

Στὰ σωστὰ ὅμως ἀγγλικὰ θὰ ποῦμε:
Dancing makes one graceful ἢ
Dancing makes anyone graceful.
Ἀντὶ τοῦ you δηλαδὴ θὰ χρησιμοποιήσουμε one ἢ anyone.

VOCABULARY

adopt	(αντὸπτ)	=	υἱοθετῶ
adoption	(αντόπchεν)	=	υἱοθεσία
poor	(πουρ)	=	φτωχὸς (needy)
animal	(αένιμαλ)	=	ζῶο
remark	(ριμὰρκ)	=	παρατηρῶ (observe), παρατήρηση (observation)
true	(τρου)	=	ἀληθινὸς - ἡ - ὸ
persuade	(περσουέϊντ)	=	πείθω
shoulder	(chόλντερ)	=	ὦμος
stick	(στικ)	=	ραβδὶ
florist	(φλόριστ)	=	ἀνθοπώλης
examine	(εγκζάμιν)	=	ἐξετάζω

examination	(εγκζαμινέϊchev)	=	ἐξέταση
examiner	(εγκζάμινερ)	=	ἐξεταστὴς
junction	(ντjάνκτchev)	=	διασταύρωση
exchange	(ἐξτchέϊντj)	=	ἀνταλλάσσω (trade), ἀνταλλαγὴ
district	(ντίστρικτ)	=	περιοχὴ
proud	(πράουντ)	=	περήφανος (insolent)
plant	(πλαεντ)	=	φυτὸ
shame	(chέϊμ)	=	ντροπὴ
shameful	(chέϊμφουλ)	=	ντροπιασμένος
shameless	(chέϊμλες)	=	ἀδιάντροπος , ξετσίπωτος
be back	(μπι μπαεκ)	=	come back, return
return	(ριτὲρν)	=	ἐπιστρέφω, ἐπιστροφὴ
become	(μπικαμ)	=	γίνομαι, καθίσταμαι
impatient	(ιμ-πέϊchεντ)	=	ἀνυπόμονος
impatience	(ιμ-πέϊchενς)	=	ἀνυπομονησία
call for	(κόολ φορ)	=	ζητῶ
call up	(κόολ απ)	=	καλῶ
chance	(τchaενς)	=	τύχη, πιθανότητες ἐπιτυχίας
dial	(ντάϊελ)	=	σχηματίζω ἀριθμὸ στὸ τηλέφωνο
even if	(ίβεν ιφ)	=	ἀκόμη κι ἂν
hang up	(hαεγκ απ)	=	κλείνω τὸ τηλέφωνο
moment	(μόμεντ)	=	στιγμὴ (instant)
just a moment	(ντjαστ ε μόμεντ)	=	μιὰ στιγμὴ
receiver	(ρισίιβερ)	=	δείκτης, ἀκουστικὸ τηλεφώνου
pick up the receiver	(πικ απ δε ρισίιβερ)	=	σηκώνω τὸ ἀκουστικὸ
right now	(ράϊτ νάου)	=	αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμὴ
operator	(οπερέϊτερ)	=	χειριστὴς
nickname	(νικνέϊμ)	=	ὑποκοριστικὸ
alive	(ελάϊβ)	=	ζωντανὸς (living)
job	(ντjομπ)	=	δουλειὰ
weigh	(γουέϊ)	=	βαραίνω
weight	(γουέϊτ)	=	βαρὺς
immediate	(ιμίντιϊτ)	=	ἄμεσος - η - ο
immediately	(ιμίιντιϊτλι)	=	ἀμέσως

merchant	(μέρτchαντ)	=	ἔμπορος
distance	(ντίστανς)	=	ἀπόσταση
pause	(πόουζ)	=	παύω, σταματῶ, παύση (stop)
furious	(φιούριεs)	=	μανιώδης
furiously	(φιούρισλι)	=	μὲ μανία
beat	(μπίιτ)	=	δέρνω, κτυπῶ (strike repeatedly)
donkey	(ντάνκι)	=	γάϊδαρος (as)
whip	(houἰπ)	=	μαστίγιο, μαστιγώνω
take no notice	(τέϊκ νόου νότις)	=	δὲν δίνω σημασία
method	(μέθεντ)	=	μέθοδος (manner, system)
ahead	(αhὲντ)	=	ἐμπρὸς
bus stop	(μπας στοπ)	=	στάση λεωφορείου
fare	(φέερ)	=	εἰσιτήριο μεταφορικοῦ μέσου, π.χ. λεωφορείου
ride	(ράϊντ)	=	ὀχοῦμαι, καβαλικεύω
square	(σκουέερ)	=	πλατεῖα
stand up	(σταεντ απ)	=	στέκομαι ὄρθιος
transfer	(τρανσφὲρ)	=	ἀλλάζω θέση, ἀλλάζω λεωφορεῖο, μετατόπιση
turn	(τερν)	=	στρέφω, γυρίζω
grow	(γκρόου)	=	αὐξάνω, μεγαλώνω
correct	(καρὲκτ)	=	σωστὸς - ἡ - ὁ
correction	(καρέκτchεν)	=	διόρθωση
draw	(ντρόου)	=	ζωγραφίζω
bend	(μπεντ)	=	στροφὴ
needle	(νίιντλ)	=	βελόνα
stair	(στέερ)	=	σκαλὶ
enter	(έντερ)	=	μπαίνω (come in)
entrance	(έντρανς)	=	εἴσοδος, εἰσαγωγὴ
good-looking	(γκουντ λούκιγκ)	=	ὅμορφος (nice)
touch	(τατch)	=	ἐγγίζω, ἀφὴ
amusement	(αμιούζμεντ)	=	διασκέδαση
program	(πρόγκραμ)	=	πρόγραμμα
flier	(φλάϊερ)	=	πιλότος, ἀεροπλάνο
serve	(σερβ)	=	ὑπηρετῶ
airline	(έερλάϊν)	=	ἀεροπορικὴ γραμμή, ἀερ. ἑταιρία

official	(οφίchaλ)	=	ἐπίσημος - η - ο, ἀξιωματοῦχος
equipment	(ικουΐπμεντ)	=	ἐξοπλισμὸς
install	(ινστόουλ)	=	ἐγκαθιστῶ
installation	(ινστοουλέϊchev)	=	ἐγκατάσταση
race	(ρέϊς)	=	ἀγώνας
excuse	(εξκιοὺζ)	=	συγχωρῶ, ἀπαλλάσσω
brilliant	(μπρίλγιαντ)	=	λαμπρὸς - ἡ - ὸ
brilliantly	(μπρίλγιαντλι)	=	λαμπρὰ
question	(κουέστchev)	=	ἐρώτηση, ἀνάκριση, ἀνακρίνω
freshness	(φρέchνες)	=	δροσιὰ
contract	(καντρὰκτ)	=	συμβόλαιο
mind	(μάϊντ)	=	μνήμη, διανόηση, θυμᾶμαι
bear	(μπερ)	=	γεννάω
horrible	(hάριμπλ)	=	φρικτὸς - ἡ - ὸ
grace	(γκρέϊς)	=	χάρη
graceful	(γκρέϊσφουλ)	=	χαριτωμένος - η - ο **(pretty)**

IDIOMS

to be careful (του μπι κέερφουλ) = προσέχω
how . . . about . . . ? = τί θὰ ἔλεγες γιά. . . ;
I would (I' d) like to. . . = θὰ ἤθελα νά. . .
I am sorry = λυποῦμαι
it is nice to hear your voice = μοῦ κάνει εὐχαρίστηση νὰ ἀκούω τὴ φωνή σου
just tell her that. .. = πῆτε της μόνο ὅτι . . . .
make a mistake = κάνω λάθος
make oneself understood = γίνομαι ἀντιληπτὸς
talk over the telephone = μιλῶ στὸ τηλέφωνο
the line is busy = ἡ γραμμὴ εἶναι κατειλημμένη
long distance = ὑπεραστικὸν (τηλεφώνημα)
here is your party = ὁμιλεῖτε μὲ τὸ πρόσωπο ποὺ ζητήσατε
your party is on the line = τὸ πρόσωπο ποὺ ζητήσατε σᾶς ὁμιλεῖ
the phone is out of order = τὸ τηλέφωνο ἔχει βλάβη
he isn' t in now = δὲν εἶναι ἐδῶ τώρα

be downtown = εἶμαι στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης
get on a bus = ἀνεβαίνω στὸ λεωφορεῖο
get off a bus = κατεβαίνω ἀπὸ τὸ λεωφορεῖο
get to a place = φθάνω κάπου
go downtown = πηγαίνω στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης
let someone know = εἰδοποιῶ κάποιον
think so = νομίζω, μοῦ φαίνεται
walk straight ahead = περπατῶ ἴσια μπροστὰ
you can' t miss it = δὲν μπορεῖς νὰ τὸ χάσης (νὰ μὴ τὸ βρῆς)
crosstown bus = λεωφορεῖον ἀστικῆς γραμμῆς
get into a taxi (cab) = παίρνω ταξὶ
get out of a taxi (cab) = βγαίνω ἀπὸ τὸ ταξὶ
heavy traffic = πυκνὴ συγκοινωνία (ὀχημάτων)
is the taxi free? = εἶναι ἐλεύθερο τὸ ταξὶ αὐτό;
is this taxi taken? εἶναι κατειλημμένο τὸ ταξὶ αὐτό;
tip the driver = δίνω φιλοδώρημα στὸν ὁδηγὸ

IRREGULAR VERBS

beat (μπίιτ)	**beat** (μπίιτ)	**beat** καὶ **beaten** (μπίιτ καὶ μπίτεν) = δέρνω, χτυπῶ
become (μπικὰμ)	**became** (μπικέϊμ)	**become** (μπικὰμ) = γίνομαι, καθίσταμαι
grow (γκρόου)	**grew** (γκριοὺ)	**grown** (γκρόουν) = αὐξάνω, μεγαλώνω
mistake (μιστέϊκ)	**mistook** (μιστοὺκ)	**mistaken** (μιστέϊκεν) = κάνω λάθος
must (μαστ)	**must** (μαστ)	— = ὀφείλω, πρέπει
ougth (όουτ)	**ougth** (όουτ)	— = ὀφείλω, πρέπει
ride (ράϊντ)	**rode** (ρόουντ)	**ridden** (ρίντ' ν) = ὀχοῦμαι, καβαλικεύω
sing (σιγκ)	**sang** (σαεγκ)	**sung** (σαγκ) = τραγουδῶ
bear (μπέερ)	**bore** (μπόορ)	**born** (μπορν) = γεννάω

TEXT

One day a rich merchant was walking through the street of the town where he lived. He was on his way to see his brother, who lived a long distance from his house. He paused to watch a man who was furiously beating a donkey with a whip. The donkey seemed to take no notice and it was clear that the man was not going to do much good by the method he had adopted. After a while the merchant said to him: «Why are you doing that ?» «To make the donkey go», replied the man. «Have you the rigth to beat the poor animal like that?» asked the merchant. Certainly I have» replied the man, «it is my donkey and I can do what I like with what it is mine». The merchant thought for a minute and then remarked that he did not seem to persuade the man. So the merchant took his own stick and started to beat the man about the head and the shoulders. «Stop it» cried the man «what have I done to deserve this?» «Ch,» replied the merchant «this is my stick and I have the right to do what I like with what is mine».

TRANSLATION

Μιὰ μέρα ἕνας πλούσιος ἔμπορος περπατοῦσε διὰ μέσου τοῦ δρόμου τῆς πόλης, ὅπου ζοῦσε. Ἦταν στὸν δρόμο του (πήγαινε) νὰ δῆ τὸν ἀδελφό του, ποὺ κατοικοῦσε σὲ μιὰ μεγάλη ἀπόσταση ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι του. Σταμάτησε νὰ παρακολουθήση ἕναν ἄντρα, ποὺ μὲ μανία χτυποῦσε ἕνα γάϊδαρο μὲ ἕνα μαστίγιο. Ὁ γάϊδαρος δὲν φαινόταν νὰ ἔδινε σημασία καὶ ἦταν ξεκάθαρο, ὅτι ὁ ἄντρας δὲν ἐπρόκειτο νὰ φέρη καλὸ μὲ τὴ μέθοδο ποὺ εἶχε υἱοθετήσει. Ὕστερα ἀπὸ λίγο ὁ ἔμπορος τοῦ εἶπε: «Γιατί τὸ κάνεις αὐτό;» «Γιὰ νὰ κάνω τὸ γαϊδοῦρι νὰ φύγη» ἀπάντησε ὁ ἄντρας. Ἔχεις τὸ δικαίωμα νὰ χτυπᾶς τὸ φτωχὸ ζῶο ἔτσι;» ρώτησε ὁ ἔμπορος. «Βεβαίως ἔχω» ἀπάντησε ὁ ἄντρας», εἶναι δικός μου γάϊδαρος καὶ μπορῶ νὰ κάνω ὅ,τι θέλω μὲ ὅ,τι εἶναι δικό μου». Ὁ ἔμπορος σκέφθηκε γιὰ ἕνα λεπτὸ καὶ κατόπιν παρατήρησε, ὅτι δὲν φαινόταν νὰ πείθη τὸν ἄντρα. Ἔτσι ὁ ἔμπορος πῆρε τὸ δικό του μπαστοῦνι κι ἄρχισε νὰ χτυπᾶ τὸν ἄντρα γύρω στὸ κεφάλι καὶ στοὺς ὤμους. «Σταμάτα», φώναξε ὁ ἄντρας, «τί ἔχω κάνει νὰ ἀξίζω αὐτό;» «Ὤ» ἀπάντησε ὁ ἔμπορος «αὐτὸ εἶναι τὸ ραβδί μου κι ἔχω τὸ δικαίωμα νὰ κάνω ὅ,τι θέλω μ' αὐτά, ποὺ εἶναι δικά μου».

EXERCISE 239

CONVERSATION

What was the man of the story?
Where was he walking?
Where was he going?
Where did his brother live?
What did he see on his way?
What did he ask the man?
What did he reply?
Did the merchant try to stop the man to beat his animal?
What did he do at last?
What did he reply when the man asked him why he was beating him?

EXERCISE 240

Συμπληρῶστε μιὰ σύντομη ἐρώτηση στὸ τέλος τῆς φράσης:

Example:

You usually answer the phone, **don' t you**?

It is difficult to speak English over the telephone, . . . ?
You make yourself understood, . . . ?
She often becomes impatient, . . . ?
Robert didn' t find the telephone number, . . . ?
He dialed Information, . . . ?
Mr. William lives on Clark street, . . . ?
The line was busy, . . . ?
He had the wrong number, . . . ?
Mary wasn' t at home, . . . ?
Robert didn' t leave a message, . . . ?
Mary is coming in now, . . . ?
Mary wants to see the picture, . . . ?
She isn' t going to study very much, . . . ?
Bob hung up the receiver, . . . ?
Bob called for her before seven, . . . ?

You have a telephone, . . . ?
It is a dial phone, . . . ?
The phone isn' t out of order, . . . ?
You didn' t call me up yesterday, . . . ?
You weren' t at home yesterday, . . . ?

EXERCISE 241

Δῶστε δυὸ ἀπαντήσεις, μιὰ καταφατικὴ καὶ μιὰ ἀρνητική, στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Example:

Will you call me up later? Yes, I will call you up later. No, I will not call you up later.

Will he call for her before seven o' clock?
Will she be ready on time?
Will you see her today?
Will they be back at six o' clock?
Will you dial that number again?
Will he answer the phone?
Will she accept his invitation?
Will you talk English with her?
Will they wait for you if you go now?
Will he be back on time for dinner?

EXERCISE 242

Γράψτε τὶς ἀκόλουθες προτάσεις στὸν Μέλλοντα.

Example:

I get up early. I shall get up early.

I read your books every day.
He opens the door with his keys.
We come to see you in your new house.

We have dinner at eight o' clock.
We send you a letter.
You met my sister at the dance.
He tells you everything about the party.
Betty is at home every evening.
They are at the football game.
Harry works for me.
I haven' t read any of your books.
I haven' t open the door.
We didn' t come to see you in your new house.
We don' t have dinner at eight o' clock every evening.
You didn' t get a letter from my friend.
You didn' t meet her at the dance.
He does not tell you everything about the party.
Betty was not at our house on Thursday.
They didn' t go to the football game on Sunday.
George didn' t the work for me very well.

EXERCISE 243

Μετατρέψτε τὶς προτάσεις σὲ ἐρωτήσεις:

You understood the lecture.
They will have lunch at one o' clock.
Robert called Mary last night.
She answered the phone.
They went to a movie.
It was very, entertaining.
You often go to a movie on Saturday.
Mary wants to stay there for two years.
You will remember their names.
They are going to study English next year.

EXERCISE 244

᾿Απαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις μὲ τὸ to ἢ τὸ for ἢ τὸ because ἢ τὸ in order to:

What are you studying English for?

What are you listening to the radio for?
What are you waiting for?
What did you go to the Bank for?
What did you go to the store for?
What did you go to the drugstore for?
What did you go to the library for?
What did you buy that notebook for?
What did you call up Information for?
What did you hang up the receiver for?

EXERCISE 245

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Do you have a telephone at home?
What is your telephone number?
Is it difficult to speak English over the telephone?
Can you make yourself understood?
Can you understand what the other person says?
When you use the telephone what do you pick up first?
What do you say in English when you answer the phone?
Is it difficult to get the right number?
How do you answer the question «Who is calling»?
What do you do when you finish your call?

EXERCISE 246

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Do you pay your fare as you get on a bus?
If a bus is crowded what do you say in order to pass through the crowd?
Did you take a bus this morning?
Did you have to wait a long time for the bus?
Did you have to stand up?
Are the taxis in your city cheap or expensive?
Are they more comfortable than the buses?
Do you usually tip the taxi driver?

XXV

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 239

CONVERSATION

The man of the story was a rich merchant.
He was walking through the street of the town where he lived.
He was going to see her brother.
His brother lived a long distance from his house.
He saw a man who was furiously beating a donkey with a whip.
He asked the man: «why are you doing that?»
The man replied: «To make the donkey go»
Yes, the merchant tried to stop the man to beat his animal by asking him «Have you the right to beat the poor animal like that?»
At last he took his own stick and started to beat the man about the head and the shoulders.
The merchant replied: «This is my stick and I have the right to do what I like with what is mine.»

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 240

It is difficult to speak English over the telephone, isn' t it?
You make yourself understood, don' t you?
She often becomes impatient, doesn' t she?
Robert didn' t find her telephone number, did he?
He dialed Information, didn' t he?
Mr. William lives on Clark Street, doesn' t he?
The line was busy, wasn' t it?
He had the wrong number, didn' t he?
Mary wasn't at home, was she?
Robert didn' t leave a message, did he?

Mary is coming in now, isn' t she?
Mary wants to see the picture, doesn' t she?
She isn' t going to study very much, is she?
Bob hung up the receiver, didn' t he?
Bób called for her before seven, didn' t he?
Yоu have a telephone, don' t you?
It is a dial phone, isn' t it?
The phone isn' t out of order, is it?
Yоu didn' t call me up yesterday; did you?
Yоu weren' t at home yesterday, were you?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 241

Yés, he will call for her before seven o' clock. No, he won' t (will not) call for her before seven o' clock.

Yes, she will be ready on time. No, she won' t be ready on time.

Yes, I will see her today. No, I won' t see her today.

Yes, they will be back at six o' clock. No, they won' t be back at six o' clock.

Yes, I will dial that number again. No, I won' t dial that number again.

Yes, he will answer the phone. No, he won' t answer the phone.

Yes, she will accept his invitation. No, she won' t accept his invitation.

Yes, I will talk English with her. No, I won' t talk English with her.

Yes, they will wait for me if I go now. No, they won' t wait for me if I go now.

Yes, he will be back on time for dinner. No, he won' t be back on time for dinner.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 242

I shall read your books every day.
He will open the door with his keys.

We shall come to see you in your new house.
We shall have dinner at eight o' clock.
We shall send you a letter.
You will meet my sister at the dance.
He will tell you everything about the party.
Betty will be at home every evening.
They willl be at the football game.
Harry will work for me.
I won' t read any of your books.
I won' t open the door.
We shall not come to see you in your new house.
We shall not have dinner at eight o' clock every evening.
You won' t get a letter from my friend.
You won' t meet her at the dance.
He won' t tell you everything about the party.
Betty won' t be at our house on Thursday.
They won' t go to the football game on Tuesday.
George won' t do the work for me very well.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 243

Did you understand the lecture?
Will they have lunch at one o' clock?
Did Robert call Mary last night?
Did she answer the phone?
Did they go to a movie?
Was it very entertaining?
Do you often go to a movie on Saturday?
Does Mary want to stay there for two years?
Will you remember their names?
Are they going to study English next year?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 244

I am studying English because I like it.
I am listening to the radio to hear the news.
I am waiting for the bus.
I went there to cash a check.

I went there in order to buy a notebook.
I went there in order to drink a glass of milk.
I went there to take a book.
I bought it because I wanted to write an exercise.
I called Information in order to learn a number.
I hung it up because I had the wrong number.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 245

Yes, I have a telephone at home.
It is 629 - 854.
It is not so difficult for me to speak English over the telephone.
Yes, I can make myself understood.
Yes, I can understand what the other person says.
I pick up first the receiver.
I say «hello».
No, it isn' t difficult to get the right number.
I say «this is John».
I hang up the receiver.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 246

Yes, I pay my fare as I get on a bus.
I say «I am sorry» or «excuse me».
Yes, I took a bus this morning.
No, I did not have to wait a long time for the bus.
Yes, I had to stand up.
They are expensive.
Yes, they are more comfortable than the buses.
Yes, I usually do.

ONE

Ἡ λέξη **one** συνήθως ἀκολουθεῖ ἕνα ἐπίθετο, ὅταν τὸ οὐσιαστικό, στὸ ὁποῖο τὸ ἐπίθετο ἀναφέρεται, δὲν ἐπαναλαμβάνεται. Γιὰ νὰ ἀποφύγουμε τὴν ἴδια λέξη δυὸ φορὲς μέσα στὴν πρόταση, βάζουμε τὸ one.

Examples:

Two buses came along, Betty took the first one = δύο λεωφορεῖα ἦλθαν, ἡ Μπέττυ πῆρε τὸ πρῶτο.

Μερικὲς φορὲς τὸ one ἀποτελεῖ μιὰ ἔννοια μὲ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ τὸ ἐπίθετο καὶ δὲν τὸ ἑρμηνεύουμε. Δίνει ἔμφαση στὴν ἔννοια τῆς λέξης, π. χ.:

The yellow buses go slower than the green ones = τὰ κίτρινα λεωφορεῖα πᾶνε πιὸ σιγὰ ἀπὸ τὰ πράσινα.

One girl is blond and the other one is a brunette = τὸ ἕνα κορίτσι εἶναι ξανθὸ καὶ τὸ ἄλλο εἶναι καστανό.

Ὁ πληθυντικὸς τοῦ one κάνει ones.

This button is too small. Here is a larger one = αὐτὸ τὸ κουμπὶ εἶναι πολὺ μικρό. Ὁρίστε ἕνα μεγαλύτερο.

Look at those two drawings, this one is better than that one = κύτταξε αὐτὲς τὶς δύο ζωγραφιές, αὐτὴ ἐδῶ εἶναι καλύτερη ἀπό ἐκείνη.

Look at these drawings, these are better than those.

You have a lot of apples, please give me one = ἔχεις πολλὰ μῆλα, σὲ παρακαλῶ, δῶσε μου ἕνα.

I will have one cigarette, will you have one, too = θὰ ἔχω (καπνίσω) ἕνα τσιγάρο, θέλεις ἕνα ἐπίσης;

You have some wonderful records, will you please play me just one before I go? = ἔχεις μερικοὺς θαυμάσιους δίσκους, μοῦ παίζεις, σὲ παρακαλῶ, μόνο ἕναν, πρὶν φύγω;

I have lost my pencil, have you one to lend me? = ἔχω χάσει τὸ μολύβι μου, ἔχεις νὰ μοῦ δανείσης ἕνα;

So this is your house, it is a very pretty one = ὥστε αὐτὸ εἶναι τὸ σπίτι σου, εἶναι ἕνα πολὺ χαριτωμένο (σπίτι).

I want some oranges, give me these big ones = θέλω μερικὰ πορτοκάλια, δῶσε μου ἐκεῖνα τὰ μεγάλα.

We have some new shirts, do you want to buy one? This green one is very nice = ἔχουμε μερικὰ καινούργια πουκάμισα, θέλετε νὰ ἀγοράσετε ἕνα ; αὐτὸ τὸ πράσινο εἶναι πολὺ καλό.

Is this house for rent? No, it is not, but this one on the corner is for rent = νοικιάζεται αὐτὸ τὸ σπίτι; ὄχι, δὲν νοικιάζεται, ἀλλὰ ἐκεῖνο στὴ γωνία νοικιάζεται.

That dictionary is very small but it is a good one = ἐκεῖνο τὸ λεξικὸ εἶναι πολὺ μικρό, ἀλλὰ εἶναι πολὺ καλό.
He wants to see some old films and some new ones = αὐτὸς θέλει νὰ δῆ μερικὰ παλιὰ ἔργα καὶ μερικὰ καινούργια.
Those dresses are expensive but the other ones are better = αὐτὰ τὰ φορέματα εἶναι ἀκριβά, ἀλλὰ τὰ ἄλλα εἶναι καλύτερα.
On the walls we have two small pictures and an old one = ἐπάνω στοὺς τοίχους ἔχουμε δύο μικρὲς εἰκόνες καὶ μιὰ παλιὰ (εἰκόνα).

BY

Τὸ **by** χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ ἕνα οὐσιαστικό, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση τὸ μέσον.

Examples:

I want to send this letter by airmail = θέλω νὰ στείλω αὐτὸ τὸ γράμμα ἀεροπορικῶς.
She sent a message by the boy = αὐτὴ ἔστειλε ἕνα μήνυμα μὲ τὸ παιδί.
She went to visit her aunt by bus = αὐτὴ πῆγε νὰ ἐπισκεφθῆ τὴ θεία της μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο.

Τὸ by χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ μιὰ αὐτοπαθῆ ἀντωνυμία, ὅταν φανερώνη, ὅτι κάνουμε κάτι μόνοι μας, χωρὶς τὴν βοήθεια ἑνὸς ἄλλου, π. χ.:

I cleaned the room by myself = καθάρισα τὸ δωμάτιο μόνη μου.
She sat at the table by herself = αὐτὴ κάθησε στὸ τραπέζι μόνη της.

Τὸ by ἐπίσης χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ ἕνα γερούνδιο (κατάληξη -ing στὸ ρῆμα χωρὶς τὸ βοηθητικὸ I am), γιὰ νὰ φανερώση μέσον, π.χ.:

How does one go to the Paramount Theater? = πῶς πάει κανεὶς στὸ θέατρο Παραμάουντ;
One goes there by taking a bus to Forty Second Street and Broadway and then by walking one block straight ahead and two to the right = κάποιος πάει ἐκεῖ παίρνοντας ἕνα λεωφορεῖο ὣς τὴν Τεσσαρακοστὴ δευτέρα ὁδὸ καὶ τὸ Broadway καὶ κατόπιν περπατώντας ἕνα τετράγωνο ἴσια μπροστὰ καὶ δύο πρὸς τὰ δεξιά.

Τὸ by χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἐκφράσεις κινήσεως, ὅταν ἕνα πρόσωπο περνᾶ

κοντὰ ἀπὸ ἕνα ἄλλο πρόσωπο ἢ ἀντικείμενο καὶ κατόπιν συνεχίζει χωρὶς νὰ σταματήση, π. χ.:

He walked by me without seeing me = αὐτὸς περπάτησε κοντά μου χωρὶς νὰ μὲ δῆ.

Τὸ by χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἐκφράσεις χρόνου, ὅταν φανερώνη ὄχι ἀργότερα ἀπὸ μιὰ ὁρισμένη ὥρα, π. χ.:

We want to finish this book by the end of the year = ἐμεῖς θέλουμε νὰ τελειώσουμε αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο ὡς τὸ τέλος τῆς χρονιᾶς (ὄχι ἀργότερα).
He will be here by Monday = θὰ εἶναι ἐδῶ ὡς τὴν Δευτέρα.

Ἐπίσης μὲ τὸ by ὑπάρχουν κι ὁρισμένες ἐκφράσ εις idioms. Λέμε πάντοτε by car, by bus, by automobile, by plane, by boat, by ship, by air, by land = διὰ ξηρᾶς, ἀλλὰ on foot = μὲ τὰ πόδια καὶ on horseback = πάνω στὸ ἄλογο.

Examples:

They sat side by side reading the paper = κάθησαν πλάϊ - πλάϊ διαβάζοντας τὴν ἐφημερίδα.
Little by little you will learn to speak English = σιγὰ-σιγὰ θὰ μάθης νὰ μιλᾶς ἀγγλικά.
They came to the room one by one = αὐτοὶ ἦλθαν στὸ δωμάτιο ἕνας - ἕνας.
They walked step by step = αὐτοὶ περπάτησαν βῆμα πρὸς βῆμα.
I know him by sight = τὸν ξέρω ἐξ ὄψεως.
I took your book by mistake = πῆρα τὸ βιβλίο σου κατὰ λάθος.
They took me by surprise = μὲ κατέλαβαν ἐξ ἀπήνης (ξαφνικά).
By the way, what are you doing tonight? = μὲ τὴν εὐκαιρία, τί θὰ κάνετε ἀπόψε;
I am going by way of Miami = θὰ πάω ἀπὸ τὸ (διά μέσου) Μαϊάμι.
That is by fact the best movie in town = αὐτὸς εἶναι ἀπὸ ὅ,τι ξέρω ὁ καλύτερος κινηματογράφος τῆς πόλης.
Please, learn these expressions by heart = παρακαλῶ, μάθετε αὐτὲς τὶς ἐκφράσεις ἀπ' ἔξω.

ΤΟ + ΑΠΑΡΕΜΦΑΤΟ

Σὲ μερικὲς γλῶσσες, ἀνάμεσα στὶς ὁποῖες συμπεριλαμβάνεται κι ἡ

νεοελληνική, εἶναι ἀπαραίτητο ὕστερα ἀπὸ ὁρισμένα ρήματα νὰ ἀκολουθῆ Ὑποτακτική. Στὴν ἀγγλικὴ ὅμως γλώσσα στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς ἀντὶ τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς, μπαίνει **to** καὶ Ἀπαρέμφατο. Ὁ τύπος αὐτὸς εἶναι πολὺ συνηθισμένος στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, εἴτε ἡ πρόταση βρίσκεται στὸν Ἐνεστώτα εἴτε στὸν Ἀόριστο.

Examples:

The doctor asks Mrs. Lloyd to sit down = ὁ γιατρὸς ζητάει ἀπὸ τὴν κυρία Λόϋντ νὰ καθήση κάτω.
The doctor asked Mrs. Lloyd to sit down = ὁ γιατρὸς ζήτησε ἀπὸ τὴν κυρία Λόϋντ νὰ καθήση κάτω.

Βάλαμε to μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο καὶ στὶς δυὸ περιπτώσεις, εἴτε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστώτα εἴτε στὸν Ἀόριστο.

Τὰ ρήματα **advise** = συμβουλεύω, **allow** = ἐπιτρέπω, **ask** = ρωτῶ, **beg** = παρακαλῶ, **invite** = προσκαλῶ, **let** = ἀφήνω, **permit** = ἐπιτρέπω, **tell** = λέγω, **urge** = προτρέπω, **want** = θέλω, εἶναι ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα ποὺ συντάσσονται στὰ ἀγγλικὰ μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο. Μετὰ ἀπὸ αὐτὰ τὰ ρήματα θὰ ὑπάρχη μέσα στὴν πρόταση τὸ to κι ὁ ἁπλὸς τύπος ἑνὸς ἄλλου ρήματος (Ἀπαρέμφατο).

Μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα **let** παραλείπεται τὸ **to** κι ἔχουμε μόνο τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ δευτέρου ρήματος, ἀλλὰ χωρὶς τὸ to, π. χ.:

The teacher let her go early = ὁ δάσκαλος τὴν ἄφησε νὰ πάη νωρίς, κι ὄχι the teacher let her to go.
He was sorry to hear that he won' t come = λυπήθηκε νὰ ἀκούση, ὅτι αὐτὸς δὲν θὰ ἔρχονταν.
He hopes to know by tomorrow = ἐλπίζει νὰ ξέρη ὥς αὔριο.
It seems to be impossible = φαίνεται νὰ εἶναι ἀδύνατο.
We shall be sorry to hear that he won' t work at that company = θὰ λυπηθοῦμε νὰ ἀκούσουμε, ὅτι δὲν θὰ ἐργασθῆ σ ἐκείνη τὴν ἑταιρία.
His mother expected him to pass his examinations = ἡ μητέρα του περίμενε νὰ περάση αὐτὸς στὶς ἐξετάσεις του.
Mrs. Brown told Mary not to clean the walls = ἡ κυρία Μπράουν εἶπε στὴ Μαίρη νὰ μὴ καθαρίση τοὺς τοίχους.

The boys only laughed to see the little girl to cry = τὰ ἀγόρια μόνο γέλασαν, ὅταν εἶδαν τὸ μικρὸ κορίτσι νὰ κλαίη.
She asked her mother to leave the room at once = αὐτὴ ζήτησε ἀπὸ τὴ μητέρα της νὰ φύγη ἀπὸ τὸ δωμάτιο ἀμέσως.
Mrs. Brown said «I hope to live to see my son some day a famous doctor». = ἡ κυρία Μπράουν εἶπε «ἐλπίζω νὰ ζήσω, γιὰ νὰ δῶ τὸ γιό μου κάποια μέρα ἕνα φημισμένο γιατρό».
I expect to rain and you must take your raincoat with you = περιμένω νὰ βρέξη καὶ πρέπει νὰ πάρης τὸ ἀδιάβροχό σου μαζί σου.
My mother was very glad to learn that her old friend Mrs. Scott would come to visit her = ἡ μητέρα μου ἦταν πολὺ χαρούμενη, ποὺ ἔμαθε, ὅτι ἡ παλιά της φίλη ἡ κυρία Σκὼτ θὰ ἐρχόταν νὰ τὴν ἐπισκεφθῆ.
Do not promise to do it if you are not sure that you can = μὴν ὑπόσχεσαι νὰ τὸ κάνης, ἐὰν δὲν εἶσαι βέβαιος, ὅτι μπορεῖς.
The last people to speak about her left the room at once = οἱ τελευταῖοι ἄνθρωποι, ποὺ μίλησαν γι' αὐτὴν, ἄφησαν τὸ δωμάτιο ἀμέσως.
He was sorry to leave so early but he had to = αὐτὸς λυπήθηκε, ποὺ ἔφυγε τόσο νωρίς, ἀλλὰ ἔπρεπε.
I am glad to see that the house is clean again = χαίρομαι ποὺ βλέπω, ὅτι τὸ σπίτι εἶναι καθαρὸ πάλι.
They will be very surprised to receive an invitation for the Sunday dance = θὰ ξαφνιαστοῦν πάρα πολὺ νὰ λάβουν μιὰ πρόσκληση γιὰ τὸν κυριακάτικο χορό.

ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗ ΦΩΝΗ

Ἡ **φωνὴ** τοῦ ρήματος μᾶς δείχνει, ἂν τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι ἐκεῖνο, ποὺ ἐνεργεῖ τὴν πράξη τοῦ ρήματος, ἢ ἂν ὁ δράστης εἶναι ἄλλος καὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι ἁπλῶς ἐκεῖνο, ποὺ ὑφίσταται τὶς συνέπειες τῆς πράξης.

Κι ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι ὁ δράστης τῆς πράξης, τότε τὸ ρῆμα βρίσκεται στὴν Ἐνεργητικὴ φωνὴ (active voice). Ὅταν πάλι τὸ ὑποκείμενο δὲν εἶναι ὁ δράστης τῆς πράξης, ἀλλ' αὐτὸς ποὺ ὑφίσταται τὶς συνέπειες της, τότε τὸ ρῆμα βρίσκεται στὴν Παθητικὴ φωνή.

Γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῶν χρόνων καὶ τῶν ἐγκλίσεων τῆς Ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς, ἔχουμε ἤδη ἀσχοληθῆ. Ἂς μιλήσουμε τώρα καὶ γιὰ τὴν Παθητικὴ φωνή. Καὶ πρῶτα - πρῶτα ἄς δοῦμε, πῶς σχηματίζονται οἱ διάφοροι χρόνοι της.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΤΩΝ ΧΡΟΝΩΝ ΤΗΣ ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗΣ ΦΩΝΗΣ

Κατ' ἀρχὴν πρέπει νὰ ποῦμε, ὅτι ὅλοι οἱ χρόνοι τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς εἶναι σύνθετοι. Ἂς δοῦμε λοιπόν, πῶς κλίνεται ὁ κάθε χρόνος χωριστά:

ΕΝΕΣΤΩΣ

(Present Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Ἐνεστῶτα τῆς Ὁριστικῆς στὴν Παθητικὴ φωνή, παίρνουμε τὸν Ἐνεστῶτα τῆς Ὁριστικῆς τοῦ ρήματος be (I am) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ὁ Ἐνεστὼς τῆς Ὁριστικῆς τοῦ love στὴν Παθητικὴ φωνὴ κάνει I am loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice - Present Tense

I am loved
You are loved
he is loved
she is loved
it is loved
we are loved
you are loved
they are loved

ΕΝΕΣΤΩΣ ΔΙΑΡΚΕΙΑΣ

(Present Continuous Tense)

Ὁ Ἐνεστὼς Διαρκείας τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς σχηματίζεται ἀπὸ τὸν Ἐνεστῶτα Διαρκείας τοῦ ρήματος be (I am being) καὶ τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Ἔτσι ὁ Ἐνεστὼς Διαρκείας τοῦ love κάνει I am being loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice - Present Continuous Tense

I am being loved
you are being loved
he is being loved
she is being loved
it is being loved
we are being loved
you are being loved
they are being loved

ΑΟΡΙΣΤΟΣ

(Past Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν 'Αόριστο τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς, παίρνουμε τὸν 'Αόριστο τοῦ ρήματος be (I was) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Ἔτσι ὁ 'Αόριστος τοῦ ρήματος love κάνει I was loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice - Past Tense

I was loved
you were loved
he was loved
she was loved
it was loved
we were loved
you were loved
they were loved

ΑΟΡΙΣΤΟΣ ΔΙΑΡΚΕΙΑΣ

(Past Continuous Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν 'Αόριστο Διαρκείας τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς, παίρνουμε τὸν 'Αόριστο Διαρκείας τοῦ ρήματος be (I was being) καὶ προσθέ-

τουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ὁ Ἀόριστος Διαρκείας τοῦ ρήματος love κάνει I was being loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice - Past Continuous Tense

I was being loved
you were being loved
he was being loved
she was being loved
it was being loved
we were being loved
you were being loved
they were being loved

ΜΕΛΛΩΝ

(The Future Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Μέλλοντα τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς, παίρνουμε τὸν Μέλλοντα τοῦ ρήματος be (I shall be) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ὁ Μέλλων τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς τοῦ ρήματος love κάνει I shall be loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice - The Future Tense

I shall (will) be loved
you will be loved
he will be loved
she will be loved
it will be loved
we shall (will) be loved
you will be loved
they will be loved

ΠΑΡΑΚΕΙΜΕΝΟΣ

(Present Perfect Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Παρακείμενο τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς, παίρνουμε τὸν Παρακείμενο τοῦ ρήματος be (I have been) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ὁ Παρακείμενος τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς τοῦ ρήματος love κάνει I have been loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice

The Present Perfect Tense

I have been loved
you have been loved
he has been loved
she has been loved
it has been loved
we have been loved
you have been loved
they have been loved

ΥΠΕΡΣΥΝΤΕΛΙΚΟΣ

(Past Perfect Tense)

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε τὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς, παίρνουμε τὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο τοῦ ρήματος be (I had been) καὶ προσθέτουμε τὴν Παθήτικὴ Μετοχή. Ἔτσι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος τῆς Παθητικῆς φωνῆς τοῦ ρήματος love κάνει I had been loved καὶ κλίνεται ἔτσι:

Passive Voice

The Past Perfect Tense

I had been loved

you had been loved
he had been loved
she had been loved
it had been loved
we had been loved
you had been loved
they had been loved

VOCABULARY

prodigal	(πρόντιγκαλ)	=	ἄσωτος - η - ο
certain	(σέρτ' ν)	=	κάποιος - α - ο
share	(chερ)	=	μερίδιο
property	(πρόπερτι)	=	ἰδιοκτησία (ownership)
due	(ντιού)	=	ὀφειλόμενος, κατάλληλος
divide	(ντιβάϊντ)	=	διαιρῶ, χωρίζω (separate)
good	(γκουντ)	=	τὸ ἀγαθὸν
waste	(γουέεστ)	=	χέρσος, ἐρημώνω, σπαταλῶ
famine	(φάμιν)	=	λιμός, πείνα (starvation)
pig	(πιγκ)	=	γουρούνι
fill	(φιλ)	=	γεμίζω
stomach	(στάμακ)	=	στομάχι
sense	(σενς)	=	αἴσθηση, νοῦς, λογικὴ
wait on	(γουέϊτ ον)	=	ἐξυπηρετῶ
hire	(hάϊρ)	=	προσλαμβάνω (employ for pay)
servant	(σέρβαντ)	=	ὑπηρέτης
spare	(σπέερ)	=	βάζω στὴ μπάντα, ἐξοικονομῶ
hunger	(hάγκερ)	=	πείνα
arise	(αεράϊζ)	=	σηκώνομαι
sin	(σιν)	=	ἁμαρτία, ἁμαρτάνω
robe	(ρόουμπ)	=	χιτώνας
calf	(καφ)	=	μοσχάρι
kill	(κιλ)	=	σκοτώνω (slay)
merry	(μέρι)	=	χαρούμενος (gay)

dead	(ντεντ)	= νεκρὸς (lifeless)
clever	(κλέβερ)	= ἔξυπνος - η - ο
cleverness	(κλέβερνες)	= ἐξυπνάδα
flow	(φλόου)	= ρέω
Thames	(τέϊμς)	= ὁ Τάμεσις
brunet - brunette	(μπρουνὲτ)	= καστανὸς - ἡ - ὸ
button	(μπάτ' ν)	= κουμπὶ
drawing	(ντρόουϊγκ)	= ζωγραφική, ζωγραφιὰ
shirt	(chepτ)	= πουκάμισο
result	(ριζάλτ)	= ἀποτέλεσμα
election	(ιλέκchev)	= ἐκλογὴ
absence	(άμπσενς)	= ἀπουσία
phone	(φον)	= telephone
dial phone	(ντάϊαλ φον)	= αὐτόματο τηλέφωνο
entertain	(εντιρτέϊν)	= διασκεδάζω (amuse)
entertainment	(εντιρτέϊνμεντ)	= διασκέδαση (amusement)
tip	(τιπ)	= δίνω φιλοδώρημα
cach	(κach)	= εἰσπράττω, ταμεῖο
check	(τchεκ)	= ἐπιταγὴ
come along	(καμ ελογκ)	= ἔρχομαι
slow	(σλόου)	= ἀργὸς - ἡ - ὸ
slowly	(σλόουλι)	= ἀργὰ
cigarette	(σίγκαρετ)	= τσιγάρο
straight	(στρέϊτ)	= κατ' εὐθεῖαν
surprise	(σερπράϊζ)	= ἔκπληξη, ἐκπλήσσω
by the way	(μπάϊ δε γουέϊ)	= μ' αὐτὴ τὴν εὐκαιρία
expression	(εξπρέchev)	= ἔκφραση
heart	(hαpτ)	= καρδιὰ
by heart	(μπάϊ hαpτ)	= ἀπ' ἔξω
advise	(αντβάϊζ)	= συμβουλεύω (counsel)
advice	(αντβάϊς)	= συμβουλὴ
beg	(μπεγκ)	= παρακαλῶ, ζητῶ γιὰ χάρη
permit	(περμὶτ)	= ἐπιτρέπω (allow)
promise	(πρόμιζ)	= ὑπόσχεση, ὑπόσχομαι
freeze	(φρίιζ)	= παγώνω

IRREGULAR VERBS

arise (αεράϊζ)	**arose** (αερόουζ)	**arisen** (αερίζ' ν)	= σηκώνομαι
freeze (φρίιζ)	**froze** (φρόοζ)	**frozen** (φρόζ' ν)	= παγώνω
may (μέϊ)	**might** (μάϊτ)	—	= έχω την άδεια

TEXT

The prodigal son

A certain man had two sons. One day the younger of them said to his father «Father, give me the share of property that is due to me». So the father divided his goods between the sons and not many days after the youngest son sold all his share and went on a journey into a far country, where he wasted all his money. When he had spent all of it, there came a great famine in the land and he began to be in want. He went and joined himself to a citizen of that country, who sent him into fields to feed pigs. He would have liked to fill his stomach with the food the pigs ate and no man gave him anything. When he came to his sense he said «how many hired servants of my father have bread enough to spare and I am dying of hunger. I will arise and go to my father and say to him «Father I have sinned against heaven and in your eyes, and I am not worthy to by called your son any more. Use me as one of your hired servants».

Then, he arose and went to his father, but when he was still a great deal way off, his father saw him and pitied him and ran and fell on his neck and kissed him. Then the son said to him «Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your eyes. I am not worthy to by called your son». But his father said to his servants «Bring out the best robe and put it on him and put a ring in his hand and shoes on his feet, and bring here the calf and kill it and let us eat and be merry, for this my son was dead and is alive again, he was lost and is found». And they began to be merry.

TRANSLATION

Ὁ ἄσωτος γιὸς

Κάποιος ἄνθρωπος εἶχε δυὸ γιοὺς κι ὁ πιὸ νέος ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς εἶπε στὸν πατέρα του. «Πατέρα, δῶσε μου τὸ μερίδιό μου ἀπὸ τὴν περιουσία, ποὺ μοῦ ἀνήκει». Ἔτσι ὁ πατέρας μοίρασε τὰ ἀγαθά του ἀνάμεσα στοὺς γιούς του καὶ ὄχι ὕστερα ἀπὸ πολλὲς μέρες ὁ μικρότερος γιὸς πούλησε ὅλο του τὸ μερίδιο καὶ πῆγε ταξίδι σὲ μακρινὴ χώρα, ὅπου ξόδεψε ὅλα του τὰ χρήματα. Ὅταν τὰ εἶχε ξοδέψει ὅλα, ἦλθε μεγάλος λιμὸς στὴ χώρα κι ἄρχισε νὰ βρίσκεται σὲ ἀνάγκη. Πῆγε καὶ προσκολλήθηκε σὲ ἕναν πολίτη ἐκείνης τῆς χώρας, ποὺ τὸν ἔστειλε στοὺς ἀγρούς του νὰ θρέφη τὰ γουρούνια. Θὰ τοῦ ἄρεζε νὰ γέμιζε τὸ στομάχι του μὲ τὴν τροφὴ τῶν χοίρων, ποὺ ἔτρωγαν, ἀλλὰ κανένας δὲν τοῦ ἔδινε τίποτε.

Ὅταν ἦλθε στὰ λογικά του, εἶπε «Πόσοι ὑπηρέτες, ποὺ ἐργάζονται στὸν πατέρα μου, δὲν ἔχουν ἀρκετὸ ψωμὶ νὰ τὸ ξοδέψουν, κι ἐγὼ πεθαίνω τῆς πείνας. Θὰ σηκωθῶ καὶ θὰ πάω στὸν πατέρα μου καὶ θὰ τοῦ πῶ: «Πατέρα, ἔχω ἁμαρτήσει ἐνώπιον τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ στὰ μάτια σου καὶ δὲν ἀξίζω νὰ ὀνομάζωμαι γιός σου. Χρησιμοποίησέ με σὰν ἕναν ἀπὸ τοὺς μισθωτούς σου ὑπηρέτες».

Κατόπιν σηκώθηκε καὶ πῆγε στὸν πατέρα του, ἀλλὰ ὅταν ἦταν ἀκόμη πολὺ μακριά, ὁ πατέρας του τὸν εἶδε, τὸν λυπήθηκε κι ἔτρεξε, ἔπεσε ἐπάνω στὸ λαιμό του καὶ τὸν φίλησε. Τότε ὁ γιὸς εἶπε σ' αὐτὸν «Πατέρα, ἔχω ἁμαρτήσει ἐνώπιον τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ στὰ μάτια σου καὶ δὲν ἀξίζω νὰ ὀνομάζωμαι γιός σου». Ἀλλὰ ὁ πατέρας εἶπε στοὺς ὑπηρέτες του: «Φέρτε τὸν καλύτερο χιτώνα καὶ φορέστε τον σ' αὐτὸν καὶ βάλτε ἕνα δαχτυλίδι στὸ χέρι του καὶ ὑποδήματα στὰ πόδια του καὶ φέρτε τὸ μοσχάρι (τὸν μόσχον τὸν σιτευτόν), καὶ σκοτῶστε το (σφάξτε το) καὶ ἂς φᾶμε καὶ νὰ εἴμαστε εὐτυχισμένοι, γιατὶ αὐτὸς ὁ γιός μου ἦταν νεκρὸς καὶ ζῆ ξανά, (ἀναστήθηκε), ἦταν χαμένος καὶ βρέθηκε». Κι αὐτοὶ ἄρχισαν νὰ εἶναι εὐτυχισμένοι (νά διασκεδάζουν).

EXERCISE 247

CONVERSATION

How many sons did the man have?
What did the younger son ask him?

What did he do?
Where did he go?
What did he do with his money?
What work did he do when he spent all his money and was hungry?
What did he remember?
Was he sorry for what he did?
Did he go back?
What did his father do?
Did he kiss him?
Were they merry again?

EXERCISE 248

Συμπληρῶστε which ἤ what στὰ κενά.

...is the name of this book?
...is your first name?
...is the building opposite the library?
...is the bus fare?
...is that man's surname?
...is the price of the theater ticket?
...is your homework for tomorrow?
...is the best way to go to the theater?
...was the result of the election?
...was the reason for your absence?
...did the bus driver say?
...are you eating now?
...building across the street is the library?
...language does he speak, English or Spanish?
...kind of music do you like, classical or popular?
...is more comfortable, a bus or a streetcar?
...man in the class is Mr. Brown?
...student in the class understood the lecture?
...book are you reading?
...book (of the three from the library) are you reading?

EXERCISE 249

Συμπληρῶστε some ἢ any στὰ κενά:

There are . . . magazines on the table.
There aren' t . . . magazines on the table.
There is . . . paper in the desk.
There isn' t . . . paper in the desk.
Would you like . . . dessert now?
Did you buy . . . stamps?
She didn' t have . . . mistakes on her paper.
You don' t need . . . coat today.
His father gave him . . . money.
I met . . . Americans there.

EXERCISE 250

'Απαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις καταφατικὰ κι ἀρνητικά.

Is there any good music on the radio?
Do you have any money for a trip?
Is there any sugar in the house?
Do you have any time to write?
Are there any classes on Saturday?
Do you have some paper for dictation?
Do you need any stamps?
Did you receive some letters today?
Did you buy any vegetables for dinner?
Are there some seats in the center of the theater?

EXERCISE 251

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ no ἢ any:

He doesn' t notice . . . difference in the pronunciation.
He notices . . . difference in their pronunciation.
The room has . . . windows in it.

The room does not have ... windows in it.
They don't have ... fireplace in their house.
They have ... fireplace in their house.
We have ... time for that now.
We don't have ... time for that now.
There is ... heat in the building.
There is not ... heat in the building.
There isn't ... time like the present.
There is ... time like the present.
There are ... students absent today.
There aren't ... students absent today.
We have ... hot water today.
We don't have ... hot water today.
I received ... letters yesterday.
I didn't receive ... letters yesterday.
She asks ... questions in class.
She does not ask ... questions in class.

EXERCISE 252

Γράψτε τὶς προτάσεις ἀρνητικές:

The sun shines during the day.
The stars shine during the night.
Water freezes at 32° Fa.
Mary can speak Spanish.
She knows two thousand Spanish words.
Miss Green often listens to the radio.
She goes home for lunch.
Harry wants to go to the movies.
I wash my hands in cold water.

EXERCISE 253

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Do you sometimes have a headache?

Do you ever have a sore throat?
Do you often have a cold?
Do you have high blood pressure or low?
Do you like to go on a digest diet?
Does a doctor usually wear a white coat?
Do you pay your doctor at the end of the month?
How much do you pay for a visit to a doctor?
Who fills the prescription for you?
Do you often see your doctor?

EXERCISE 254

Συμπληρῶστε ἕνα Ἀπαρέμφατο στὸ τέλος κάθε προτάσεως (to καὶ ὁ ἁπλὸς τύπος τοῦ ρήματος).

Example:

I asked her **to come in.**

The nurse asked Mrs. Lloyd....
The doctor told her ...
He allows her ... the telephone.
She allowed her ... the telephone.
The doctor asks her ... her mouth.
The doctor told her ... down.
He tells her ...
He told her ...
He advises her ...
He advised her ...
He wants her ...
He wanted her ...
He urges her ... whether she isn' t better.
He urged her ... whether she wasn' t better.
Robert invites her ... to a party.
He invited Mary ... to a dance.
I beg you ... these sentences many times.
I begged you ... these sentences many times.
I asked her ... talking.

EXERCISE 255

'Απαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις μ' ἕνα 'Απαρέμφατο:

Did Robert ask Mary to dance?
Did she ask him to wait for her?
Who advised you to enter the class?
Does your teacher advise you. to study?
Do you want me to help you?
Do you want them to go with you?
Did you let her use your book?
Did she tell the druggist to fill her prescription?
When did he tell us to buy that book?

EXERCISE 256

Συμπληρῶστε τὸν 'Αόριστο Διαρκείας στὰ κενά:

Mrs. Lloyd ... (go) to see the doctor when I met her.
She ... (read) a magazine while she ... (wait).
She ... (sit) in the waiting room when the doctor arrived.
He ... (take) her temperature when the nurse came in.
He ... (listen) to her chest when he said «take a deep breath».
He ... (examine) her chest when the phone rang.
While the druggist ... (fill) her prescription she called up a friend.
She ... (sleep) while I ... (write) those letters.
It began to rain while I ... (wait) for the bus.
People ... (get on) the bus while others ... (get off).

EXERCISE 257

Γράψτε στὰ κενὰ τὸν ἁπλὸν 'Αόριστο ἢ τὸν 'Αόριστο Διαρκείας:

I ... (write) a letter last night.
I ... (wrote) a letter last night when they came.

The doctor . . . (give) her a shot for her cold.
The doctor . . . (give) her a shot when she fainted.
The sun . . . (shine) brightly all morning.
The sun . . . (shine) brightly when we left.
It . . . (rain) hard last night.
It . . . (rain) hard last night when we arrived.
I . . . (walk) down Madison Avenue to the theater.
I . . . (walk) down Madison Avenue when you drove by me.
We . . . (take) a streetcar to go downtown yesterday.
We . . . (ride) on a streetcar when you passed by in your car.
She . . . (have) her dinner early last night.

XXVI

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 247

CONVERSATION

The man had two sons.
The younger son asked him to give him his share of property.
He sold all his share and went on a journey.
He went into a far country.
He spent all of, it.
He was feeding pigs into fields.
He remembered his father.
Yes, he was very sorry for that.
Yes, he went back to his father.
His father said to his servants: «Bring out the best robe and put it on him and put a ring in his hand and shoes on his feet, and bring here the calf and kill it and let us eat and be merry for this my son was dead and is alive again, he was lost and is found.
Yes, he kissed him.
Yes, they began to be merry again.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 248

What is the name of this book?
What is your first name?
What is the building opposite the library?
What is the bus fare?
What is that man's surname?
What is the price of the theater tickets?
What is your homework for tomorrow?

Which is the best way to go to the theater?
What was the result of the election?
What was the reason for your absence?
What did the bus driver say?
What are you eating now?
Which building across the street is the library?
Which language does he speak, English or Spanish?
Which kind of music do you like, classical or popular?
Which is more comfortable, a bus or a streetcar?
Which man in the class is Mr. Brown?
Which student in the class understood the lecture?
What book are you reading?
Which book of the three from the library are you reading?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 249

There are some magazines on the table.
There aren't any magazines on the table.
There is some paper in the desk.
There isn't any paper in the desk.
Would you like any dessert now?
Did you buy any stamps?
She didn't have any mistakes on her paper.
You don't need any coat today
His father gave him some money.
I met some Americans there.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 250

Yes, there is some good music on the radio. No, there is not any good music on radio.
Yes, I have some money for a trip. No, I don't have any money for a trip.
Yes, there is some sugar in the house. No, there is not any sugar in the house.
Yes, I have some time to write. No, I have not any time to write.

Yes, there are some classes on Saturday. No, there aren't any classes on Saturday.
Yes, I have some paper for dictation. No, I don't have any paper for dictation.
Yes, I need some stamps. No, I don't need any stamps.
Yes, I received some letters today. No, I did not receive any letters today.
Yes, I bought some vegetables for dinner. No, I did not buy any vegetables for dinner.
Yes, there are some seats in the center of the theater. No, there are not any seats in the center of the theater.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 251

He doesn't notice any difference in their pronunciation.
He notices no difference in their pronunciation.
The room has no windows in it.
The room does not have any windows in it.
They don't have any fireplace in their house.
They have no fireplace in their house.
We have no time for that now.
We don't have any time for that now.
There is no heat in the building.
There is not any heat in the building.
There isn't any time like the present.
There is no time like the present.
There are no students absent today.
There aren't any students absent today.
We have no hot water today.
We don't have any hot water today.
I received no letters yesterday.
I didn't receive any letters yesterday.
She asks no questions in class.
She does not ask any questions in class.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 252

The sun does not shine during the day.

The stars don't shine during the night.
Water does not freeze at 32 Fa.
Mary can not speak Spanish.
She does not know two thousand Spanish words.
Miss Green does not often listen to the radio.
She does not go home for lunch.
Harry does not want to go to the movies.
I don't wash my hands in cold water.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 253

Yes, I sometimes have a headache.
No, I never have a sore throat.
Yes, I often have a cold.
I have low blood pressure.
Yes, I like to go on a light diet.
Yes, he usually wears a white coat.
No, I don't pay him at the end of the month.
I pay one hundred drachmas.
The druggist fills the prescription for me.
No, I don't often see him.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 254

The nurse asked Mrs. Lloyd to come in.
The doctor told her to sit down.
He allows her to use the telephone.
He allowed her to use the telephone.
The doctor asks her to open her mouth.
The doctor told her to sit down.
He tells her to sit down.
He told her to stand up.
He advises her to rest.
He advised her to stay in.
He wants her to write some letters.
He wanted her to leave the house.
He urges her to come back if she isn't better.

He urged her to see him again if she wasn't better.
Robert invites her to go to a party.
He invited Mary to go to a dance.
I beg you to repeat these sentences many times.
I begged you to write those sentences many times.
I asked her to stop talking.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 255

Yes, he asked her to dance.
Yes, she asked him to wait for her.
Mrs. Brown advised me to enter this class.
Yes, he advises me to study.
Yes, I want you to help me.
No, I don't want them to go with us.
Yes, I let her use my book.
Yes, she told the druggist to fill her prescription.
He told us to buy that book yesterday.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 256

Mrs. Lloyd was going to see her doctor when I met her.
She was reading a magazine while she was waiting.
She was sitting in the waiting room when the doctor arrived.
He was taking her temperature when the nurse came in.
He was listening to her chest when he said «take a deep breath».
He was examining her chest when the phone rang.
While the drugging was filling her prescription she called up a friend.
She was sleeping while I was writing those letters.
It began to rain while I was waiting for the bus.
People were getting on the bus while others were getting off.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 257

I wrote a letter last night.
I was writing a letter last night when they came.
The doctor gave her a shot for her cold.
The doctor was giving her a shot when she fainted.
The sun shone brightly all morning.
The sun was shining brightly when we left.
It rained hard last night.
It was raining hard last night when we arrived.
I walked down Madison Avenue to the theater.
I was walking down Madison Avenue when you drove by me.
He took a streetcar to go downtown yesterday.
We were riding on a streetcar when you passed by in your car.
She had her dinner early last night.

NEITHER

Τὸ neither (νίδερ) = μήτε καὶ τὸ either (ίδερ) = εἴτε, μπαίνουν συνήθως μετὰ ἀπὸ μιὰ ἀρνητικὴ πρόταση. Τὸ either ἀκολουθεῖ ἕνα ρῆμα, ποὺ εἶναι σὲ ἄρνηση μὲ τὸ not καὶ τὸ neither προηγεῖται ἑνὸς καταφατικοῦ ρήματος. Γιατὶ ἂν εἴχαμε τὸ neither μαζὶ μὲ τὴν λέξη not σὲ μιὰ πρόταση, θὰ εἴχαμε δυὸ ἀρνήσεις μαζί, ποὺ μᾶς κάνουν μιὰ κατάφαση. Συνήθως μετὰ τὸ neither καὶ either ὑπάρχει τὸ nor, μήτε... μήτε ... ἢ εἴτε... εἴτε.

Examples:

They aren't tired. I am not either. Neither am I = αὐτοὶ δὲν εἶναι κουρασμένοι οὔτε κι ἐγὼ εἶμαι. Μήτε εἶμαι κι ἐγώ.

Τὸ either μπαίνει μετὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα, ποὺ βρίσκεται σὲ ἄρνηση. Τὸ neither μπαίνει στὴν ἀρχὴ καὶ σὲ μία καταφατικὴ πρόταση.

Charles was not absent = ὁ Charles δὲν ἀπουσίαζε.
I was not either — Neither was I.
Robert does not like Mary = ὁ Robert δὲν συμπαθεῖ τὴν Μαίρη.
I don't either — Neither do I.

'Εὰν οἱ δύο προτάσεις ἑνωθοῦν σὲ μία, τότε συνδέονται μὲ τὸ and.

She didn't see that movie and neither did I
καὶ
she didn't see that movie and I didn't either.

Στὸ δεύτερο μέρος τῆς πρότάσεως, ποὺ εἶναι καὶ σύντομο, δὲν ἐπαναλαμβάνουμε τὸ ρῆμα. Ἔχουμε τὸ do γιὰ ἕνα ρῆμα ποὺ βρίσκεται στὸ πρῶτο, δεύτερο πρόσωπο ἑνικοῦ καὶ στὸν πληθυντικὸ καὶ τὸ does στὸ τρίτο ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο, did, γιὰ τὸν 'Αόριστο καὶ have γιὰ τὸν Παρακείμενο, has γιὰ τὸν Παρακείμενο ἀλλὰ γιὰ τὸ τρίτο ἑνικὸ πρόσωπο. Σ' ὅλα αὐτὰ ὑπάρχει ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος τῆς πρώτης προτάσεως, αὐτὸ ἐξηγοῦμε, ἀλλὰ γράφουμε τὸ do - does, did, have καὶ has.

Examples:

In spring the weather is neither very hot nor very cold = τὴν ἄνοιξη ὁ καιρὸς δὲν εἶναι μήτε πολὺ ζεστὸς μήτε πολὺ κρύος.
Neither Tom nor George has much money = μήτε ὁ Τὸμ μήτε ὁ Γιῶργος ἔχουν πολλὰ χρήματα.
Tom hasn't much money. Neither has Harry = ὁ Τὸμ δὲν ἔχει πολλὰ χρήματα. Μήτε ὁ Χάρρυ ἔχει.
Neither Bill nor John went to school yesterday = Οὔτε ὁ Bill οὔτε ὁ John πῆγαν στὸ σχολεῖο χθές.
Bill didn't go to school yesterday. John didn't either = ὁ Bill δὲν πῆγε στὸ σχολεῖο χθές. Καὶ ὁ John δὲν πῆγε.
Neither John nor George have been to Greece = οὔτε ὁ John οὔτε ὁ George ἔχουν πάει στὴν 'Ελλάδα.
Robert has not been to Greece. David has not either ἢ Neither has David.
John will have neither tomato soup nor vegetables = ὁ John δὲν θὰ ἔχῃ μήτε ντοματόσουπα μήτε λαχανικά.
John won't have tomato soup. He won't have vegetables either ἢ Neither he will have vegetables.
Mr. Miller likes neither the movies nor the television = στὸν κύριο Μίλλερ δὲν ἀρέσει οὔτε ὁ κινηματογράφος οὔτε ἡ τελεόραση. Mr. Miller does not like the movies. He does not like television either καὶ Neither he likes television.

My brother does not want me to help him with his homework. Neither does my little sister... ἤ my little sister doesn't either=ὁ μικρὸς ἀδελφός μου δὲν θέλει νὰ τὸν βοηθήσω μὲ τὴν γραφική του ἐργασία. Μήτε θέλει κι ἡ μικρή μου ἀδελφή.

He can't read this letter, neither can I ἤ I can't either = αὐτὸς δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ διαβάση αὐτὸ τὸ γράμμα, μήτε κι ἐγὼ μπορῶ.

Potatoes won't grow here. Neither will roses, ἤ roses won't either = οἱ πατάτες δὲν θὰ μεγαλώσουν ἐδῶ, μήτε καὶ τὰ τριαντάφυλλα.

These aren't my books neither are those ἤ those aren't either = αὐτὰ δὲν εἶναι τὰ βιβλία μου, μήτε ἐκεῖνα εἶναι.

A chair can't stand on three legs, neither can a table, καὶ a table can't either = μία καρέκλα δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ σταθῇ σὲ τρία πόδια. μήτε κι ἕνα τραπέζι.

He wasn't late neither was I. I was not either = αὐτὸς δὲν ἄργησε, μήτε κι ἐγώ.

We could not remember his name. Neither could they καὶ They could not either = ἐμεῖς δὲν μπορούσαμε νὰ θυμηθοῦμε τὸ ὄνομά του, οὔτε κι αὐτοί.

I have not any more money, neither does my wife καὶ my wife does not either = δὲν ἔχω ἄλλα χρήματα πιὰ μήτε ἔχει κι ἡ γυναίκα μου.

I have never been to Italy. Neither has my cousin. My cousin has not either = δὲν ἔχω πάει ποτὲ στὴν Ἰταλία, μήτε ἔχει πάει κι ὁ ἐξάδελφός μου.

This clock does not show the right time. Neither does my watch καὶ my watch does not either = αὐτὸ τὸ ρολόϊ δὲν δείχνει τὴν σωστὴ ὥρα, μήτε καὶ τὸ δικό μου ρολόϊ.

The maid never finishes her work on time, neither does the cook καὶ the cook doesn't either = ἡ ὑπηρέτρια ποτὲ δὲν τελειώνει τὴ δουλειά της στὴν ὥρα της μήτε κι ἡ μαγείρισσα.

That young man could not come neither could his sister. His sister could not either = ἐκεῖνος ὁ νεαρὸς δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ ἔλθη, μήτε μποροῦσε νὰ ἔλθη κι ἡ ἀδελφή του.

They had no one of their meals on time, neither had their friends καὶ their friends did not have either = δὲν εἶχαν κανένα ἀπὸ τὰ γεύματά τους στὴν ὥρα τους, μήτε κι οἱ φίλοι τους.

SOME . . . AS, AS . . . AS, SO . . . AS.

Μὲ τὸ same . . . as γίνεται σύγκριση, ὅταν ἔχουμε ὁμοιότητα.

Τὸ same . . . as, χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικὰ ἢ κι ὅταν ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ δὲν ὑπάρχη, ἀλλὰ τὸ ἐννοοῦμε.

Examples:

Virginia has the same address as Mrs. Miller = ἡ Virginia ἔχει τὴν ἴδια διεύθυνση μὲ τὴν κυρία Miller.
My dress is not the same as yours = τὸ φόρεμά μου δὲν εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο μὲ τὸ δικό σου.
My house is the same as yours = τὸ σπίτι μου εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο μὲ τὸ δικό σου.
The high school was in the same building as the elementary school = τὸ γυμνάσιο ἦταν στὸ ἴδιο κτίριο μὲ τὸ δημοτικό.

Σύγκριση γίνεται καὶ μὲ τὸ as . . . as.

Χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ μὲ ἐπίθετα κι ἐπιρρήματα σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις.

Examples:

Virginia is as tall as Robert = ἡ Virginia εἶναι τόσο ψηλὴ ὅσο ὁ Robert.
The first lesson is as difficult as the second lesson = τὸ πρῶτο μάθημα εἶναι τόσο δύσκολο ὅσο καὶ τὸ δεύτερο.
You can go there as quickly by bus as by train = μπορεῖς νὰ πᾶς ἐκεῖ τόσο γρήγορα μὲ τὸ λεωφορεῖο ὅσο καὶ μὲ τὸ τραῖνο.
Your bags are not as heavy as mine = οἱ τσάντες σου δὲν εἶναι τόσο βαριές, ὅσο οἱ δικές μου.
John is not as strong as his brother = ὁ John δὲν εἶναι τόσο δυνατὸς ὅσο ὁ ἀδελφός του.

Σύγκριση ἐπίσης γίνεται καὶ μὲ τὸ so . . . as, μὲ ἐπίθετα κι ἐπιρρήματα μετὰ ἀπὸ ἕνα ἀρνητικὸ ρῆμα.

Examples:

This book was not so useful as I had hoped = αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο δὲν εἶναι τόσο χρήσιμο ὅσο εἶχα ἐλπίσει.
Will you be so kind as to help me with this heavy box? θὰ εἶσαι τόσο εὐγενικός, γιὰ νὰ μὲ βοηθήσης μ' αὐτὸ τὸ βαρὺ κουτί;
Mary is as a good student as Ann = ἡ Μαίρη εἶναι τόσο καλὴ μαθήτρια ὅσο κι ἡ Ἄννα.
He has the same name as my brother = αὐτὸς ἔχει τὸ ἴδιο ὄνομα ὅπως κι ὁ ἀδελφός μου.
It is not so late as I had thought = δὲν εἶναι τόσο ἀργὰ ὅσο εἶχα σκεφθῆ.
He is not so young as I am = δὲν εἶναι τόσο νέος ὅσο κι ἐγώ.

SO, SO NOT

Μὲ τὸ so συνήθως ἔχουμε μιὰ σύντομη ἀπάντηση σὲ μιὰ ἐρώτηση. Ἐκεῖ δηλαδὴ ποὺ ἀπαντοῦμε σὲ μιὰ σύντομη ἀπάντηση μὲ τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ μὲ do, does ἢ did, ἔχουμε ἄλλες ἀπαντήσεις μὲ τὸ ρῆμα, ὑποκείμενο καὶ so, ἢ καὶ so not.

Examples:

Are we on the right road?= εἴμαστε ἐμεῖς στὸ σωστὸ δρόμο;
I think so = ἔτσι νομίζω (I think we are on the right road).
Ἡ δεύτερη ἀπάντηση εἶναι ἡ κανονικὴ ἀλλὰ ἡ πρώτη εἶναι πολὺ συνηθισμένη καὶ σύντομη.
Do you think George will pay the money back? = νομίζεις, ὅτι ὁ Γιῶργος θὰ πληρώση τὰ χρήματα πίσω; I don't suppose so = δὲν τὸ ὑποθέτω. (I don't suppose he will pay the money back = δὲν ὑποθέτω, ὅτι θὰ πληρώση τὰ χρήματα πίσω).
Is it going to rain? = θὰ βρέξη; I hope not = ἐλπίζω ὄχι (I hope it is not going to rain = ἐλπίζω, ὅτι δὲν θὰ βρέξη).
Is the weather going to stay fine? = θὰ μείνη ὁ καιρὸς καλός; I am afraid not = φοβοῦμαι ὅτι ὄχι (I am afraid it is not going to stay fine).
You will have to eat less if you want to get your weight down = θὰ πρέπει νὰ τρῶς λιγώτερο, ἄν θέλης νὰ λιγοστέψης τὸ βάρος σου. I

suppose so = ἔτσι ὑποθέτω ἢ I am afraid so = ἔτσι φοβοῦμαι. (I suppose I shall have to eat less if I want to get my weight down).

Mr. Brown has gone to New York = ὁ κύριος Μπράουν ἔχει πάει στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη. So I have heard = ἔτσι ἔχω ἀκούσει ἢ So I have been told = ἔτσι μοῦ ἔχουν πῆ. (I have heard that he has gone to New York).

Mrs. Green is learning to drive = ἡ κυρία Γκρὴν μαθαίνει νὰ ὁδηγῆ.

So her husband told me = ἔτσι μοῦ εἶπε ὁ σύζυγός της. (Her husband told me that she was learning to drive a car).

Do you have to write any other exercises? = ἔχεις νὰ γράψης καθόλου ἄλλες ἀσκήσεις; I am afraid so = ἔτσι φοβοῦμαι, I think so = ἔτσι νομίζω. (I think I have some more exercises to write).

Do you have to leave early? = πρέπει νὰ φύγης νωρίς; I am afraid so = ἔτσι φοβοῦμαι.

ΧΑΡΑΚΤΗΡΙΣΤΙΚΑ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ

Τὸ ρῆμα, τὸ καθαυτὸ ρῆμα, δὲν ἔχει οὔτε γένος, οὔτε πτώση. Ἔχει ὅμως ἄλλα χαρακτηριστικά: πρόσωπο, ἀριθμό, μορφή, φωνή, ἔγκλιση καὶ χρόνο.

Γιὰ τὸ πρόσωπο καὶ τὸν ἀριθμὸ μιλήσαμε πρωτύτερα ἐξετάζοντας τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ καὶ τὴν ἀντωνυμία. Τώρα θὰ ἐξετάσουμε τὴ μορφή, τὴν ἔγκλιση καὶ τὸ χρόνο, χαρακτηριστικὰ ποὺ μόνο τὰ ρήματα ἔχουν.

I. ΜΟΡΦΗ
(F o r m)

Ἡ μ ο ρ φ ὴ (form), μὲ τὴν ὁποία ἐμφανίζεται ἕνα ρῆμα, εἶναι τὸ ξεχωριστὸ χαρακτηριστικὸ τῆς ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσας. Γιὰ νὰ κατανοήσουμε καλύτερα, ποιὰ ἀποστολὴ ἐκπληρώνει ἡ μορφὴ στὰ ἀγγλικὰ ρήματα, ἂς ἀρχίσουμε ἀπὸ ἕνα παράδειγμα.

Ἔχουμε τοὺς τύπους he sings, he is singing καὶ he does sing. Ἐκ πρώτης ὄψεως καὶ μὲ τοὺς τρεῖς αὐτοὺς τύπους λέμε τὸ ἴδιο πρᾶγμα, ὅτι δηλαδὴ «αὐτὸς τραγουδάει». Καὶ οἱ τρεῖς αὐτοὶ τύποι τοῦ ρήματος ἐκφράζουν τὸν ἴδιο χρόνο (Ἐνεστώτα-Present), τὴν ἴδια ἔγκλιση (Ὁριστικὴ-Indicative), τὴν ἴδια φωνὴ (ἐνεργητικὴ-active), τὸ ἴδιο πρόσωπο (τρίτο-third), τὸν ἴδιον ἀριθμὸ (ἑνικὸ-singular), κι εἶναι καὶ οἱ τρεῖς τύποι ἀπὸ ρῆμα ἀμετάβατο (intransitive). Ὡστόσο μιὰ προσεκτικότερη παρατήρηση θὰ μᾶς ἔπειθε, ὅτι

ὑπάρχουν διαφορὲς ἀνάμεσα στοὺς τρεῖς αὐτοὺς τύπους, καὶ μάλιστα διαφορὲς ὄχι ἐπουσιώδεις.

Ὅταν λέμε he sings, δὲν θέλουμε νὰ τονίσουμε, ὅτι τὸ τραγούδι ἀντηχεῖ αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμή, ἀλλ' ὅτι αὐτὸς συνηθίζει νὰ τραγουδάη, ὅτι δηλαδὴ τὸ τραγούδι, ἡ πράξη, ποὺ ἐκφράζει τὸ ρῆμα, εἶναι κάτι τὸ συνηθισμένο γι' αὐτόν. Αὐτὴ λοιπὸν ἡ μορφὴ λέγεται ἁ π λ ὴ μ ο ρ φ ὴ τ ο ῦ ρ ή μ α τ ο ς (simple form).

Ὅταν ἀντίθετα λέμε he is singing, ἐκεῖνο, ποὺ θέλουμε νὰ τονίσουμε, εἶναι, ὅτι αὐτὸς τραγουδάει τώρα, αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμή. Ἡ μορφὴ αὐτὴ λέγεται μ ο ρ φ ὴ σ υ ν ε χ ε ί α ς ἢ δ ι α ρ κ ε ί α ς ἢ π ρ ο ο δ ε υ τ ι κ ὴ μ ο ρ φ ὴ (progressive or continuous form).

Τέλος ἔχουμε καὶ μιὰ ἄλλη μορφή, ποὺ σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα do καὶ ποὺ κάνει he does sing. Ἡ μορφὴ αὐτὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται τόσο γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν ἀρνητικῶν κι ἐρωτηματικῶν προτάσεων ὅσο καὶ γιὰ ἔμφαση. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ λέγεται ἐ μ φ α τ ι κ ὴ μορφὴ (emphatic form or do form).

Ἡ ἁπλὴ μορφὴ τοῦ ρήματος (simple form) εἶναι ἡ πιὸ παλιὰ ἀπ' ὅλες. Συναντᾶται σ' ὅλους τοὺς χρόνους τοῦ ρήματος. Ὅσον ἀφορᾶ τὸ σχηματισμό της, μιλήσαμε γι' αὐτήν, ὅταν ἀσχοληθήκαμε μὲ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν χρόνων τῶν ρημάτων.

Ἡ προδευτικὴ μορφὴ ἢ μορφὴ συνεχείας ἢ διαρκείας (progressive or continuous form) σχηματίζεται ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα be καὶ τὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα, π. χ.:

He is singing.

Ἡ μορφὴ αὐτὴ προέκυψε ἀπὸ μιὰ ἔκφραση, ποὺ τὴ συναντούσαμε στὰ παλιότερα ἀγγλικὰ καὶ ποὺ περιελάμβανε τὸ ρῆμα be, τὴν πρόθεση on καὶ τὸ γερούνδιο, π. χ.:

He is on singing.

Σιγὰ-σιγὰ ἡ πρόθεση ἐξασθένησε κι ἔφυγε, ἀφοῦ παραχώρησε τὴ θέση της στὸ ἀόριστο ἄρθρο κι ἔτσι ἔγινε:

He is a singing,
He is a-singing καὶ τελικὰ
He is singing.

Τὴν προοδευτικὴ μορφὴ τὴν συναντοῦμε σ' ὅλους τοὺς χρόνους τῆς ἐνεργη-

τικῆς φωνῆς, ἀλλὰ μόνο στὸν Ἐνεστώτα καὶ στὸν Ἀόριστο τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς. Γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμό της σὲ κάθε χρόνο μιλήσαμε, ὅταν ἀσχοληθήκαμε εἰδικὰ μὲ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν χρόνων. Τώρα περιοριζόμαστε νὰ ποῦμε, ὅτι ἡ προοδευτικὴ μορφὴ σχηματίζεται ἀπὸ τοὺς διαφόρους τύπους τοῦ ρήματος be (is, was, will be, has been, is being, etc.) κι ἀπὸ τοὺς διαφόρους τύπους τῆς Μετοχῆς τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

Τέλος ἡ **ἐμφατικὴ μορφὴ** (emphatic form or do form) σχηματίζεται ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ do καὶ τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο π. χ.: he does sing.

Ἐμφατικὴ μορφή πού, ὅπως εἴδαμε, τὴν χρησιμοποιοῦμε ὄχι μόνο γιὰ ἔμφαση ἀλλὰ καὶ γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τοῦ ἀρνητικοῦ κι ἐρωτηματικοῦ τύπου τῶν ρημάτων, συναντᾶμε μόνο στὸν Ἐνεστώτα καὶ στὸν Ἀόριστο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς.

II. ΦΩΝΗ
(Voice)

Στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ἔχουμε δυὸ φωνές, τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ (active voice) καὶ τὴν παθητικὴ φωνὴ (passive voice).

Ἐνεργητικὴ φωνὴ (active voice) ἔχουμε, ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο κάνη τὴν ἐνέργεια ποὺ δείχνει τὸ ρῆμα, π. χ.:

Edgar struck Stanley.
The boy kicked the ball.

Παθητικὴ φωνὴ (passive voice) ἔχουμε. ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο δέχεται τὴν ἐνέργεια, ποὺ δείχνει τὸ ρῆμα, π. χ.:

Stanley was struck by Edgar.
The ball was kicked by the boy.

Τὰ συνδετικὰ ρήματα (linking verbs) θεωροῦνται, ὅτι ἀνήκουν στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ φωνή, π. χ.:

You are a student.
Mary seems tired.

ΜΕΤΑΤΡΟΠΗ ΡΗΜΑΤΩΝ ΑΠΟ ΤΗΝ ΕΝΕΡΓΗΤΙΚΗ ΣΤΗΝ ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗ ΦΩΝΗ

Ἀπὸ τὰ παραδείγματα, ποὺ ἀναφέρουμε πιὸ κάτω, φαίνεται, ὅτι εἶναι εὔκολο νὰ μετατρέψουμε μιὰ φράση, ποὺ ἔχει ρῆμα στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ φωνή, σὲ μιὰ ἄλλη φράση, ποὺ τὸ ρῆμα της βρίσκεται στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή. Εἶναι μ' ἄλλα λόγια εὔκολο νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική.

Ἐνεργητική: Edgar struck Stanley.
Παθητική: Stanley was struck by Edgar.

Ἐνεργητική: The boy kicked the ball.
Παθητική: The ball was kicked by the boy.

Ἂν προσέξουμε καλύτερα, θὰ δοῦμε, πὼς κι οἱ δυὸ ἀπὸ τὶς παραπάνω προτάσεις μὲ ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη ἔχουν ρήματα μεταβατικά. Πραγματικὰ μόνο ρήματα, ποὺ εἶναι μεταβατικὰ (transitive) στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ φωνή, δηλαδὴ ποὺ μποροῦν νὰ ἔχουν ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (direct object), μποροῦν νὰ μετατραποῦν στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή.

Ἂς πάρουμε δυὸ προτάσεις, ποὺ ἀποτελοῦνται ἀπὸ ὑποκείμενο-ρῆμα-ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (subject-verb-direct object):

Raymond killed Edgar.
The flower needs sun.

Ὅταν αὐτὲς τὶς δυὸ προτάσεις τὶς μετατρέψουμε στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, τὸ ἀντικείμενό τους (object) θὰ γίνη ὑποκείμενο (subject) καὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενο θὰ γίνη ἐμπρόθετος προσδιορισμὸς μὲ τὸ by (object of the preposition by), ποὺ δείχνει τὸ ποιητικὸ αἴτιο, δηλαδὴ αὐτὸν ποὺ ἔκανε τὴν ἐνέργεια, ποὺ δέχθηκε τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ παθητικοῦ ρήματος. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

Edgar was killed by Raymond.
Sun is needed by the flower.

Τὸ ποιητικὸ αἴτιο ὅμως πολλὲς φορὲς παραλείπεται, συχνότερα μάλιστα,

ὅταν ἐκφράζεται μὲ προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία τοῦ γ΄ προσώπου. Ἀλλὰ τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι ἀδύνατο νὰ παραλειφθῆ. Ἐπειδὴ δὲ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῶν προτάσεων μὲ παθητικὴ σύνταξη προέκυψε ἀπὸ τὸ ἀντικείμενο τῶν ρημάτων μὲ ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη, εἶναι φανερό, ὅτι δὲν εἶναι δυνατὸν νὰ ἔχουμε παθητικὴ σύνταξη, ἂν στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη δὲν ἔχουμε ἀντικείμενο, δηλαδὴ ἂν τὸ ρῆμα δὲν εἶναι μεταβατικό. Νὰ λοιπὸν γιατὶ λέμε, ὅτι μόνο τὰ μεταβατικὰ ἐνεργητικὰ ρήματα μποροῦν νὰ μετατραποῦν στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή.

Γιὰ τὴν ἔννοια τῶν μεταβατικῶν καὶ ἀμεταβάτων ρημάτων ἔχουμε μιλήσει ἄλλοτε. Ἐδῶ νομίζουμε σκόπιμο νὰ προσθέσουμε, ὅτι ὁρισμένα ρήματα, ποὺ κανονικὰ εἶναι ἀμετάβατα, μποροῦν νὰ γίνουν μεταβατικὰ καὶ κατὰ συνέπεια καὶ νὰ μετατραποῦν στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, ἂν συνταχθοῦν μαζὶ μὲ ἐπίρρημα, ἂν γίνουν σύνθετα. Τὸ ρῆμα he laughed π. χ. εἶναι ἀμετάβατο καὶ κατὰ συνέπεια μιὰ φράση μ' αὐτὸ τὸ ρῆμα δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ μετατραπῆ στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή. Ἂν ὅμως τὸ ρῆμα αὐτὸ συνταχθῆ μαζὶ μὲ τὸ ἐπίρρημα at, θὰ μπορῆ ἀμέσως νὰ ἔχη ἀντικείμενο, δηλαδὴ θὰ γίνη μεταβατικό, π. χ.:

He laughed at everything.

Στὴν περίπτωση ὅμως αὐτὴ θὰ μπορέση νὰ μετατραπῆ καὶ στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, π. χ.:

Everything was laughed at (by him).

Ὁ τελευταῖος ἐμπρόθετος προσδιορισμὸς by him, ποὺ δείχνει τὸ ποιητικὸ αἴτιο, ὅπως εἴπαμε πρὶν ἀπὸ λίγο, μπορεῖ νὰ παραλειφθῆ.

Ἕνα ἐνεργητικὸ ρῆμα μὲ σύστοιχο ἀντικείμενο μπορεῖ νὰ μετατραπῆ στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, γιατὶ τὸ σύστοιχο ἀντικείμενο μπορεῖ νὰ γίνη ὑποκείμενο στὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη, π. χ.:

Ἐνεργητική: She dreamed a sweetest dream.
Παθητική: A sweetest dream was dreamed.

ΡΗΜΑΤΑ ΜΕ ΔΥΟ ΑΝΤΙΚΕΙΜΕΝΑ

Κάπως πιὸ πολύπλοκα παρουσιάζονται τὰ πράγματα στὴν μετατροπὴ

τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως σὲ παθητική, ὅταν στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη τὸ ρῆμα ἔχη δυὸ ἀντικείμενα, ἔμμεσο κι ἄμεσο (indirect and direct objects), π. χ.:

Mary gave Jim a book.

Στὴν φράση αὐτὴ τὸ Mary εἶναι τὸ ὑποκείμενο (subject) τοῦ ρήματος gave, a book εἶναι τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (direct object) καὶ Jim εἶναι τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (indirect object).

Γιὰ νὰ σχηματίσουμε λοιπὸν στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ τὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, ὑπάρχουν δυὸ τρόποι. Ἀπὸ τὰ δυὸ ἀντικείμενα, μποροῦμε νὰ πάρουμε τὸ ἕνα — ὁποιοδήποτε — καὶ νὰ τὸ κάνουμε ὑποκείμενο κρατώντας τὸ ἄλλο γιὰ ἀντικείμενο. Ἔτσι στὸ προηγούμενο παράδειγμα ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως:

Mary gave Jim a book,

μποροῦμε νὰ ἔχουμε δυὸ παθητικὲς συντάξεις, μποροῦμε δηλαδὴ νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητικὴ μὲ δυὸ τρόπους, π. χ.:

A book was given Jim καὶ
Jim was given a book.

Στὴν πρώτη περίπτωση «a book was given Jim» σχηματίζουμε τὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη βάζοντας γιὰ ὑποκείμενο τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (direct object), τὸ πραγματικὸ (ὄχι τὸ προσωπικὸ) δηλαδὴ ἀντικείμενο, a book. Ὅσο γιὰ τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (indirect object), τὸ προσωπικὸ (Jim), αὐτὸ ἐξακολουθεῖ νὰ παραμένη ἀντικείμενο καὶ στὴν παθητικὴ πρόταση.

Στὴ δεύτερη περίπτωση «Jim was given a book» σχηματίζουμε τὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη βάζοντας γιὰ ὑποκείμενο τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (indirect object) Jim, ποὺ δείχνει πρόσωπο, κι ἀφήνοντας γιὰ ἀντικείμενο τῆς παθητικῆς συντάξεως τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (direct object) τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς, ποὺ δείχνει πρᾶγμα (a book).

Ὁ δεύτερος αὐτὸς τρόπος ἀποτελεῖ ἰδιομορφία τῆς ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσας, ποὺ δὲν τὴν συναντᾶμε σ' ἄλλες γλῶσσες.

Στὰ ἑλληνικὰ π. χ. ἂν θέλουμε νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ πρόταση «Ἡ Μαρία ἔδωσε στὸν Γιάννη ἕνα βιβλίο» σὲ παθητική, θὰ ἔχουμε: «Ἕνα βιβλίο δόθηκε ἀπὸ τὴ Μαρία στὸν Γιάννη». Ὁ τρόπος αὐτὸς εἶναι ὁ πρῶτος τῆς ἀγγλικῆς, ποὺ ἀναφέραμε πρωτύτερα, κατὰ τὸν ὁποῖον τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, τὸ πραγματικό, τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως γίνεται ὑποκείμενο στὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη. Ὅσο κι ἂν ἐπιχειρήσουμε νὰ ἐφαρμόσουμε καὶ τὸν δεύτερο τρόπο τῆς μετατροπῆς τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως σὲ παθητικὴ «Jim was given a book» στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα, δὲν θὰ μπορέσουμε. Γιατὶ δὲν εἶναι

δυνατὸν στν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, αὐτὸ δηλαδὴ ποὺ δείχνει πρόσωπο, τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως νὰ γίνη ὑποκείμενο στὴν παθητική. Ὅταν βλέπουμε τέτοιες φράσεις στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, θὰ τὶς μεταφράζουμε ἔτσι:

Jim was given a book = Ἕνα βιβλίο δόθηκε στὸν Jim.

Δηλαδὴ θὰ χρησιμοποιοῦμε πάντα τὸν πρῶτο τρόπο σχηματισμοῦ τῆς παθητικῆς συντάξεως, ὅπου τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, τὸ πρᾶγμα, γίνεται ὑποκείμενο κι ὄχι τὸ ἔμμεσο, τὸ πρόσωπο. Ὁ δεύτερος τρόπος εἶναι μιὰ ἰδιομορφία τῆς ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσας, ποὺ δὲν εἶναι δυνατὸν νὰ τὴν μεταφυτεύσουμε στὴν ἑλληνική.

Πάντως στὴν ἀγγλικὴ προτιμοῦν περισσότερο τὸ δεύτερο τρόπο σχηματισμοῦ τῆς παθητικῆς συντάξεως καὶ βάζουν τὸ πρόσωπο (τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο) γιὰ ὑποκείμενο. Προτιμοῦν δηλαδὴ τό:

Jim was given a book

ἀπὸ τό:

A book was given Jim.

Φυσικὰ κι οἱ δυὸ τρόποι εἶναι ἀπόλυτα σωστοί.

Πολλὲς φορὲς συμβαίνει σὲ μιὰ ἐνεργητικὴ πρόταση νὰ ὑπάρχη ἕνας κατηγορηματικὸς προσδιορισμός, ποὺ νὰ ἀναφέρεται στὸ ἀντικείμενο (objective complement), π. χ.:

Virginia thought John amusing.

Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ γιὰ νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική, βάζουμε τὸ ἀντικείμενο γιὰ ὑποκείμενο καὶ διατηροῦμε τὸν κατηγορηματικὸ προσδιορισμό. Ἔτσι ἡ προηγουμένη πρόταση γίνεται:

John was thought amusing.

Φυσικὰ ὁ κατηγορηματικὸς προσδιορισμὸς δὲν ἀναφέρεται πιὰ σὲ κανένα ἀντικείμενο, ἀφοῦ ἡ παθητικὴ σύνταξη δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ ἔχη ἀντικείμενο, ἀλλὰ στὸ ὑποκείμενο (John), ποὺ προέκυψε ἀπὸ τὸ ἀντικείμενο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως.

Η ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗ ΦΩΝΗ ΣΤΗΝ ΠΡΟΟΔΕΥΤΙΚΗ ΜΟΡΦΗ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ

(The passive voice of the progressive form)

Ὅπως ἔχουμε πῆ, ἡ προοδευτικὴ μορφὴ ἔχει μόνο Ἐνεστῶτα κι Ἀόριστο στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, π. χ.:

Active

Mother is whipping Scott.
Mother was whipping Scott.

Passive

Scott is being whipped.
Scott was being whipped.

Ἡ χρήση τῆς προοδευτικῆς μορφῆς στὴν παθητικὴ φωνὴ συναντᾶται στὰ νέα ἀγγλικά. Στὴν παλιότερη ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα δὲν ὑπῆρχε.

Παθητικὴ φωνὴ μὲ τὸ get

Στὴν καθομιλουμένη κυρίως ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα ἡ παθητικὴ φωνὴ σχηματίζεται καὶ μ' ἕναν ἄλλον εἰδικὸ τρόπο, μὲ τὴν χρήση τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος get, π. χ.:

Harold got shot ἀντὶ
Harold was shot.

Ἡ παθητικὴ φωνὴ μὲ τὸ get εἶναι ἀρκετὰ συνηθισμένη στὸν προφορικὸ λόγο, ἀλλὰ συναντᾶται σπανιότερα στὸ γραπτό.

ΧΡΗΣΗ ΤΗΣ ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗΣ ΦΩΝΗΣ

Ὁρισμένα βιβλία ρητορικῆς ὑποστηρίζουν, ὅτι πρέπει νὰ ἀποφεύγεται ἡ χρήση τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς, γιατὶ ἀδυνατίζει τὸ λόγο. Εἶναι πολὺ πιὸ δυνατό, ὑποστηρίζουν, ὅταν ποῦμε:

Glenn belted Franklin in the mouth

παρὰ ἂν χρησιμοποιήσουμε παθητικὴ σύνταξη καὶ ποῦμε:

Franklin was belted in the mouth by Glenn.

Στὰ παραπάνω παραδείγματα ἀναμφισβήτητα ἔτσι εἶναι. Ἀλλὰ δὲν συμβαίνει πάντοτε τὸ ἴδιο. Νὰ π. χ. δυὸ παραδείγματα, ὅπου ἡ παθητικὴ σύνταξη εἶναι πολὺ πιὸ δυνατὴ ἀπὸ τὴν ἐνεργητική.

A car ran over Mr. Smith.
Mr. Smith was run over by a car.

Καὶ νὰ γιατί: Γιατὶ στὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη ἐκεῖνο ποὺ τονίζεται περισ-

σότερο εἶναι τὸ ἀντικείμενο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς, ποὺ ἔχει ἤδη γίνει ὑποκείμενο. Στὴν προκειμένη περίπτωση τὸ Mr. Smith. Ἐδῶ ἐκεῖνο ποὺ μᾶς ἐνδιαφέρει περισσότερο νὰ τονίσουμε δὲν εἶναι, ἂν αὐτό, ποὺ πάτησε τὸν κ. Smith, ἦταν αὐτοκίνητο ἢ λεωφορεῖο ἢ φορτηγό, ἀλλὰ ποιὸν πάτησε τὸ αὐτοκίνητο: τὸν κ. Smith. Βάζοντας λοιπὸν παθητικὴ σύνταξη τονίζουμε περισσότερο τὸ Mr. Smith, γι' αὐτὸ κι ὁ λόγος γίνεται δυνατότερος.

Τὸ θέμα λοιπὸν εἶναι, τί θέλουμε νὰ τονίσουμε περισσότερο. Ὅταν τὸ ἀντικείμενο κι ὄχι τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως εἶναι πρόσωπο, τότε ἡ παθητικὴ σύνταξη κάνει δυνατότερο τὸ λόγο. Ἀλλοιῶς εἶναι προτιμότερο νὰ διατηροῦμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη.

ΠΑΡΑΛΕΙΨΗ ΠΟΙΗΤΙΚΟΥ ΑΙΤΙΟΥ

Ὅταν τὸ ποιητικὸ αἴτιο εἶναι εὐκολονόητο ἀπὸ τὸ περιεχόμενο τῆς προτάσεως, τότε παραλείπεται. Ἔτσι ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς προτάσεως εἶναι ἀόριστο (οἱ ἄνθρωποι κ.λ.π.), ὅταν δηλαδὴ στὰ γαλλικὰ χρησιμοποιοῦν τὸ on καὶ στὰ γερμανικὰ τὸ Man, στὰ ἀγγλικὰ ἔχουμε παθητικὴ σύνταξη, χωρὶς ποιητικὸ αἴτιο, π. χ.:

On parle français.
Hier spriecht Man Deutsch.
English (is) spoken here.

Νὰ καὶ μερικὰ ἀκόμη παραδείγματα παραλείψεως τοῦ ποιητικοῦ αἰτίου:

active: No one used that door for twenty years.
passive: That door hasn't been used for twenty years.

active: We use pure butter in these cakes.
passive: Pure butter is used in these cakes.

active: They make cotton goods in Lancashire.
passive: Cotton goods are made in Lancashire.

active: People in Brazil speak Portuguese.
passive: Portuguese is spoken in Brazil.

Προτάσεις μὲ δυὸ ἀντικείμενα: Ὑπάρχουν καὶ προτάσεις, ποὺ ἔχουν δυὸ ἀντικείμενα, ἕνα ἀντικείμενο ποὺ δείχνει π ρ ό σ ω π ο (ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, indirect object) κι ἕνα ἀντικείμενο ποὺ δείχνει π ρ ᾶ γ μ α (ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, direct object). Φυσικὰ κι οἱ προτάσεις αὐτές, ποὺ ἔχουν δυὸ

ἀντικείμενα, ἔχουν ρήματα μεταβατικά, ἀλλοιῶς δὲν θὰ εἶχαν κανένα ἀντικείμενο, π. χ.:

He showed us this house.

Στὴν πρόταση αὐτὴ τὸ ρῆμα showed ἔχει τὸ he γιὰ ὑποκείμενο, τὸ this house γιὰ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο (πρᾶγμα) καὶ τὸ us γιὰ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο (πρόσωπο).

Τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ αὐτὴ πρόταση μποροῦμε νὰ τὴν μετατρέψουμε σὲ παθητικὴ μὲ δυὸ τρόπους. Μπορεῖ νὰ γίνη ὑποκείμενο εἴτε τὸ ἄμεσο (πρᾶγμα) εἴτε τὸ ἔμμεσο (πρόσωπο) ἀντικείμενο. Ἔτσι ἀπὸ τὴν πρόταση:

He showed us this house,

μποροῦμε νἄχουμε δυὸ προτάσεις μὲ παθητικὴ σύνταξη:

a) this house is showed us (by him) καὶ

b) we are showed this house.

Συνηθέστερα στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ δεύτερο τρόπο, γιὰ νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική, δηλαδὴ βάζουμε γιὰ ὑποκείμενο τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, ποὺ δείχνει πρόσωπο, (indirect object) καὶ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο παραμένει, ὅπως εἶναι, μένει δηλαδὴ πάλι ἀντικείμενο.

Παραθέτουμε δυὸ ἀκόμη παραδείγματα μετατροπῆς ἐνεργητικῆς συντάξεως σὲ παθητική, ὅταν ἔχουμε στὴν ἐνεργητικὴ φράση δυὸ ἀντικείμενα:

active: The Prime Minister offered him a post in the Cabinet.
passive: α) a post in the Cabinet was offered him.
β) He was offered a post in the Cabinet.

active: They awarded him Nobel Peace Prize in 1951.
passive: α) The Nobel Peace Prize was awarded him in 1951.
β) He was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1951.

Ὅπως εἴπαμε, στὴν παθητικὴ σύνταξη ὁ δεύτερος τρόπος (β΄ παραδείγματα), ὅπου τὸ ὑποκείμενο γίνεται τὸ πρόσωπο, εἶναι ὁ πιὸ συνηθισμένος.

Πότε δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική:

Δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική, ὅταν τὸ ἐνεργητικὸ ρῆμα εἶναι ἀμετάβατο, π. χ.:

He became King.
John laughed, when he heard it.

Στὶς προτάσεις αὐτὲς δὲν ἔχουμε ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο. Τὰ ρήματα became καὶ laughed εἶναι ἀμετάβατα κι ἔτσι δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ μετατρέψουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη σὲ παθητική.

Ὅταν ὅμως τὸ ἀμετάβατο ρῆμα ἔχῃ μαζὶ κι ἕνα ἐπίρρημα, εἶναι δηλαδὴ σύνθετο ρῆμα, μπορεῖ νὰ γίνῃ καὶ μεταβατικό, ὁπότε καὶ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο παίρνει καὶ ἡ ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη μπορεῖ νὰ μετατραπῇ σὲ παθητική, π. χ.:

His plan **was laughed at by** everyone who heard it.

Τὸ ρῆμα laugh ἔγινε ἀπὸ ἀμετάβατο μεταβατικό, μόλις ἔγινε σύνθετο μὲ τὸ at κι ἔτσι μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ καὶ μὲ παθητικὴ σύνταξη.

Δὲν μποροῦμε νἄχουμε παθητικὴ σύνταξη μὲ ὁρισμένα ρήματα, ἂν κι εἶναι μεταβατικά, λόγῳ τῆς σημασίας τους, π.χ. ἡ πρόταση:

He had a good breakfast,

ἂν καὶ τὸ had εἶναι μεταβατικὸ καὶ τὸ a good breakfast εἶναι ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, **δὲν** μπορεῖ νὰ μετατραπῇ σὲ παθητικὴ φωνὴ καὶ νὰ γίνῃ:

A good breakfast was had by him.

Λόγῳ τῆς σημασίας λοιπὸν τοῦ ρήματος σ' αὐτὲς τίς περιπτώσεις μόνο ἐνεργητικὴ σύνταξη μποροῦμε νὰ ἔχουμε κι ὄχι παθητική.

VOCABULARY

middle	(μιντλ)	=	μέση
illness	(ἴλνες)	=	ἀρρώστια
safe	(σέϊφ)	=	ἀσφαλής
unsafe	(ανσέϊφ)	=	ἐπισφαλής
wet	(γουέτ)	=	βρεγμένος, ὑγρός
shave	(chéϊβ)	=	ξυρίζω, ξύρισμα
repair	(ριπέερ)	=	ἐπιδιορθώνω
package	(πάκιντj)	=	πακέτο (bundle)
look after	(λουκ ἄφτερ)	=	φροντίζω
lock	(λοκ)	=	κλειδαριά, κλειδώνω
ordinary	(όρντινέρι)	=	συνήθης (usual, customary)

earn my living	(ερν μάϊ λίβιγκ)	=	κερδίζω τὴ ζωή μου
hurt	(hερτ)	=	χτυπῶ, πληγώνω
application	(απλικέϊchev)	=	αἴτηση
fields of studies	(φίλντς οφ στάντιζ)	=	τομεῖς μελέτης
at once	(αετ ουάνς)	=	ἀμέσως
faint	(φέϊντ)	=	λιποθυμῶ
ache	(έϊκ)	=	suffer continued pain, pain, πονῶ
headache	(hεντέϊκ)	=	πονοκέφαλος
sorethroat	(σόορθροουτ)	=	πονόλαιμος
blood	(μπλαντ)	=	αἷμα
blood pressure	(μπλαντ πρέchep)	=	πίεση αἵματος
breathe	(μπρίιθ)	=	ἀναπνέω
breath	(μπρεθ)	=	ἀναπνοὴ
chest	(τchεστ)	=	στῆθος, κουτὶ
cough	(κοφ)	=	βήχας, βήχω
druggist	(ντράγκιστ)	=	pharmacist, φαρμακοποιὸς
fever	(φίβερ)	=	πυρετὸς
inner	(ίνερ)	=	interior, ἐσωτερικὸς
let	(λετ)	=	ἀφήνω, lease, permit
magazine	(μάγκαζιν)	=	περιοδικὸ
notify	(νότιφάϊ)	=	inform by a note, γνωστοποιῶ
pill	(πιλ)	=	χάπι
prescription	(πρεσκρίπchev)	=	συνταγὴ
shoot	(chουτ)	=	πυροβολῶ, σκοτώνω
shot	(chοτ)	=	ἔνεση, πυροβολισμὸς
stethoscope	(στίθοσκοοπ)	=	στηθοσκόπιο
throat	(θρόουτ)	=	λάρυγγας
waiting room	(γουέϊτιγκ ρουμ)	=	αἴθουσα ἀναμονῆς
adventure	(αεντβέντchep)	=	περιπέτεια
dictation	(ντικτέϊchev)	=	ὀρθογραφία, ὑπαγόρευση
star	(σταρ)	=	ἀστέρι
heavily	(hέβιλι)	=	βαριὰ
ground	(γκράουντ)	=	ἔδαφος, earth
primitive	(πρίμιτιβ)	=	πρωτόγονος - η - ο
tap	(ταπ)	=	βρύση
basin	(μπέϊσ'ν)	=	νιπτήρας

towel	(τάουελ)	=	πετσέτα
dry	(ντράϊ)	=	στεγνώνω, ξερὸς
sudden	(σάντ'ν)	=	ξαφνικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
suddenly	(σάντενλι)	=	ξαφνικὰ
razor	(ρέϊζερ)	=	ξυράφι
average	(άβεριντj)	=	μέσος ὅρος
campus	(κάμπους)	=	ὁ γύρω χῶρος
colloquial	(κολόκουϊαλ)	=	τῆς καθομιλουμένης
expense	(εξπὲνς)	=	ἔξοδα
fail	(φέϊλ)	=	ἀποτυγχάνω
flunk	(φλαγκ)	=	ἀποτυγχάνω (στὴ δημοτικὴ)
ratio	(ράcho)	=	ἀναλογία
unit	(γιούνιτ)	=	μονάδα
whereas	(γουέραζ)	=	ἐνῶ
blank	(μπλανκ)	=	κενόν, ἄχρωμος-η-ο
suppose	(σαπὸζ)	=	ὑποθέτω
traveller	(τράβελερ)	=	ταξιδιώτης

IDIOMS

a couple of days = δυὸ-τρεῖς μέρες
to be run-down = εἶμαι καταβεβλημένος
come and see me = ἔλα νὰ μὲ δῆς
to fill a prescription = ἐκτελῶ συνταγὴ
to go on a light diet = κάνω ἐλαφριά δίαιτα
to have a bad cold = ἔχω δυνατὸ κρυολόγημα
to have a sore throat = μοῦ πονεῖ ὁ λαιμὸς
to take a deep breath = παίρνω βαθιὰ ἀναπνοὴ
the day before yesterday = προχθὲς
what is the matter with you? = τί σοῦ συμβαίνει;
board and room = ὕπνος καὶ φαγητὸ
depend on = ἐξαρτῶμαι ἀπὸ
fail an examination = ἀποτυγχάνω σὲ διαγωνισμὸ
go to college = φοιτῶ σὲ κολλέγιο
in advance = προκαταβολικῶς
in any case = ἐν πάσῃ περιπτώσει
to start to school = ξεκινῶ γιὰ τὸ σχολεῖο

to take an examination = δίνω ἐξετάσεις
thanks a million = χίλια εὐχαριστῶ
what a long time! = πόσος πολὺς καιρὸς!
what a beautiful day! = τί ὡραία μέρα!

TEXT

Mr. Smith had travelled a great deal in his life. At last at the age of sixty he bought a house and lived there. One day he invited his friend Mr. Scott to visit him. He showed the house and the different rooms to him and then the two men sat down to talk. «A traveller's life is often in danger», said Mr. Smith. «I have seen many accidents in my own life. Once I was in a ship which caught fire. There we were in the middle of the ocean with no one to help us. Another time I was in an automobile accident. I think I was very lucky in my trips». «Yes, said his friend, many things can happen to a man who travels. He may caught some bad illness in a mountain where not other people are who can help him, not a doctor». «I don't like to travel any more, said Mr. Smith. A man who reaches the age of sixty has done a wonderful thing. I will stay here and I will have all the help I need». «But what will you do all this time here?» asked his friend. «I have lots of books at my library. I can read them. Then I can go for long walks out to the country.» «But what will happen if you will fell ill?» «A doctor lives at the next house. He can take care of me. I am safe now, nothing can hurt me. I have bought a dog, too. His name is Bonzo. I can take Bonzo for my walks so that I will not be alone. We live in a very unsafe world, but I am safe now». At that time it began to rain. «I must let Bonzo come in», he said. He went to the door to open it. As soon as he opened it, Bonzo that was waiting to come in out of the rain, ran under his feet. Mr. Smith fell on the wet steps and broke his leg.

TRANSLATION

῾Ο κύριος Σμὶθ εἶχε ταξιδέψει πολὺ στὴ ζωή του. Στὸ τέλος στην ἡλι-

κία τῶν ἑξήντα χρονῶν, ἀγόρασε ἕνα σπίτι καὶ ζοῦσε ἐκεῖ. Μιὰ μέρα προσκάλεσε τὸ φίλο του τὸν κύριο Σκὼτ νὰ τὸν ἐπισκεφθῆ. Τοῦ ἔδειξε τὸ σπίτι καὶ τὰ διάφορα δωμάτια καὶ κατόπιν οἱ δυὸ ἄντρες κάθησαν νὰ μιλήσουν. «Ἡ ζωὴ ἑνὸς ταξιδιώτη εἶναι συχνὰ σὲ κίνδυνο», εἶπε ὁ κύριος Σμίθ. Ἔχω δῆ πολλὰ δυστυχήματα στὴν δική μου ζωή. Κάποτε ἤμουν σὲ ἕνα πλοῖο ποὺ ἔπιασε φωτιά. Ἐκεῖ ἤμασταν στὴ μέση τοῦ ὠκεανοῦ χωρὶς κανέναν νὰ μᾶς βοηθήση. Μιὰ ἄλλη φορὰ ἤμουν σ' ἕνα αὐτοκινητικὸ δυστύχημα. Νομίζω, ὅτι ἤμουν πολὺ τυχερὸς ἄνθρωπος στὰ ταξίδια μου». «Ναί, εἶπε ὁ φίλος του. Πολλὰ πράγματα μποροῦν νὰ συμβοῦν σ' ἕναν ἄνθρωπο, ποὺ ταξιδεύει. Μπορεῖ νὰ ἁρπάξη καμιὰ κακὴ ἀρρώστια στὸ βουνό, ὅπου δὲν ὑπάρχουν ἄλλοι ἄνθρωποι, ποὺ νὰ μποροῦν νὰ τὸν βοηθήσουν, οὔτε ἕνας γιατρός». «Δὲν μ' ἀρέσει νὰ ταξιδεύω πλέον, εἶπε ὁ κύριος Σμίθ. Ἕνας ἄντρας, ποὺ φθάνει στὴν ἡλικία τῶν ἑξήντα, ἔχει κάνει ἕνα θαυμάσιο πρᾶγμα. Θὰ μείνω ἐδῶ καὶ θὰ ἔχω ὅλη τὴ βοήθεια ποὺ χρειάζομαι». «Ἀλλὰ τί θὰ κάνης ὅλον αὐτὸ τὸν καιρὸ ἐδῶ;» ρώτησε ὁ φίλος του. «Ἔχω πολλὰ βιβλία στὴ βιβλιοθήκη μου. Μπορῶ νὰ τὰ διαβάσω. Κατόπιν μπορῶ νὰ πάω μεγάλους περιπάτους ἔξω στὴν ἐξοχή.» «Ἀλλὰ τί θὰ συμβῆ, ἂν πέσης ἄρρωστος;». «Ἕνας γιατρὸς κατοικεῖ στὸ διπλανὸ σπίτι. Αὐτὸς μπορεῖ νὰ μὲ φροντίση. Εἶμαι ἀσφαλὴς τώρα, τίποτε δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ μὲ βλάψη. Ἔχω ἀγοράσει ἕνα σκύλο ἐπίσης. Τὸ ὄνομά του εἶναι Bonzo. Μπορῶ νὰ παίρνω τὸν Bonzo στοὺς περιπάτους μου, ἔτσι ὥστε νὰ μὴν εἶμαι μόνος μου. Ζοῦμε σ' ἕνα πολὺ ἐπισφαλῆ κόσμο ἀλλὰ ἐγὼ εἶμαι ἀσφαλὴς τώρα». Ἐκείνη τὴν ὥρα ἄρχισε νὰ βρέχη. «Πρέπει νὰ ἀφήσω τὸν Bonzo νὰ ἔλθη μέσα», εἶπε. Πῆγε στὴν πόρτα νὰ τὴν ἀνοίξη. Ἀμέσως μόλις τὴν ἄνοιξε ὁ Bonzo, ποὺ περίμενε νὰ ἔλθη μέσα μακριὰ ἀπὸ τὴ βροχή, ἔτρεξε κάτω ἀπὸ τὰ πόδια του. Ὁ κύριος Σμὶθ ἔπεσε ἐπάνω στὰ βρεγμένα σκαλοπάτια κι ἔσπασε τὸ πόδι του.

EXERCISE 258

COMPREHENSION

Did Mr. Smith travel?
What did he buy?
How old was he?
Whom did he invite?
What did he show him?
What did they talk about?
Was Mr. Smith in accidents?

Was he safe now?
Did he like to travel now?
What would he do?
Did it begin to rain?
What did he do?
What did the dog do?
Did he fall?

EXERCISE 259

Ἀπαντῆστε καταφατικὰ στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Did you attend the lecture last week?
Did she leave her book at home?
Did she leave early this morning?
Did you forget your pen today?
Did he fly to New York?
Did it rain yesterday?
Did she think that it was going to rain?
Did you take a streetcar?
Did you use to play the piano?
Did he use to have many colds?
Did they use to listen to the radio every night?
Was he in the city during his vacation?
Were they going to the movies?
Was the sun shining this morning when you left?
Were you waiting for us when we phoned?
Were they expecting you when you arrived?

EXERCISE 260

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ some ἢ any:

First the doctor asked Virginia . . . questions.
Then he gave her a prescription for . . . pills.
I need to buy . . . medicine but I don't have . . . money with me.

Would you please lend me ... until tomorrow?
She received ... letters but I didn't get ...
Are there ... students who don't have books?
I didn't have ... breakfast this morning.
Do you have ... paper for dictation?
I am sorry, but I don't have ...
There are ... seats in the balcony, but there are not ... downstairs.

EXERCISE 261

Γράψτε κάθε πρόταση στὸ συγκριτικὸ κι ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό:

Example:

This is a good college. This is a better college than that one. This is the best college in the State.

I have a bad cold.
My cold is ... ... yours.
I am having my ... cold of the year.
Robert does not have much money.
Robert has ... money ... some of the University students.
His friend George has the ... money of all.
There are many colleges in the State of Ohio.
There are ... colleges in New York State ... in Ohio.
Pensylvania has the ... colleges of our State.
There is little difference between the English of the East and that of the West.
There is ... difference between the English of Boston ... the English of the North.
There is ... difference between the English of Chicago and that of San Francisco.
Few children go to private schools in the United States.
... children go to private schools .... to public.
This class has the ... students of all.
He speaks English very well.
He speaks it ... ... his brother.

He speaks it the . . . of any one in his class.
He writes badly and it's hard to read his writing.
He writes . . . . . . his brother.
He writes the . . . of any one in his family.

EXERCISE 262

'Απαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις καταφατικά :

Did they come to class early today?
Did you buy a new hat yesterday?
Do they sell notebooks in that store?
Does she understand the new lesson?
Did he go to New York on business?
Did you speak English with your American friend?
Does she take sugar in her tea?
Did they arrive in this country last week?
Is that custom like the customs in your country?
Did you write any letters on Saturday?
Did you visit your friends last evening?
Is this notebook yours?
Are you going to cash the check today?
Is Virginia from Canada?
Did you attend class last week?
Did you like the movie last night?
Did you call her up this morning?
Did they drive to the airport?
Did you sleep well last night?
Did you attend the lecture last night?

EXERCISE 263

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενά: for, to, by.

They lived there . . . five years.
He waited after class . . . talk with the teacher.
If you write now, you will have an answer . . . Monday.

Virginia needs . . . have more rest and . . . stay at home.
The bus goes . . . my house every half an hour.
They stayed after class . . . the singing.
They stayed after class . . . learn some new songs.
They are learning . . . speak English . . . practicing it with Americans.
Robert called Virginia up . . . ask her . . . go . .. the movies.
People usually use a pen . . . writing letters.
. . . the way, do you know the idioms . . . heart?
Paul went . . . his room . . . get a book.
It is important . . . you . .. come . . . class on time.
Virginia is going . . . the store . . . buy some fruit.

XXVII

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 258

COMPREHENSION

Yes, Mr. Smith travelled a great deal in his life.

He bought a house.

He was sixty years old.

He invited his friend Mr. Scott to visit him.

He showed the house and the different rooms to him.

They talked about their life.

Yes, he was in many accidents.

Yes, he was safe now.

No, he didn't like to travel any more.

He would stay at home and have all the help he needs; he would read many books, too.

Yes, it began to rain.

He went to the door to open it.

As soon as he opened it, the dog that was waiting to come in out of the rain, ran under his feet.

Yes, he fell on the wet steps and broke his leg.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 259

Yes, I attended the lecture last week.

Yes, she left her book at home.

Yes, she left early this morning.

Yes, I forgot my pen.

Yes, he flew to New York.

Yes, it rained yesterday.
Yes, she thought that it was going to rain.
Yes, I took a streetcar.
Yes, I used to play the piano.
Yes, he used to have many colds.
Yes, they used to listen to the radio every night.
Yes, he was in the city during his vacation.
Yes, they were going to the movies.
Yes, it was shining when I left.
Yes, I was waiting for you when you phoned.
Yes, they were expecting me when I arrived.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 260

First the doctor asked Virginia some questions.
Then he gave her a prescription for some pills.
I need to buy some medicine but I don't have any money with me.
Would you please lend me any until tomorrow?
She received some letters but I did not get any.
Are there any students who don't have books?
I didn't have any breakfast this morning.
Do you have any paper for dictation?
I am sorry but I don't have any.
There are some seats in the balcony but there are not any lownstairs.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 261

I have a bad cold.
My cold is worse than yours.
I am having my worst cold of the year.
Robert does not have much money.
Robert has more money than some of the University students.
His friend George has the most money of all.
There are many colleges in the State of Ohio.
There are more colleges in New York State than in Ohio.

Pensylvania has the most colleges of our State.

There is little difference between the English of the East and that of the West.

There is less difference between the English of Boston and the English of the North.

There is the least difference between the English of Chicago and that of San Francisco.

Few children go to private schools in the United States.

Fewer children go to private schools than to public.

Their class has the fewest students of all.

He speaks English very well.

He speaks it better than his brother.

He speaks it the best of any one of his class.

He writes badly and it's hard to read his writing.

He writes worse than his brother.

He writes the worst of any one in his family.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 262

Yes, they came to class early.
Yes, I bought a new hat yesterday.
Yes, they sell notebooks there.
Yes, she understands the new lesson.
Yes, he went there on business.
Yes, I spoke English with my American friend.
Yes, she takes sugar in her tea.
Yes, they arrived in this country last week.
Yes, it is.
Yes, I wrote some letters.
Yes, I visited my friends last evening.
Yes, it is mine.
Yes, I am going to cash it today.
Yes, she is.
Yes, I attended class last week.
Yes, I liked the movie last night.
Yes, I called her up this morning.
Yes, they drove to the airport.

Yes, I slept well last night.
Yes, I attended the lecture last night.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 263

They lived there for five years.
He waited after class to talk with the teacher.
If you write now, you will have an answer by Monday.
Virginia needs to have more rest and to stay at home.
The bus goes by my house every half an hour.
They stayed after class for the singing.
They stayed after class to learn some new songs.
They are learning to speak English by practicing it with Americans.
Robert called Virginia up to ask her to go to the movies.
People usually use a pen for writing letters.
By the way, do you know the idioms by heart?
Paul went to his room to get a book.
It is important for you to come to class on time.
Virginia is going to the store to buy some fruit.

JUST

Ἡ λέξη **just** = ἀκριβῶς, εἶναι ἐπίρρημα χρονικό. Μέσα στὴν πρόταση ἔχει τὴν ἴδια θέση, ποὺ ἔχουν τὰ ἐπιρρήματα συχνότητας usually, often, always, δηλαδὴ πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα καὶ μετὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα to be. Τὸ just συνήθως πάει μὲ Παρακείμενο.

Ἡ θέση του μέσα στὴν πρόταση εἶναι ἀνάμεσα ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ καὶ τὸ κυρίως ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως. Δίνει ἔμφαση στὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος. Μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο τὸ just φανερώνει, ὅτι κάτι, μιὰ πράξη, μόλις ἔχει γίνει, ἔχει συμπληρωθῆ. Ἡ ἐρώτηση θὰ μποροῦσε νὰ εἶναι μὲ Παρακείμενο ἢ καὶ μὲ Ἐνεστῶτα καὶ θὰ μπορούσαμε νὰ δώσουμε μιὰ ἀπάντηση μὲ τὸ ρῆμα στὸν Παρακείμενο.

ON, OFF, UP, IN, OUT, DOWN, BACK

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα on, off, up, down, in, out, back, μαζὶ μὲ τὰ ρήματα ἀπο-

τελοῦν μιὰ ἔννοια. Συχνὰ ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος μὲ μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις αὐτὲς ἀλλάζει καὶ γίνεται καινούργια. Τὴν πρόθεση δὲν τὴν ἐξηγοῦμε, ἀλλὰ εἶναι μέσα στὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος, στὴν καινούργια ἔννοια.

I turn the tap on = ἀνοίγω τὴ βρύση.
I turn the tap off = κλείνω τὴ βρύση.
I turn the lights on = ἀνάβω τὰ φῶτα.
I turn the lights off = σβήνω τὰ φῶτα.
I turn the radio on = ἀνάβω (ἀνοίγω) τὸ ραδιόφωνο.
I turn it off = τὸ κλείνω.
I turn the water on = ἀνοίγω τὸ νερὸ (νὰ τρέξῃ).
I turn it off = τὸ κλείνω (νὰ μὴ τρέξῃ).
I take off = βγάζω.
I put on = (βάζω) φορῶ.

Examples:

The policeman is holding his right arm up = ὁ ἀστυφύλακας κρατᾶ τὸ δεξί του χέρι ψηλὰ ἢ the policeman is holding up his right arm.
The policeman is holding his left hand out = ὁ ἀστυφύλακας κρατᾶ τὸ ἀριστερό του χέρι ἔξω.
The policeman is holding out his left hand ἢ he is holding it out.
Miss Green took off her hat and coat = ἡ δεσποινὶς Γκρὴν ἔβγαλε τὸ καπέλο καὶ τὸ παλτό της.
Miss Green took her hat and coat off. She took them off = αὐτὴ τὰ ἔβγαλε.
She put the cover back on the typewriter = αὐτὴ ἔβγαλε τὸ κάλυμμα πίσω ἀπὸ τὴ γραφομηχανή. She put back the cover on the typewriter. She put it back on the typewriter.
Please help me to carry those chairs in from the garden = σὲ παρακαλῶ, βοήθησέ με νὰ μεταφέρω ἐκεῖνες τὶς καρέκλες μέσα ἀπὸ τὸν κῆπο. Please help me to carry in those chairs from the garden. Please help me to carry them in from the garden = σὲ παρακαλῶ, βοήθησέ με νὰ τὶς μεταφέρω μέσα ἀπὸ τὸν κῆπο.
Put that razor down please = ἄφησε κάτω σὲ παρακαλῶ ἐκεῖνο τὸ ξυράφι. Put down that razor please. Put it down please = ἄφησέ το κάτω, σὲ παρακαλῶ.
Harry took the book down from the shelf = ὁ Χάρρυ πῆρε τὸ βιβλίο κάτω ἀπὸ τὸ ράφι. Harry took down the book from the shelf. He took it down from the shelf = αὐτὸς τὸ κατέβασε κάτω ἀπὸ τὸ ράφι.

What time do you get up? = τί ὥρα σηκώνεσαι; He gets up at seven o' clock every morning. First he gets out of bed and then goes to the bathroom = πρῶτα αὐτὸς βγαίνει ἀπὸ τὸ κρεβάτι καὶ κατόπιν πάει στὸ μπάνιο.

The first thing he did when he went into the house was to turn all the lights on = τὸ πρῶτο πρᾶγμα, ποὺ ἔκανε, μόλις πῆγε στὸ σπίτι, ἦταν ν' ἀνάψη ὅλα τὰ φῶτα. He turned the water on in the bathroom because he wanted to take a bath = αὐτὸς ἄνοιξε τὸ νερὸ νὰ τρέξη μέσα στὸ μπάνιο, γιατὶ ἤθελε νὰ πάρη ἕνα μπάνιο.

Although he stretched his left up he could not reach the shelf with the books = ἂν κι ἅπλωσε τὸ ἀριστερό του χέρι ψηλά, δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ φτάση τὸ ράφι μὲ τὰ βιβλία.

The servant helped him to bring in all the packages he was carrying = ὁ ὑπηρέτης τὸν βοήθησε νὰ φέρη μέσα ὅλα τὰ πακέτα, ποὺ μετέφερε.

At a quarter to six after the news he is going to turn the radio off = στὶς ἕξι παρὰ τέταρτο μετὰ ἀπὸ τὰ νέα αὐτὸς θὰ κλείση τὸ ραδιόφωνο.

He has just turned both taps on = αὐτὸς μόλις ἄνοιξε καὶ τὶς δυὸ βρύσες. He has turned them off. He is going to take off his hat = αὐτὸς θὰ βγάλη τὸ καπέλο του.

ΡΗΜΑΤΑ ΜΕ ΤΟ TO

Ὁρισμένα ρήματα συχνὰ χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὸ to σὲ σύντομες προτάσεις, ὅταν ἡ ὁλοκληρωμένη ἰδέα, ποὺ ἐκφράζουν, δὲν ἐπαναλαμβάνεται. Μερικὰ ἀπὸ αὐτὰ τὰ ρήματα εἶναι τὰ **hope** = ἐλπίζω, **expect** = περιμένω, **want** = θέλω, **intend** = σκοπεύω, **need** = χρειάζομαι, **like** = μ' ἀρέσει, **have** = ἔχω, **plan** = σχεδιάζω, **be able** = εἶμαι εἰς θέσιν, **know how** = ξέρω πῶς κ.λ.π.

Examples:

I can't speak English well yet, but I want to (speak it well some day) = δὲν μπορῶ νὰ μιλῶ ἀγγλικὰ καλὰ ἀκόμη, ἀλλὰ θέλω (νὰ τὰ μιλῶ καλὰ κάποια μέρα).

I wrote the letter because I had to (write the letter) = ἔγραψα τὸ γράμμα, γιατὶ ἔπρεπε (νὰ τὸ γράψω).

Mr. Miller has not made a reservation yet but he expects to (make it

soon) = ὁ κύριος Μίλλερ δὲν ἔχει κλείσει θέσεις ἀκόμη, ἀλλὰ περιμένει νὰ τὸ κάνη σύντομα.
She has not been in New York, would she like to? (see it) = αὐτὴ δὲν ἔχει πάει στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη, θὰ τῆς ἄρεζε (νὰ τὴ δῆ);
He is a small boy and he wants to go to bed, he needs to = αὐτὸς εἶναι ἕνα μικρὸ ἀγόρι καὶ θέλει νὰ κοιμηθῆ, τοῦ χρειάζεται.
I don't have any new hats but I need to (buy one) = δὲν ἔχω κανένα καινούργιο καπέλο, ἀλλὰ θέλω (νὰ ἀγοράσω ἕνα).
I can't go now but I hope to, later = δὲν μπορῶ νὰ πάω τώρα, ἀλλὰ ἐλπίζω νὰ πάω ἀργότερα. (I hope to go there later).
I don't want to see him anymore but I am afraid I have to = δὲν θέλω νὰ τὸν δῶ πλέον, ἀλλὰ φοβᾶμαι, ὅτι θὰ πρέπει. (I will have to see him again).
He asked me to go to the movies with him and I like to = μοῦ ζήτησε νὰ πάω στὸν κινηματογράφο μαζί του καὶ μοῦ ἀρέσει.
I want to ask him to visit me but I don't know how to = θέλω νὰ τοῦ ζητήσω νὰ μ' ἐπισκεφθῆ, ἀλλὰ δὲν ξέρω πῶς (πῶς νὰ τοῦ τὸ ζητήσω).
He told them that he sent all the money and now they expect to (receive the money he sent) = τοὺς εἶπε, ὅτι ἔστειλε ὅλα τὰ χρήματα καὶ τώρα τὰ περιμένουν (νὰ λάβουν τὰ χρήματα ποὺ ἔστειλε).
He wants to meet her and he intends to (meet her) = αὐτὸς θέλει νὰ τὴ συναντήση καὶ σκοπεύει (νὰ τὴ συναντήση).
He likes to dance every night but I don't like to = τοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ χορεύη κάθε βράδυ, ἀλλὰ ἐμένα δὲν μ' ἀρέσει.
He told her that he is going to marry and he intends to (marrry her very soon) = τῆς εἶπε, ὅτι θὰ τὴν παντρευτῆ καὶ σκοπεύει (νὰ τὴν παντρευτῆ πολὺ γρήγορα).
They have not visited New York yet, but they expect to very soon = αὐτοὶ δὲν ἔχουν ἐπισκεφθῆ τὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη ἀκόμη, ἀλλὰ περιμένουν πολὺ γρήγορα (to visit the city).
He told me to meet him down but I don't want to =μοῦ εἶπε νὰ τὸν συναντήσω κάτω στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης, ἀλλὰ δὲν θέλω (meet him any more).
He told me to read this book but I don't want to = μοῦ εἶπε νὰ διαβάσω αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο, ἀλλὰ δὲν θέλω (read this book another time).
We don't want to buy this book, do we need to? = ἐμεῖς δὲν θέλουμε νὰ ἀγοράσουμε αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο, πρέπει; (νὰ τὸ ἀγοράσουμε;)
She can't stay in New, York, but I plan to = αὐτὴ δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ μείνη στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη, ἀλλὰ ἐγὼ τὸ σχεδιάζω (stay there for some days).

You have to come with us tomorrow, would you like to? = πρέπει νὰ ἔλθῃς μαζί μας αὔριο, θὰ τὸ ἤθελες;
She wanted to wait you, but she was not able to = αὐτὴ ἤθελε νὰ σᾶς περιμένῃ, ἀλλὰ δὲν ἦταν εἰς θέσιν.
I don't want to type the letter but I will have to = δὲν θέλω νὰ δακτυλογραφήσω αὐτὸ τὸ γράμμα, ἀλλὰ πρέπει.
I like to play tennis because I know how to = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ παίζω τέννις, γιατὶ ξέρω πῶς.
But I don't like to play football because I don't know how to = ἀλλὰ δὲν μ' ἀρέσει νὰ παίζω ποδόσφαιρο, γιατὶ δὲν ξέρω πῶς.
I have to go to see the doctor though I don't like to = πρέπει νὰ πάω νὰ δῶ τὸν γιατρό, ἂν καὶ δὲν τὸ θέλω.
He is tired to work but he has to = αὐτὸς κουράστηκε νὰ δουλεύῃ, ἀλλὰ πρέπει.
Every day Mary cooks the food but now John has to = κάθε μέρα ἡ Μαίρη μαγειρεύει τὴν τροφή, ἀλλὰ τώρα ὁ John πρέπει (cook it).

Σ' ὅλες αὐτὲς τὶς ἐκφράσεις ἐπαναλαμβάνουμε στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως ἕνα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα, ποὺ ἀναφέραμε, καὶ τὸ to. Ἀλλὰ ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως δὲν σταματᾶ ἐκεῖ. Ἐμεῖς ἐννοοῦμε πάλι τὸ ρῆμα τὸ πρῶτο, χωρὶς ὅμως νὰ τὸ γράφουμε. Μετὰ ἀπὸ κάθε to στὸ τέλος μιᾶς προτάσεως ὑπονοεῖται ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος τῆς πρώτης προτάσεως. Νὰ καὶ μερικὰ ἀκόμη παραδείγματα :

I wanted to finish this book by the end of this month but I see now that I am not able to = ἤθελα νὰ τελειώσω αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο ὣς τὸ τέλος τοῦ μηνός, ἀλλὰ βλέπω τώρα, ὅτι δὲν εἶμαι εἰς θέσιν (finish it).
I wanted to write an English letter but I don't know how to = ἤθελα νὰ γράψω ἕνα ἀγγλικὸ γράμμα, ἀλλὰ δὲν ξέρω πῶς.
I don't want to meet him, do I need to? = δὲν θέλω νὰ τὸν συναντήσω, πρέπει; (meet him again).
I can't visit the United States but I plan to = δὲν μπορῶ νὰ ἐπισκεφθῶ τὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες, ἀλλὰ σχεδιάζω.

ΤΟ ΕΠΙΡΡΗΜΑ

Ἕνα ἐπίρρημα εἶναι μιὰ λέξη, ποὺ ἐξηγεῖ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος, τοῦ ἐπιθέτου ἢ καὶ ἑνὸς ἄλλου ἐπιρρήματος, π. χ.:

The very good runner ran too quickly for me = ὁ πολὺ καλὸς δρομεὺς ἔτρεξε πολὺ γρήγορα γιὰ μένα.

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα εἶναι χρονικὰ (**now** = τώρα, **soon** = σύντομα, **always** = πάντοτε, **often** = συχνά, **semetimes** = μερικὲς φορές, **usually** = συνήθως), τοπικὰ (**here** = ἐδῶ, **where** = ποῦ, **outside** = ἔξω), τροπικὰ (**badly** = κακῶς, **well** = καλῶς, **easily** = εὐκόλως), βαθμοῦ (**very** = πολύ, **too** = πάρα πολύ, **almost** = σχεδόν, **quite** = σχεδὸν), ἀρνήσεως καὶ καταφάσεως (**yes** = ναί, **no** = ὄχι **not** = δὲν), ἐρωτηματικὰ (**when** = πότε, **where** = ποῦ **why** = γιατί) κ.λ.π.

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπίθετα γενικὰ μὲ τὴν προσθήκη τῆς καταλήξεως **-ly**, π.χ:

He is a slow worker = αὐτὸς εἶναι ἕνας ἀργὸς ἐργάτης (τὸ slow ἐδῶ εἶνα ἐπίθετο).
He works slowly = αὐτὸς ἐργάζεται σιγανὰ (τὸ slowly εἶναι ἐπίρρημα).

Πολλὲς φορὲς τὸ ἐπίθετο καὶ τὸ ἐπίρρημα ἔχουν τὸν ἴδιο τύπο.

That is a fast train = αὐτὸ εἶναι ἕνα γρήγορο τραῖνο (τὸ fast ἐπίθετο).
It goes very fast = πάει πολὺ γρήγορα (ἐδῶ τὸ fast ἐπίρρημα).
He came from a far country = αὐτὸς ἦλθε ἀπὸ μιὰ μακρινὴ χώρα (far ἐπίθετο).
He went far = πῆγε πολὺ μακριὰ (far ἐπίρρημα).
It is a straight road = εἶναι ἕνας ἴσιος δρόμος (straight ἐπίθετο).
It runs straight for miles = τρέχει (κατευθύνεται) ἴσια γιὰ μίλια(straight ἐπίρρημα).
He had a low voice = αὐτὸς εἶχε μιὰ χαμηλὴ φωνὴ (low ἐπίθετο).
He spoke low = μιλοῦσε χαμηλὰ (low ἐπίρρημα).

Συχνὰ καὶ οἱ δύο τύποι χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὰν ἐπιρρήματα, π.χ: ἔννοια.

There is a bright moon = ὑπάρχει ἕνα φωτεινὸ φεγγάρι (bright ἐπίθετο).
The moon shines bright or brightly = τὸ φεγγάρι λάμπει φωτεινὰ (ἐπίρρημα).
A cheap book = ἕνα φθηνὸ βιβλίο (ἐπίθετο).
I bought it cheap or cheaply = τὸ ἀγόρασα φθηνὰ (ἐπίρρημα).
A direct route = ἕνας ἴσιος δρόμος (ἐπίθετο).

I sent the goods direct from here to Athens = ἔστειλα τὰ ἐμπορεύματα κατ' εὐθεῖαν ἀπὸ ἐδῶ στὴν 'Αθήνα (ἐπίρρημα).
He is a hard worker = εἶναι ἕνας σκληρὸς ἐργάτης (ἐπίθετο).
He works hard = ἐργάζεται σκληρὰ (ἐπίρρημα).
A high building = ἕνα ψηλὸ κτίριο (ἐπίθετο).
The bird flies high = τὸ πουλὶ πετᾶ ψηλὰ (ἐπίρρημα).
A late arrival = ἀργοπορημένη ἄφιξη (ἐπίθετο).
He came late = ἦλθε ἀργά.
News has lately come = τὰ νέα ἔχουν ἔλθει τελευταῖα (ἐπίρρημα).
A near friend = ἕνας κοντινὸς φίλος (ἐπίθετο).
He came near = ἦλθε κοντά.
I was nearly late = σχεδὸν ἄργησα (ἐπίρρημα).
A pretty girl = ἕνα χαριτωμένο κορίτσι (ἐπίθετο).
That is a pretty good name = αὐτὸ εἶναι ἕνα καλὸ ὄνομα. (pretty ἐπίρρημα)

Εἴπαμε, ὅτι συχνὰ ἔχουμε τὴν ἴδια λέξη, σὰν ἐπίθετο ἢ σὰν ἐπίρρημα, μὲ διαφορετικὴ σημασία μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Ἔτσι σὲ μιὰ πρόταση ἄλλοτε ἔχει θέση ἐπιρρήματος κι ἄλλοτε θέση ἐπιθέτου.

A short journey = ἕνα σύντομο ταξίδι (ἐπίθετο).
He stopped short = κοντοστάθηκε (ἐπίρρημα).
A wide door = μιὰ φαρδιὰ πόρτα (ἐπίθετο).
Keep your eyes wide open = κράτα τὰ μάτια σου ὀρθάνοιχτα (ἐπίρρημα).
They differed widely in their opinions = αὐτοὶ διαφέρουν πάρα πολὺ στὶς γνῶμες τους (ἐπίρρημα).
A wrong use of the word = μιὰ λανθασμένη χρήση τῆς λέξεως (ἐπίθετο).
I went wrong there = πῆγα κατὰ λάθος ἐκεῖ.
He was wrongly accused = τὸν κατηγόρησαν κατὰ λάθος (ἐπίρρημα).

Ὁρισμένα ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικά:

hourly = ὡριαῖα, μὲ τὴν ὥρα
daily = καθημερινὰ
ashore = στὴν ξηρὰ
besides = ἐκτὸς τούτου
sideways = πλάγια
backwards = πίσω.

Ὅλα αὐτὰ εἶναι ἐπιρρήματα προέρχονται ἀπὸ διάφορα οὐσιαστικά. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκη μιᾶς καταλήξεως ἀλλάζουν καὶ γίνονται ἐπιρρήματα.

Στὴ σύγκριση τὰ ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζονται ὅπως καὶ τὰ ἐπίθετα.

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα ποιότητας συγκρίνονται ὅπως καὶ τὰ ἐπίθετα.

Τὰ μονοσύλλαβα καὶ μερικὰ δισύλλαβα ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζουν παραθετικὰ μὲ τὴν κατάληξη -er γιὰ τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ καὶ -est γιὰ τὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό. π.χ:

often-oftener-oftenest,
near-nearer-nearest,
early-earlier-earliest

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα, ποὺ ἔχουν πάνω ἀπὸ μιὰ συλλαβή, σχηματίζουν μὲ τὸ more τὸ συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ καὶ μὲ τὸ most τὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμό, π.χ:

brightly - more brightly - most brightly.

Ὁρισμένα εἶναι ἀνώμαλα στὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν παραθετικῶν, ὅπως,

well - better - best
badly - worse - worst
little - less - least.

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα γενικὰ τοποθετοῦνται μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπίθετα, ἀπὸ ἄλλα ἐπιρρήματα καὶ ἀπὸ παθητικὲς Μετοχές.

He was very clever = ἦταν πολὺ ἔξυπνος.
He was very educated = ἦταν πολὺ μορφωμένος.

Τὸ enough μπαίνει ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ἐπίθετο. π.χ:
That is good enough for me = αὐτὸ εἶναι ἀρκετὰ καλὸ γιὰ μένα.

Μὲ ἕνα μεταβατικὸ ρῆμα τὸ ἐπίρρημα γενικὰ μπαίνει μετὰ τὸ ἀντικείμενο.

Μεταβατικὰ ρήματα εἶναι ἐκεῖνα, ποὺ μιὰ πράξη μπορεῖ νὰ περάση ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο στὸ ἀντικείμενο, ὅπως:

I kick the ball = κλωτσῶ τὴν μπάλα.

Ἡ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ὑποκειμένου μεταβιβάζεται στὸ ἀντικείμενο, πάει ἀπὸ τὸ I τὸ ὑποκείμενο, στὸ the ball τὸ ἀντικείμενο.

He banged the door noisily = αὐτὸς ἔκλεισε τὴν πόρτα μὲ θόρυβο.

Τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι μεταβατικό, bang = κτυπῶ, τὸ ἐπίρρημα μπαίνει μετὰ τὸ ἀντικείμενο.

Ἐὰν τὸ ἀντικείμενο εἶναι σὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο, (to κι ὁ ἁπλὸς τύπος τοῦ ρήματος) τότε μπορεῖ τὸ ἐπίρρημα νὰ μπῆ καὶ πρίν, π.χ:

They kindly asked me to stay at their house = μοῦ ζήτησαν εὐγενικὰ νὰ μείνω στὸ σπίτι τους.

Τὰ ἐπιρρήματα never, often, always, seldom, sometimes, usually συνήθως προηγοῦνται τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος μέσα στὴν πρόταση, π.χ:

I always do that = πάντοτε κάνω αὐτό.
I have often done that = συχνὰ τὸ ἔχω κάνει αὐτό.
They will never do that again = αὐτοὶ ποτὲ δὲν θὰ τὸ ξανακάνουν.

Ἀλλὰ μὲ τὸ ρῆμα be μπαίνουν ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα, π.χ:

He is never at home = ποτὲ δὲν εἶναι στὸ σπίτι.

Ἐπιρρήματα ὁρισμένου χρόνου, ὅπως τὸ yesterday, today, tonight, tomorrow, τοποθετοῦνται στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως, ἢ ἐὰν θέλουμε νὰ δώσουμε ἔμφαση στὸν χρόνο, τότε τὰ τοποθετοῦμε στὴν ἀρχὴ τῆς προτάσεως, ἀλλὰ ὄχι μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Συνήθως στὸ τέλος ἢ στὴν ἀρχή.

Examples:

I went to his house yesterday = πῆγα στὸ σπίτι του χθές, ἢ Yesterday I went to his house.
I will write my lessons tomorrow = θὰ γράψω τὰ μαθήματά μου αὔριο ἢ Tomorrow I will write my lessons.

Ἐὰν ἕνα ἐπίρρημα τοῦ χρόνου ἢ τοῦ τόπου εἶναι μαζὶ σὲ μιὰ πρόταση, τὸ ἐπίρρημα τοῦ τόπου προηγεῖται τοῦ χρόνου, π.χ:

We went there yesterday = πήγαμε ἐκεῖ χθές.

TAKE

Τὸ ρῆμα **take** (take - took - taken), ἔχει διάφορες ἔννοιες. Οἱ πιὸ συνηθισμένες εἶναι:

Do you take cream and sugar in your coffee? = παίρνεις κρέμα καὶ ζάχαρι στὸν καφέ σου;
Shall we take a bus or a streetcar? = θὰ πάρουμε λεωφορεῖο ἢ τρόλεϋ;
Take your books and put them on the table = πάρε τὰ βιβλία σου καὶ βάλε τα ἐπάνω στὸ τραπέζι.
Have you taken your medicine? = ἔχεις πάρει τὸ φάρμακό σου;
Did the army take many prisoners? = πῆρε ὁ στρατὸς πολλοὺς αἰχμαλώτους;
She always takes notes on what the teacher says = αὐτὴ πάντα κρατᾶ σημειώσεις σὲ ὅ,τι λέει ὁ δάσκαλος.
He took the children off = ἔβγαλε ἔξω τὰ παιδιά.
He took the children out for a long walk = πῆρε τὰ παιδιὰ ἔξω γιὰ ἕνα μεγάλο περίπατο.
Don't take the last cake = μὴν παίρνεις τὸ τελευταῖο κέϊκ.
Leave it for your sister = ἄφησέ το γιὰ τὴν ἀδελφή σου.
Shall I take you in my car to the station? = νὰ σὲ πάρω μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητό μου στὸ σταθμό;
Will this bus take me to the airport? = θὰ μὲ πάη αὐτὸ τὸ λεωφορεῖο στὸν ἀερολιμένα;
The work took me a long time = ἡ δουλειὰ μοῦ πῆρε πολλὴ ὥρα.
Take care (= be careful) = πρόσεχε.

Τὸ take something somewhere, σημαίνει μεταφέρω (πάω κάτι κάπου), ἀλλὰ take someone somewhere, φανερώνει ὁδηγῶ (πάω κάποιον κάπου).

Aren't you going to take your umbrella with you? = δὲν θὰ πάρης τὴν ὀμπρέλα σου μαζί σου;
Get in, I will take you there in my car = μπὲς μέσα, θὰ σὲ πάω μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητό μου.
I will take you to him = θὰ σὲ πάω σ' αὐτόν.

Τὸ take ἐπίσης χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ πολλὲς ἰδιωματικὲς ἐκφράσεις, π.χ:

Let's take a walk this afternoon = ἂς κάνουμε ἕναν περίπατο αὐτὸ τὸ ἀπόγευμα.
I prefer to take a ride = προτιμῶ νὰ κάνω ἕναν περίπατο μὲ τἄλογο.
Which road of the two shall we take? = ποιὸν δρόμο ἀπὸ τοὺς δυὸ θὰ πάρουμε;

I want to take some pictures with my new camera = θέλω νὰ πάρω μερικὲς φωτογραφίες μὲ τὴν καινούργια μου φωτογραφικὴ μηχανή.
They took a trip through the west = αὐτοὶ πῆραν (ἔκαναν) ἕνα ταξίδι ἀνάμεσα ἀπὸ τὴ Δύση.
She is taking a course in history this year = αὐτὴ θὰ παρακαλουθήση ἕνα μάθημα (μία σειρὰ μαθημάτων) στὴν Ἱστορία ἐφέτος.
He had to take an examination yesterday in grammar = αὐτὸς εἶχε νὰ δώση ἐξετάσεις χθὲς στὴν γραμματική.
She took notes of his lecture = αὐτὴ κράτησε σημειώσεις ἀπὸ τὴ διάλεξή του.
The lecture will take place at the auditorium tomorrow evening = ἡ διάλεξη θὰ λάβη χώραν αὔριο τὸ ἀπόγευμα στὸ ἀμφιθέατρο.
How long does it take to learn English? = πόσος καιρὸς χρειάζεται, γιὰ νὰ μάθη κανεὶς ἀγγλικά;
It takes four years = χρειάζονται τέσσερα χρόνια.
He took charge of the office during my absence = ἀνέλαβε ὑπηρεσία στὸ γραφεῖο κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἀπουσίας μου.
Does the maid take care of the children? = φροντίζει ἡ ὑπηρέτρια τὰ παιδιά;
Yes, she takes care of them = ναί, τὰ φροντίζει.
She takes after her mother = αὐτὴ μοιάζει τὴν μητέρα της.
He takes after his father = αὐτὸς μοιάζει τὸν πατέρα του.

ΥΠΟΘΕΤΙΚΟΙ ΛΟΓΟΙ

CONDITIONAL CLAUSES

1. **Ὁρισμός:** Ὑποθετικὸς λόγος (conditional clause) εἶναι ὁ συνδυασμὸς μιᾶς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως («if» clause), ποὺ λέγεται καὶ ὑπόθεση, καὶ μιᾶς κυρίας προτάσεως (main clause), ποὺ λέγεται καὶ ἀπόδοση.

2. **Εἴδη ὑποθετικῶν λόγων:** Τοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους τοὺς ξεχωρίζουμε σύμφωνα μὲ κριτήρια τυπικὰ καὶ οὐσιαστικά. Καὶ τυπικὰ μὲν κριτήρια εἶναι οἱ χρόνοι τῶν ρημάτων τόσο τῆς κυρίας ὅσο καὶ τῆς ὑποτελοῦς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως. Οὐσιαστικὰ δὲ κριτήρια εἶναι ἡ σημασία τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου.

3. **Οὐσιαστικὴ διάκριση ὑποθετικῶν λόγων:** Ἀνάλογα μὲ τὴ σημασία τους οἱ ὑποθετικοὶ λόγοι χωρίζονται σὲ δυὸ μεγάλες κατηγορίες, στοὺς ὑπο-

θετικοὺς λόγους μὲ «ἀ ν οι χ τ ὴ ὑ π ό θ ε σ η» (open conditions) καὶ στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους «τ ο ῦ μ ὴ π ρ α γ μ α τ ι κ οῦ» (hypothetical conditions ἢ suppositions).

Στὴν πρώτη κατηγορία ὑποθετικῶν λόγων, δηλαδὴ στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους μὲ «ἀνοιχτὴ ὑπόθεση» (open conditions), ἡ ὑπόθεση μπορεῖ νὰ πραγματοποιηθῆ, μπορεῖ ὅμως καὶ ὄχι, π. χ.:

If the rain stops, I shall go to the movies.
If you are right, then I am wrong.
If you have done your work, you may go to the cinema.

Σ'ὅλα τὰ παραδείγματα αὐτά, ἡ ὑπόθεση, ποὺ περιέχεται στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση («if» clause), ἐνδέχεται βέβαια νὰ πραγματοποιηθῆ, ἐνδέχεται ὅμως καὶ νὰ μὴν πραγματοποιηθῆ ποτέ. Δὲν φαίνεται ἀπὸ τὸν ὑποθετικὸ λόγο, ἂν θὰ πραγματοποιηθῆ ἢ ὄχι ἡ ὑπόθεση, ὁ ὅρος. Γι' αὐτὸ λέμε, ὅτι ἡ ὑπόθεση παραμένει «ἀνοιχτὴ» (open condition).

Ἔτσι στὰ παραδείγματά μας μπορεῖ ἡ βροχὴ νὰ σταματήση, μπορεῖ ὅμως κι ὄχι. Μπορεῖ νὰ ἔχετε δίκιο, μπορεῖ ὅμως κι ὄχι. Μπορεῖ νὰ ἔχετε τελειώσει τὴ δουλειά σας, μπορεῖ ὅμως κι ὄχι.

Ἀντίθετα στὴ δεύτερη μεγάλη κατηγορία τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ὑπάρχει μιὰ ὑπόθεση, ποὺ εἶναι ἀντίθετη μὲ τὴν πραγματικότητα ἢ τουλάχιστον ποὺ γιὰ τὴν πραγματοποίηση αὐτῆς τῆς ὑποθέσεως ὑπάρχουν ζωηρὲς ἀμφιβολίες. Γι' αὐτὸ τὸ λόγο ἡ κατηγορία αὐτῶν τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων λέγεται «τοῦ μὴ πραγματικοῦ» (hypothetical conditions ἢ suppositions).

Αὐτὴ εἶναι μιὰ οὐσιαστικὴ διάκριση τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων, μιὰ διάκριση δηλαδὴ ποὺ στηρίζεται στὴ σημασία, στὴν οὐσία αὐτῶν τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων.

Πολλοὶ συγγραφεῖς ἐπεχείρησαν νὰ προχωρήσουν καὶ σὲ τυπικὲς διακρίσεις τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων χωρὶς νὰ ἀγνοήσουν ταὐτόχρονα καὶ τὶς οὐσιαστικές. Ἀποτέλεσμα αὐτῆς τῆς τακτικῆς τους ἦταν νὰ δημιουργηθῆ μιὰ φοβερὴ σύγχυση πάνω σ' αὐτὸ τὸ κεφάλαιο καὶ νὰ προκύψουν τόσα εἴδη καὶ τόσες ποικιλίες ὑποθετικῶν λόγων, ὅσοι περίπου συνδυασμοὶ βγαίνουν κι ἀπὸ τὰ ... προγνωστικὰ τοῦ ποδοσφαίρου.

Ἀπορρίπτουμε αὐτὴ τὴν τακτικὴ σὰν ἄσκοπη καὶ σὰν σχολαστική. Προτιμοῦμε ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικὴ μὲν ἄποψη νὰ περιορισθοῦμε στὴ διάκριση τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων στὶς δυὸ μεγάλες κατηγορίες, στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους μὲ

«ἀνοιχτὴ ὑπόθεση» (open conditions) καὶ στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους «τοῦ μὴ πραγματικοῦ» (hypothetical conditions or suppositions), ἀπὸ τυπικὴ δὲ ἄποψη, δηλαδὴ ἀπὸ τὴν ἄποψη τῶν χρόνων τῶν ρημάτων τῆς κυρίας καὶ τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου, νὰ χωρίσουμε τοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους στὰ παρακάτω τέσσερα εἴδη.

4. **Τυπικὴ διάκριση ὑποθετικῶν λόγων.** Τέσσερα βασικὰ εἴδη ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ξεχωρίζουμε ἀνάλογα μὲ τοὺς χρόνους τῶν ρημάτων τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως καὶ τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως.

1ο εἶδος. Στὸ πρῶτο εἶδος τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ἡ μὲν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἐκφέρεται μὲ Ὁριστικὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα, ποὺ τὶς περισσότερες φορὲς ὅμως ἔχει σημασία Μέλλοντα, ἡ κυρία δὲ πρόταση, ἡ ἀπόδοση ὅπως λέμε, μὲ Ἐνεστώτα, Μέλλοντα ἢ καὶ Προστακτική, π. χ.:

If you are right, I am wrong.
If I go, I will let you know.
If it rains, I will stay here.
If she reads hard, she will pass her examinations.
If you meet Henry, tell him the truth.

Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα:

If you are right, I am wrong,

ἔχουμε Ἐνεστώτα στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση (you are) καὶ Ἐνεστώτα στὴν κυρία πρόταση (I am).

Στὸ δεύτερο παράδειγμα:

If I go, I will let you know,

ἔχουμε Ἐνεστώτα Ὁριστικῆς μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα (I go) στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση καὶ Μέλλοντα στὴν κυρία πρόταση (I will let).

Τὸ ἴδιο παρατηροῦμε καὶ στὸ τρίτο καὶ τέταρτο παράδειγμα.

Στὸ πέμπτο τέλος παράδειγμα:

If you meet Henry, tell him the truth,

ἔχουμε Ἐνεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση (you meet) καὶ Προσταστικὴ στὴν κυρία πρόταση (tell).

Αὐτὲς εἶναι οἱ κυριότερες περιπτώσεις τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου τοῦ α' εἴδους. Πολὺ σπάνια μπορεῖ νἄχουμε κι Ἀόριστο στὴν κυρία πρόταση, π.χ.:

If what you say is right, then what I said was wrong.

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ ἡ μὲν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἐκφέρεται μὲ Ἐνεστώτα,

ἡ δὲ κυρία πρόταση μὲ 'Αόριστο, ποὺ στὴν ἔννοια ὅμως ἐλάχιστα διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸν 'Ενεστώτα.

Παρατήρηση: Στὸ εἶδος αὐτὸ τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου, ὅπως εἴπαμε, στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχουμε if καὶ 'Ενεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα. Δὲν βάζουμε if μὲ Μέλλοντα, ἀλλὰ μετὰ τὸ if στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση βάζουμε πάντοτε 'Ενεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα, π. χ.:

If the plane leaves at noon, it will reach Rome at three o'clock.

Στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχουμε if καὶ 'Ενεστώτα (if leaves). 'Ο 'Ενεστὼς ὅμως αὐτὸς ἔχει σημασία Μέλλοντα. 'Εὰν τὸ ἀεροπλάνο θὰ φύγῃ τὸ μεσημέρι, θὰ φτάσῃ στὴ Ρώμη στὶς τρεῖς. Δὲν λέμε ὅμως:

If the plane will leave..., ἀλλὰ
If the plane leaves.

Προσοχὴ λοιπόν: Ὄχι if μὲ Μέλλοντα, ἀλλὰ μὲ 'Ενεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα.

Τὸ πρῶτο εἶδος τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου δείχνει τὸ πιθανό, αὐτὸ ποὺ ἔχει πιθανότητες νὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ.

'Εξαίρεση: Στὸν κανόνα αὐτὸν ὑπάρχει μιὰ ἐξαίρεση, ποὺ εὐτυχῶς εἶναι σπάνια: Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ δείξουμε προθυμία, μποροῦμε κάποτε νὰ βάλουμε will μὲ τὸ if, π. χ.:

If you will sign this agreememt, I will let you have the money.

Συνήθως ὅμως δὲν χρησιμοποιοῦμε αὐτὸν τὸν τύπο. Προτιμοῦμε τὸ would ἀντὶ τοῦ will, ποὺ εἶναι πολὺ εὐγενικότερο, ἀλλὰ καὶ πιὸ σωστὸ γραμματικῶς:

If you would sign this agreememt...

'Αλλὰ τότε φθάνουμε σ' ἕνα ἄλλο εἶδος ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου, ποὺ θὰ δοῦμε ἀμέσως:

2ο εἶδος: Στὸ δεύτερο εἶδος ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ἡ μὲν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἐκφέρεται μὲ τὸ if καὶ should (τὸ ἰσοδύναμο δηλαδὴ τῆς 'Υποτακτικῆς), ἡ δὲ κυρία πρόταση μὲ τὸ would. Μπορεῖ ὅμως κι ἀντίστροφα, ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση νὰ ἐκφέρεται μὲ τὸ if καὶ would + 'Απαρέμφατο κι ἡ ἀπόδοση (κυρία πρό-

ταση) μὲ should καὶ 'Απαρέμφατο. 'Εκεῖνο ποὺ δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ γίνη εἶναι νἄχουμε καὶ στὴν ὑποθετικὴ καὶ στὴν κυρία πρόταση τὸ ἴδιο should ἢ would. Στὴ μιὰ πρόταση θἄχουμε should καὶ στὴν ἄλλη would. Πρέπει νὰ προσθέσουμε, ὅτι σ' αὐτὲς τὶς προτάσεις τὸ should χάνει τὴ σημασία τῆς «ὑποχρεώσεως», χρησιμοποιεῖται ἁπλῶς σὰν βοηθητικό, π. χ.:

If I should decide to go, I would call you.
If they would to go the United States, they would not take the children.
If I should go to New York, I would visit the Empire State Building.

Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα:

If I should decide to go, I would call you,

ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχει should κι 'Απαρέμφατο (I should decide) κι ἡ κυρία πρόταση ἔχει would κι 'Απαρέμφατο (I would call).

Στὸ δεύτερο παράδειγμα:

If they would go to the United States, they should not take the children,

παρατηροῦμε τὸ ἀντίστροφο. Δηλαδὴ ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχει would (they would go) κι ἡ κυρία πρόταση ἔχει should (they should not take).

"Οπως εἴδαμε, δὲν μποροῦμε νἄχουμε καὶ στὴν ὑποθετικὴ καὶ στὴν κυρία πρόταση τὸ ἴδιο βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα should ἢ would. Στὴ μιὰ πρόταση θἄχουμε should καὶ στὴν ἄλλη would.

Τὸ δεύτερο εἶδος τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου δείχνει αὐτό, ποὺ δύσκολα, πολὺ δύσκολα θὰ μποροῦσε νὰ πραγματοποιηθῆ στὸ μέλλον.

3ο εἶδος. Στὸ τρίτο εἶδος τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ἡ μὲν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἐκφέρεται μὲ τὸ if κι 'Αόριστο, ἡ δὲ κυρία πρόταση μὲ τὸ should ἢ τὸ would μαζὶ μὲ 'Απαρέμφατο, π. χ.:

If I had the money, I would buy a car.
If I knew Tom's address, I would write to him.
If there was a storm, the waves should be high.
If Mary was rich, she would spend her vacation at the seaside.

Σ' ὅλα αὐτὰ τὰ παραδείγματα ἔχουμε 'Αόριστο 'Οριστικῆς στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση, στὴν δὲ κυρία πρόταση ἔχουμε would ἢ should μὲ 'Απαρέμφατο.

Εἶναι ὅμως δυνατὸν σ' αὐτὸ τὸ εἶδος τῶν ὑποθετικῶν λόγων νὰ ἔχουμε στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση 'Αόριστο 'Υποτακτικῆς ἀντὶ τοῦ 'Αορίστου τῆς 'Οριστικῆς.

Ὅπως ἔχουμε δῆ πρωτύτερα, ὁ 'Αόριστος τῆς 'Υποτακτικῆς εἶναι ὁλόϊδιος μὲ τὸν 'Αόριστο τῆς 'Οριστικῆς σ' ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα. 'Εξαίρεση ἀποτελεῖ τὸ ρῆμα be, ποὺ ἐνῶ στὸν 'Αόριστο τῆς 'Οριστικῆς κάνει I was, στὸν 'Αόριστο τῆς 'Υποτακτικῆς κάνει I were γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ.

Νὰ μερικὰ παραδείγματα ὑποθετικῶν λόγων 3ου εἴδους, ὅπου στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχουμε 'Αόριστο 'Υποτακτικῆς ἀντὶ 'Αορίστου 'Οριστικῆς.

If he were here, he would play the piano. (but he is not here).
If I were you I would accept the post. (but I am not you)
If she were rich, she would visit Europe. (but she is not rich)

Ὅπως θἄχετε καταλάβει, σ' αὐτὲς τὶς περιπτώσεις ἔχουμε πάντα τὸ «μὴ πραγματικό». Ὁ ὑποθετικὸς λόγος δηλαδή, ποὺ ἔχει στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση 'Υποτακτικὴ 'Αορίστου, δείχνει πάντοτε τὸ μὴ πραγματικό.

Τὸ τρίτο εἶδος τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου δείχνει τὸ μὴ πραγματικὸ στὸ παρόν.

4ο εἶδος. Στὸ τέταρτο εἶδος ὑποθετικῶν λόγων ἔχουμε στὴν μὲν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση if κι 'Υπερσυντέλικο, στὴν δὲ κυρία πρόταση should ἢ would μὲ Παρακείμενο. Ἔχουμε δηλαδὴ καὶ στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση καὶ στὴν ἀπόδοση (κυρία πρόταση) Perfect Tenses, π. χ.:

If I had had the money, I would have bought the car.
If it had not rained, I would have come.
If the plane had left at noon, it would have reached Rome at two.

Πολλὲς φορὲς στὴ θέση τοῦ would have στὴν κυρία πρόταση ἔχουμε could have ἢ might have. Ἔχουμε πάλι τὸ ἴδιο τέταρτο εἶδος τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου, π.χ.:

If I had had the money, I could have bought the car.
If it had not rained, I might have come.

If he had know the truth, he could have spoken it.

Τὸ τέταρτο εἶδος τοῦ ὑποθετικοῦ λόγου δείχνει τὸ μὴ πραγματικὸ στὸ παρελθόν.

Γενικὲς Παρατηρήσεις

1. Στοὺς ὑποθετικοὺς λόγους συνήθως μπαίνει πρῶτα ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρότασι κι ὕστερα ἡ κυρία πρόταση. Αὐτὸ ὅμως δὲν εἶναι ἀπαραίτητο. Μπορεῖ νὰ ἔχουμε καὶ πρῶτα τὴν κυρία πρόταση κι ὕστερα τὴν ὑποθετική, π. χ.:

They will go without us, if we don't hurry.
I wouldn't see the doctor, if I were not ill.

Στὰ παραδείγματα αὐτὰ προηγεῖται ἡ κυρία πρόταση κι ἀκολουθεῖ ἡ ὑποθετική. Ὅταν ὅμως μπαίνῃ πρῶτα ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση, τότε ἔχει περισσότερη ἔμφαση ἡ ὑπόθεση.

2. Πολλὲς φορὲς τὸ if ἀντικαθίσταται μὲ τὸ unless. Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ τὸ unless ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ if . . . not, π. χ.:

They will go without us if we don't hurry.
They will go without us unless we hurry.

Ἀπ' αὐτὰ τὰ παραδείγματα φαίνεται, ὅτι μποροῦμε στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση νὰ ἀντικαταστήσουμε τὸ if μὲ τὸ unless. Μόνο ποὺ μὲ τὸ unless θἄχουμε καταφατικὴ πρόταση, ἐνῶ μὲ τὸ if ἀρνητική, τὸ unless δηλαδὴ ἀντιστοιχεῖ μὲ τὸ if . . . not.

Νὰ κι ἄλλα παραδείγματα γιὰ τὸ ἴδιο θέμα:

I wouldn't see the doctor, If I were not ill.
I wouldn't see the doctor unless I were ill (κι ὄχι unless I were not ill).

3. Ὅταν ἡ ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση περιέχῃ ἕνα ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα were, had ἢ should, μπορεῖ νὰ ἀντικατασταθῇ μὲ μιὰ πρόταση χωρὶς τὸ if, ἂν γίνῃ ἀντιστροφὴ ρήματος κι ὑποκειμένου, π. χ.:

Were John here now (= if John were here now) he would explain the whole matter.

Were our train to arrive punctually at 12.45, (= if our train were to arrive punctually at 12.45), we should have time to visit your sister.
I will go, should it be (= if it should be) necessary.
Had you (= if you had) asked me, I would have told you the answer.

Σ' ὅλα αὐτὰ τὰ παραδείγματα στὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρόταση ἔχει παραλειφθῆ ὁ σύνδεσμος if κι ἔχει γίνει ἀντιστροφὴ ρήματος κι ὑποκειμένου. Δηλαδὴ ἀντὶ νἄχουμε πρῶτα τὸ ὑποκείμενο κι ὕστερα τὸ ρῆμα, μετὰ τὴν ἐξάλειψη τοῦ if ἔχουμε πρῶτα τὸ ρῆμα κι ὕστερα τὸ ὑποκείμενο.

VOCABULARY

discover	(ντισκάβερ)	=	ἀνακαλύπτω
voyage	(βόγιεντj)	=	ταξίδι
sight	(σάϊτ)	=	ὄψη, θέα
mistaken	(μιστέϊκεν)	=	λανθασμένος - η - ον
native	(νέϊτιβ)	=	ντόπιος, ἰθαγενὴς
sail	(σέϊλ)	=	πλέω
westward	(γουέστγουορντ)	=	πρὸς δυσμὰς
explore	(εξπλὸρ)	=	ἐξερευνῶ
tribe	(τράϊμπ)	=	φυλὴ
welcome	(γουέλκαμ)	=	καλωσορίζω
settler	(σέτλερ)	=	ἄποικος
conquer	(κόνκερ)	=	κυριαρχῶ, αἰχμαλωτίζω
colony	(κόλονι)	=	ἀποικία
freedom	(φρίντομ)	=	ἐλευθερία
independent	(ιντεπέντεντ)	=	ἀνεξάρτητος
separate	(σεπαρέϊτ)	=	ξεχωρίζω
foreigner	(φόρεϊνερ)	=	ξένος
eroneous	(ιρόνεους)	=	λανθασμένος
realize	(ριαλάϊζ)	=	ἀντιλαμβάνομαι
typical	(τύπικαλ)	=	τυπικὸς
varied	(βάριεντ)	=	ποικίλος
representative	(ριπρεζέντατιβ)	=	ἀντιπροσωπευτικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
hang	(hαεγκ)	=	κρεμῶ
murderer	(μέρντερερ)	=	δολοφόνος

shine	(chάϊν)	=	λάμπω
brigthly	(μπράϊτλι)	=	λαμπερὰ
obtain	(ομπτέϊν)	=	ἀποκτῶ
develop	(ντιβέλοπ)	=	ἀναπτύσσω
vote	(βόοτ)	=	ψηφίζω
wood	(γουντ)	=	ξύλα, δάσος
burn	μπερν)	=	καίω
coal	(κόουλ)	=	κάρβουνο
present	(πρέζεντ)	=	παρὼν - οὖσα - όν
suppose	(σαπὸζ)	=	ὑποθέτω
catch	(κατch)	=	πιάνω
change	(τchεντj)	=	ἀλλάζω
sort	(σορτ)	=	εἶδος
bird	(μπερντ)	=	πουλὶ
deep	(ντιπ)	=	βαθὺς - ιὰ - ὑ
cut off	(κατ οφ)	=	ἀποκλείομαι
absent	(αέμπσεντ)	=	ἀπὼν - οὖσα - όν
gold	(γκολντ)	=	χρυσός, (χρυσάφι)
pot	(ποτ)	=	δοχεῖον
be fond of	(φοντ οφ)	=	εἶμαι φίλος ἀπὸ κάτι
tail	(τέϊλ)	=	οὐρὰ
novel	(νόβελ)	=	μυθιστόρημα
intend	(ιντὲντ)	=	σκοπεύω
plan	(πλαεν)	=	σχεδιάζω
reservation	(ρεζερβέϊchεν)	=	κρατῶ θέσεις
compare	(κομπέερ)	=	συγκρίνω
seem	(σιμ)	=	φαίνομαι
charming	(τchάρμινγκ)	=	χαριτωμένος - η - ο
inconvenient	(ινκονβίνιεντ)	=	στενόχωρος - η - ο
run	(ραν)	=	τρέχω
naturally	(ναέτchουραλι)	=	φυσικὰ
manage	(μένετj)	=	κατορθώνω
ash – ashes	(ach)	=	στάχτη-στάχτες
except	(εξὲπτ)	=	ἐκτὸς
trouble	(τραμπλ)	=	φασαρία
cheerful	(τchίρφουλ)	=	χαρούμενος - η - ο
delicious	(ντελίchιες)	=	θαυμάσιος - α - ο
chiefly	(τchίφλυ)	=	κυρίως
promise	(πρόμις)	=	ὑπόσχομαι

runner	(ράνερ)	=	δρομεὺς
worker	(γουόρκερ)	=	ἐργάτης
moon	(μουν)	=	σελήνη
direct	(ντάϊρεκτ)	=	εὐθύς, κατ' εὐθεῖαν
route	(ρουτ)	=	δρόμος
nonsense	(νάνσενς)	=	ἀνοησία
mention	(μέντchev)	=	ἀναφέρω
suffer	(σάφερ)	=	ὑποφέρω
progress	(πρόγκρες)	=	πρόοδος
afterwards	(άφτεργουορντς)	=	κατόπιν
kindly	(κάϊντλι)	=	καλῶς, εὐγενικὰ
finally	(φάϊναλι)	=	τελικὰ
fortunately	(φόρτchουνεϊτλι)	=	εὐτυχῶς
enough	(ινὰφ)	=	ἀρκετὰ
really	(ρίαλυ)	=	πράγματι
smart	(σμαρτ)	=	κομψὸς
hardly	(χάρντλι)	=	δύσκολα
machine	(μαchὶν)	=	μηχανὴ
out of order		=	χαλασμένος - η - ο
neighbor	(νέϊμπερ)	=	γείτονας - ισσα
refuse	(ριφιοὺζ)	=	ἀρνοῦμαι
borrow	(μπόροου)	=	δανείζομαι
tool	(τουλ)	=	μηχάνημα
sow, sowed, sown	(σόου)	=	σπέρνω
crop	(κροπ)	=	σοδειὰ
space	(σπέϊς)	=	χῶρος
tulip	(τούλιπ)	=	τουλίπα
unfortunate	(ανφόρτchιουνεϊτ)	=	ἄτυχος - η - ο
grub	(γκραμπ)	=	σκουλήκι
blossom	(μπλόσομ)	=	ἀνθίζω, ἄνθη
frost	(φροστ)	=	κρύο, παγωνιὰ
differ	(ντίφερ)	=	διαφέρω
accuse	(ακιοὺζ)	=	κατηγορῶ
clever	(κλέβερ)	=	ἔξυπνος
bang	(μπαενγκ)	=	χτυπῶ
case	(κέϊς)	=	περίπτωση
stone	(στόουν)	=	πέτρα
will	(γουὶλ)	=	θέληση

warn	(γουόρν)	=	προειδοποιῶ
danger	(ντέϊντjερ)	=	κίνδυνος
arrival	(εράϊβαλ)	=	ἄφιξη
ability	(αμπίλιτι)	=	ἱκανότητα
accustom	(ακάστομ)	=	συνηθίζω
nervous	(νέρβες)	=	νευρικὸς-ὴ-ὸ
stream	(στρημ)	=	ρεῦμα
crossroad	(κρόσροουντ)	=	σταυροδρόμι
middle	(μιντλ)	=	μέσον
crossing	(κρόσινγκ)	=	διασταύρωση
blind	(μπλάϊντ)	=	τυφλὸς-ὴ
difference	(ντίφερενς)	=	διαφορὰ
back	(μπαεκ)	=	ὀπισθοχωρῶ, πίσω
damage	(νταέμεϊτj)	=	καταστρέφω
gate	(γκέϊτ)	=	πύλη, αὐλόπορτα
radiator	(ραντιέτορ)	=	καλοριφὲρ
sign	(σάϊν)	=	σημάδι
speed	(σπιντ)	=	ταχύτητα
limit	(λίμιτ)	=	ὅριον
motoring	(μότορινγκ)	=	ὁδήγηση
poem	(πόεμ)	=	ποίημα
pain	(πέϊν)	=	πόνος
debt	(ντεπτ)	=	χρέος
health	(hελθ)	=	ὑγεία
affirmative	(αφίρματιβ)	=	καταφατικὸς-ὴ-ὸ
reign	(ρέϊν)	=	βασιλεία
Queen	(κουὴν)	=	βασίλισσα
die	(ντάϊ)	=	πεθαίνω
leather	(λέδερ)	=	δέρμα
army	(άρμι)	=	στρατὸς
march	(μαρτch)	=	περπατῶ
historically	(hιστόρικλι)	=	ἱστορικῶς

TEXT

The United States

Christopher Columbus discovered America in 1492. When

he started on his voyage across the Atlantic Ocean from Europe, he hoped to reach a part of Asia known as India. After five weeks they came in sight of an island. Believing that he had reached India he called the people Indians. Columbus was mistaken. The islands which he had found were between North America and South America, and Asia was thousands of miles away. But the name he gave to the native people of the New World was never changed. Up to this day they are called Indians. Many Europeans sailed westward to explore the new lands. More came to make their homes in the New World. Wherever they went they found tribes of Indians. Some of the tribes were friendly and welcomed the white people. Some were unfriendly and tried to drive the settlers away. Little by little the Indians were conquered by the white men and their lands were divided into colonies belonging to different countries of Europe. As the colonies grew larger and stronger most of them won their freedom and became independent or separate countries. Today Canada is the only large part of America which was not separated from the mother country in Europe. There are still many Indians in the New World but they don't have lands of their own. When foreigners think of the United States, they usually think of New York city. For them New York is the United States, because it is the largest city in the country. Nothing is more erroneous. It is especially important for a foreigner to realize that New York is not the most typical American city. In a nation that is as large and as varied as the United States there are many other cities large and small, that seem more representative of real American life.

TRANSLATION

Οἱ Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες

Ὁ Χριστόφορος Κολόμβος ἀνακάλυψε τὴν Ἀμερικὴ τὸ 1492. Ὅταν ξεκίνησε γιὰ τὸ ταξίδι του διασχίζοντας τὸν Ἀτλαντικὸν Ὠκεανὸ ἀπὸ τὴν Εὐρώπη, ἤλπιζε νὰ φθάση σ' ἕνα μέρος τῆς Ἀσίας γνωστὸ σὰν Ἰνδίες. Μετὰ πέντε ἑβδομάδες ἔφθασαν μπρὸς σ' ἕνα νησί. Πιστεύοντας, ὅτι εἶχε φθάσει στὶς Ἰνδίες, ὀνόμασε τοὺς ἀνθρώπους Ἰνδιάνους. Ὁ Κολόμβος ἔκανε λάθος

Τὰ νησιά, ποὺ εἶχε ἀνακαλύψει, ἦταν ἀνάμεσα στὴν Βόρεια καὶ στὴ Νότια Ἀμερική, κι ἡ Ἀσία ἦταν χιλιάδες μίλια μακριά. Ἀλλὰ τὸ ὄνομα, ποὺ ἔδωσε στοὺς ντόπιους ἀνθρώπους τοῦ Νέου Κόσμου, δὲν ἄλλαξε ποτέ. Μέχρι σήμερα ὀνομάζονται Ἰνδιάνοι. Πολλοὶ Εὐρωπαῖοι ἔπλευσαν πρὸς δυσμάς, γιὰ νὰ ἐξερευνήσουν τὰ νέα ἐδάφη. Περισσότεροι ἦλθαν νὰ κάνουν τὰ σπίτια τους στὸν Νέο Κόσμο. Ὅπου πήγαιναν, ἔβρισκαν φυλὲς Ἰνδιάνων. Μερικὲς ἀπὸ τὶς φυλὲς ἦταν φιλικὲς καὶ καλωσόριζαν τοὺς λευκοὺς ἀνθρώπους. Μερικὲς ἦταν ἐχθρικὲς καὶ προσπάθησαν νὰ ὁδηγήσουν (νὰ διώξουν) τοὺς ἀποίκους μακριά. Σιγά-σιγὰ οἱ Ἰνδιάνοι ὑποτάχθηκαν στοὺς λευκοὺς ἀνθρώπους καὶ τὰ ἐδάφη τους μοιράστηκαν σὲ ἀποικίες, ποὺ ἀνῆκαν σὲ διάφορες χῶρες τῆς Εὐρώπης. Καθὼς οἱ ἀποικίες μεγάλωναν καὶ γινόταν ἰσχυρές, οἱ περισσότερες ἀπ' αὐτὲς κέρδισαν τὴν ἐλευθερία τους κι ἔγιναν ἀνεξάρτητες ἢ ξεχωριστὰ ἔθνη. Σήμερα ὁ Καναδᾶς εἶναι τὸ μόνο μεγάλο τμῆμα τῆς Ἀμερικῆς ποὺ δὲν ἔχει ξεχωριστῆ ἀπὸ τὴ μητέρα χώρα τῆς Εὐρώπης. Ὑπάρχουν ἀκόμα πολλοὶ Ἰνδιάνοι στὸν Νέο Κόσμο ἀλλὰ δὲν ἔχουν γῆ δική τους.

Ὅταν οἱ ξένοι σκέπτωνται τὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες, συνήθως σκέπτονται τὴν πόλη τῆς Νέας Ὑόρκης. Γι' αὐτοὺς ἡ Νέα Ὑόρκη εἶναι οἱ Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες, γιατὶ εἶναι ἡ μεγαλύτερη πόλη τῆς χώρας. Τίποτε δὲν εἶναι πιὸ λανθασμένο. Εἶναι εἰδικὰ σπουδαῖο γιὰ ἕναν ξένο νὰ καταλάβη, ὅτι ἡ Νέα Ὑόρκη δὲν εἶναι ἡ πιὸ τυπικὴ ἀμαρικανικὴ πόλη. Σὲ ἕνα ἔθνος ποὺ εἶναι τόσο μεγάλο καὶ τόσο ποικίλο ὅσο οἱ Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες ὑπάρχουν πολλὲς ἄλλες πόλεις, μεγάλες καὶ μικρές, ποὺ φαίνονται περισσότερο ἀντιπροσωπευτικὲς τῆς πραγματικῆς ἀμερικανικῆς ζωῆς.

EXERCISE 264

COMPREHENSION

(ἐρωτήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ μαθήματος)

Answer the following questions in complete sentences:

Who discovered America?
When?
What did he hope to reach?
How long did they travel?
How did he call the people there?

Was he mistaken?
Where were the islands he had discovered?
Was the name he gave to the people ever changed?
How are these people called today?
What did many Europeans do?
What did they find wherever they went?
Were the Indian tribes friendly or unfriendly?
Were the Indians conquered by the white men?
Where did the new colonies belong?
Did most of them win their freedom?
Is Canada a separate nation today?
Are there many Indians living in the United States today?
Are you going to visit the United States some day?
Will you go by plane or by boat?
When you think of the United States, do you think of New York first?
What is it important for a foreigner to realize?
What cities do most Americans think at first when they think of your country?

EXERCISE 265

Γράψτε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως στὸν Παρακείμενο:

We ... (miss) Virginia a great deal this year.
We ... (learn) many new words.
I ... never ... (meet) her.
Mr. Miller ... (be) in New York many times.
Modern Miami ... (develop) only since 1896.
... you ever ... (take) a trip by boat?
Yes, I ... (travel) by boat many times.
I ... (lose) my book.
... you ... (see) that movie?
Miami ... (become) a modern city.
He ... just ... (finish) high school.
His brother ... just ... (graduate) from College.
Our friends ... just ... (leave) for New York.
They ... just ... (reach) Miami today.

We . . . just . . . (receive) a telegram from them.
I . . . not . .. (hear) from him recently.
I . . . just . . . (finish) my school.
He . . . (study) in Paris.
Mary . . . just . . . (come) in.
We all . . . (study) English.

EXERCISE 266

Συμπληρῶστε τὰ κενὰ τῶν προτάσεων μὲ τὸ ἴδιο ρῆμα δυὸ φορές. Τὴν πρώτη μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο καὶ τὴν δεύτερη μὲ τὸν Παρακείμενο τοῦ be καὶ τὴν κατάληξη -ing στὸ κύριο ρῆμα. (Παρακείμενο Διαρκείας).

Example:

I . . . study English for two years.
I have studied English for two years.
I have been studying English since last may.

We . . . (work) there for one year.
He . . . (work) there since last June.
He . . . (live) in Miami for one year.
He . . . (live) in Miami since he left here last year.
She . . . not . . . (smoke) for a month .
He . . . not . . . (smoke) since he was sick.
I . . . (study) with this class for five months.
I . . . (study) with this class since February.
We . . . (wait) for them for half an hour.
We . . . (wait) for them since five-thirty.
How long . . . you . . . (drive) that car?
I . . . (drive) this car for five years.
I . .. (drive) this car since I came here.
How long . . . you . .. (feel) that way?
I . .. (feel) this way for a week.
I . .. (feel) this way since last Sunday.
How long . .. you . . . (practice)?
I . . . (practice) for two hours.

I ... (practice) since dinner.
How long ... Virginia ... (live) with the Millers?

EXERCISE 267

'Απαντήστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις μὲ 'Αόριστο καὶ τὴν λέξη ago:

How long ago did Tom leave?
How long ago did you begin to study English?
How long ago did you enter this class?
How long ago did you meet Mr. X?
How long ago did you see your dentist?
How long ago did you write to your married sister?
How long ago did you send your letter?
How long ago did you buy your new hat?
How long ago did you read that book?
How long ago did you have a vacation?

EXERCISE 268

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως τὸν 'Αόριστο ἢ τὸν Παρακείμενο:

I ... often ... (think) of them since they left.
I ... (think) of going but then it rained.
We ... (travel) by boat several times.
He ... (take) a boat trip during his vacation.
... you ... (read) this book?
Yes, I ... (read) it a month ago.
Our friends ... (leave) on the first of the month.
I ... (study) English for two years when I was in school.
I ... (study) English here for two years.
I ... (come) here to live in 1948.
It ... (rain) very hard yesterday.
It ... (rain) every day this week.
I ... (live) here since 1948.

She ... (be) in this class since February.
She ... (be) in this class when it began.

EXERCISE 269

Γράψτε στὰ κενὰ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς παρενθέσεως στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο:

They did know where Mr Miller ... (go).
They said that he ... not ... (be) at the office.
I ... (write) the letter before I received yours.
I ... (make) my plans before I knew that they were coming.
I ... not ... (realize) that, until you told me.
The mailman ... not ... (come) when I left the house.
I soon realized that I ... (dial) the wrong number.
They ... (be) in Washington a few days when I arrived.
After I ... (finish) breakfast I sat down to read the paper.
I didn't leave until I ... (read) the newspaper.

EXERCISE 270

Μετατρέψτε τὶς προτάσεις σὲ ἐρωτήσεις:

The streets are always crowded.
People always walk fast in New York.
He likes to get up early.
The hotel was full when he arrived.
They took a boat to New York.
They could not find a house easily.
They have seen the White House.
It would be very easy to go there.
They want to stay more there.
We will be there by noon if we leave now.

EXERCISE 271

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις:

Mr Miller is sitting ... Mrs Miller.

Their house is . . . the corner.
They live . . . Clark Street.
The car is . . . their house.
There were no rugs ... the floor.
The room has many pictures . . . the walls.
The mailman is waiting . . . the door .
I will meet you . . . three o'clock . .. . Monday.
When did she arrive . . . the United States?
Is she . . home now?
Why do you sit . . . that chair?
Is it very cold there . . . the winter?
Washington is not . . . New York.
They arrived . . . the first . . . August.
This book is different that ... one.

XXVIII

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 264

Christopher Columbus discovered America in 1492.
He hoped to reach a part of Asia known as India.
They travelled five weeks.
He called the people Indians.
Yes, he was mistaken.
The islands he had discovered were between North America and South America.
The name he gave to the native people of the New World was never changed.
They are called Indians.
Many Europeans sailed westward to explore the new lands.
Wherever they went they found tribes of Indians.
Some of the tribes were friendly and welcomed the white people. Some were unfriendly and tried to drive the settlers away.
Yes, little by little the Indians were conquered by the white men.
The new colonies belonged to different countries of Europe.
Yes, most of them won their freedom and became independent and separate countries.
Today Canada is the only large part of America which was not separated from the mother country in Europe.
Yes, there are stil many Indians in the New World but they don't have lands of their own.
Yes, I am going to visit the United States some day.
I will go by plane.
Yes, when I think of the United States, I usually think of the New York city.

Is it especially important for a foreigner to realize that New York is not the most typical American city.
They think at first Athens and Salonica.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 265

We have missed Virginia a great deal this year.
We have learnt many new words.
I have never met her.
Mr Miller has been in New York many times.
Modern Miami has developed only since 1896.
Have you ever taken a trip by boat?
Yes, I have travelled by boat many times.
I have lost my book.
Have you seen that movie?
Miami has become a modern city.
He has just finished high school.
His brother has just graduated from College.
Our friends have just left for New York.
They have just reached Miami today.
We have just received a telegram from them.
I have not heard from him recently.
I have just finished my school.
He has studied in Paris.
Mary has just come in.
We all have studied English.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 266

We have worked there for one year.
He has been working there since last June.
He has lived in Miami for one year.
He has been living in Miami since he left here last year.
She has not smoked for a month.
He has not been smoking since he was sick.
I have studied with this class for five months.
I have been studying with this class since February.

We have waited for them for half an hour.
We have been waiting for them since five-thirty.
How long have you driven that car?
I have driven this car for five years.
I have been driving this car since I came here.
How long have you felt that way?
I have felt this way for a week.
I have been feeling this way since last Sunday.
How long have you practiced?
I have practiced for two hours.
I have been practicing since dinner.
How long has Virginia lived with the Millers?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 267

He left an hour ago.
I began to study English five years ago.
I entered this class three months ago.
I met Mr X three weeks ago.
I saw my dentist two years ago.
I wrote to my married sister three days ago.
I sent my letter ten hours ago.
I bought my new hat three days ago.
I read this book a month ago.
I had a vacation a week ago.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 268

I have often thought of them since they left.
I thought of going but then it rained.
We have travelled by boat several times.
He took a boat trip during his vacation.
Have you read this book?
Yes, I read it a month ago.
Our friends left on the first of the month.
I was studying English for two years when I was in school.
I have studied English here for two years.

I came here to live in 1948.
It rained very hard yesterday.
It has rained every day this week.
I have been living here since 1948.
She has been in this class since February.
She was in this class when it began.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 269

They did not know where Mr Miller had gone.
They said that he had not been at the office.
I had written the letter before I received yours.
I had made my plans before I knew that they were coming.
I had not realized that until you told me.
The mailman had not come when I left the house.
I soon realized that I had dialed the wrong number.
They had been in Washington a few days when I arrived.
After I had finished breakfast I sat down to read the paper.
I didn't leave until I had read the newspaper.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 270

Are the streets always crowded?
Do people always walk fast in New York?
Does he like to get up early?
Was the hotel full when he arrived?
Did they take a boat to New York?
Couldn't they find a house easily?
Have they seen the White House?
Would it be very easy to go there?
Do they want to stay more there?
Will we be there by noon if we leave now?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 271

Mr Miller is sitting near Mrs Miller.
Their house is opposite the corner.

They live on Clark Street.
The car is in front of their house.
There were no rugs on the floor.
The room has many pictures on the walls.
The mailman is waiting at the door.
I will meet you at three o'clock on Monday.
When did she arrive in the United States?
Is she at home now?
Why do you sit on that chair?
Is it very cold there in the winter?
Washington is not like New York.
They arrived on the first of August.
This book is different from that one.

HAVE TO

Τὸ ρῆμα have to χρησιμοποιεῖται, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράση ἀνάγκη. Ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

Ὁ Ἀόριστος τοῦ ρήματος have to εἶναι had to καὶ ὁ Μέλλων will have to. Ἕνας τύπος τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος do πάντοτε χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν ἀρνητικὸ κι ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο τοῦ Ἐνεστῶτα καὶ τοῦ Ἀορίστου.

Examples:

We have to write these sentences = πρέπει νὰ γράψουμε αὐτὲς τὶς προτάσεις.

Ἐδῶ τὸ have δὲν ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος have = ἔχω, ἀλλὰ πρέπει, εἶναι ἀνάγκη.

Do we have to write these sentences?
θὰ εἶναι ἡ ἐρώτηση, καὶ
No, we don't have to write these sentences
θὰ εἶναι ἡ ἄρνηση.

Mary went into the country so John had to cook his own dinner = ἡ Μαίρη πῆγε στὴν ἐξοχή, ἔτσι ὁ John ἔπρεπε νὰ μαγειρέψη τὸ δικό του γεῦμα (have = ὄχι ἔχω ἀλλὰ πρέπει).

The soup boiled over and the cat ate it, so John had to go out to a restau-

rant = ἡ σούπα ἔβρασε κι ἡ γάτα τὴν ἔφαγε, ἔτσι ὁ John πῆγε ἔξω σὲ κανένα ἑστιατόριο.

Mr Dawson has to work very hard. He has a wife and ten children = ὁ κύριος Dawson πρέπει νὰ δουλεύῃ πολὺ σκληρά. Αὐτὸς ἔχει μιὰ σύζυγο καὶ δέκα παιδιά.

Look at those shoes. I shall have to take them to be repaired = κύτταξε αὐτὰ τὰ παπούτσια, θὰ πρέπει νὰ τὰ πάω νὰ τὰ διορθώσω.

Mary didn't feel well so we had to ask the doctor to come and see her = ἡ Μαίρη δὲν αἰσθανόταν καλά, ἔτσι ἔπρεπε νὰ καλέσουμε τὸν γιατρὸ νὰ ἔλθῃ νὰ τὴν δῇ.

He has to go home early = πρέπει νὰ πάῃ σπίτι νωρίς.

We shall have to leave in the morning = θὰ ἀναγκασθοῦμε νὰ φύγουμε τὸ πρωΐ.

We have to begin before five o'clock = πρέπει ν' ἀρχίσουμε πρὶν ἀπὸ τὶς πέντε ἡ ὥρα.

We shall to do it again = θὰ πρέπει νὰ τὸ κάνουμε πάλι.

MUST

Τὸ ρῆμα must ἐκφράζει ἀναγκαιότητα καὶ πιθανότητα. Ὅταν τὸ must ἐκφράζῃ ἀνάγκη, ἔχει τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια μὲ τὸ ρῆμα have to.

Τὸ must εἶναι γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα τοῦ Ἐνεστῶτα ἀκολουθούμενο ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

Ὁ ἀρνητικὸς τύπος must not ἢ mustn't ἐκφράζει ἀπαγόρευση. Τὸ ρῆμα must δὲν ἔχει Ἀόριστο ἢ Μέλλοντα. Γι' αὐτὸ μεταχειριζόμαστε τοὺς χρόνους τοῦ have to. Ἔτσι ὁ Ἀόριστος τοῦ must εἶναι had to καὶ ὁ Μέλλων will have to. Στὶς ἐρωτήσεις καὶ ἀρνήσεις στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα μόνο τὸ βοηθητικὸ must χρειάζεται. Τὸ do καὶ τὸ does δὲν χρησιμοποιοῦνται, π.χ:

You must study now = πρέπει νὰ μελετήσῃς τώρα.
Must you study now?

Στὸν Ἀόριστο ἡ ἴδια πρόταση you had to study last night = ἔπρεπε νὰ μελετήσῃς χθὲς τὸ βράδυ, στὴν ἐρώτηση θὰ πάρῃ τὸ did, γιατὶ εἶναι Ἀόριστος π.χ:

Did you have to study last night?

Ἡ ἴδια πρόταση στὸν Μέλλοντα θὰ γίνη:

You will have to study tomorrow = θὰ πρέπει νὰ μελετήσης αὔριο.
Will you have to study tomorrow? = θὰ πρέπει νὰ μελετήσης αὔριο;

You mustn't study now ... (ἀπαγόρευση - Ἐνεστώς).
You don't have to study now ... (μὴ ἀναγκαῖον - Ἐνεστώς).
You didn't have to study last night ... (μὴ ἀναγκαῖον - Ἀόριστος).
You won't have to study tonight ... (μὴ ἀναγκαῖον - Μέλλων).

You must do it at once = πρέπει νὰ τὸ κάνης ἀμέσως.
He mustn't tell me = δὲν πρέπει νὰ μοῦ τὸ πῆ.
They must sell it at once = πρέπει νὰ τὸ πουλήσουν ἀμέσως.
I must work as hard as I can = πρέπει νὰ ἐργάζωμαι τόσο σκληρὰ ὅσο μπορῶ (ὅσο πιὸ σκηρὰ μπορῶ).
He mustn't read the whole book = δὲν πρέπει νὰ διαβάση ὁλόκληρο τὸ βιβλίο.
She mustn't go home alone = αὐτὴ δὲν πρέπει νὰ πάη σπίτι μόνη.
They must change their old books = αὐτοὶ πρέπει νὰ ἀλλάξουν τὰ παλιά τους βιβλία.
They must pay twice, but we shan't have to = αὐτοὶ πρέπει νὰ πληρώσουν δυὸ φορὲς ἀλλὰ ἐμεῖς δὲν εἴμαστε ὑποχρεωμένοι.
They must take it away = πρέπει νὰ τὸ πάρουν μακριά.
She must wash up all the glasses = αὐτὴ πρέπει νὰ πλύνη ὅλα τὰ γιαλικά.

IT

Στὴν παθητικὴ φωνὴ ὑπάρχει ἐπίσης ἕνα ἄλλο ἀόριστο ὑποκείμενο, τὸ εἰσαγωγικὸ it.

Εἰσάγει δηλαδὴ τὸ it τὴν πρόταση στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή. Ἔτσι γενικὰ προτιμοῦμε τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς προτάσεως νὰ εἰσάγεται μὲ τὸ it σὰν ὑποκείμενο τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς. Ὅταν τὸ ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς προτάσεως εἶναι κάτι ἀόριστο, ὄχι πρόσωπο ἀλλὰ πρᾶγμα, τότε σὰν ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς ἔχουμε τὸ it.

Examples:

People say that figs are better for us than bananas = οἱ ἄνθρωποι λένε, ὅτι τὰ σῦκα εἶναι καλύτερα ἀπὸ τὶς μπανάνες.

Στὴν παθητικὴ φωνὴ ἔχουμε:

It is said that figs are better for us than bananas.

ἢ ἀκόμη καὶ τὸν τύπο:

Figs are said to be better for us than bananas. (ὁ δεύτερος τύπος εἶναι καλύτερος).

Somebody must have taken it while I was out = κάποιος πρέπει νὰ τὸ ἔχῃ πάρει, ἐνόσω ἤμουν ἔξω.

Παθητική: It must have been taken away while I was out.

You must iron this dress for tonight = πρέπει νὰ σιδερώσῃς αὐτὸ τὸ φόρεμα γιὰ ἀπόψε.

Παθητική: It (the dress) must be ironed for tonight.

The orchestra played that piece beautifully = ἡ ὀρχήστρα ἔπαιξε αὐτὸ τὸ κομάτι ὄμορφα.

Παθητική: It was beautifully played.

One can not eat an orange = κάποιος δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ φάῃ ἕνα πορτοκάλι.

Παθητική: It cannot be eaten.

They did nothing until he came = δὲν ἔκαναν τίποτε, ὥσπου νὰ ἔλθῃ.

Παθητική: Nothing was done until he came.

CAN - MAY

Τὰ ρήματα **can**, 'Αόριστος could, καὶ **may**, 'Αόριστος might, εἶναι βοηθητικὰ ρήματα, ὅπως καὶ τὰ ρήματα do - did, καὶ χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

Τὸ ρῆμα **can** ἐκφράζει ἱκανότητα ψυχικὴ ἢ φυσική. 'Εκφράζει δηλαδὴ τὴν ἰδέα, ὅτι ξέρουμε, πῶς νὰ κάνουμε κάτι ἢ εἴμαστε φυσικῶς ἱκανοὶ νὰ τὸ κάνουμε ἢ ἀκόμη ἐκφράζει τὴν ἰδέα, ὅτι οἱ περιστάσεις θὰ ἐπιτρέψουν μιὰ πράξη. 'Ο ἀρνητικὸς τύπος τοῦ can εἶναι can not καὶ ὁ σύντομος can't.

Examples:

Can he swim well? =μπορεῖ νὰ κολυμπήσῃ καλά;

No, he can't.

He can go swimming at Miami Beach = αὐτὸς μπορεῖ νὰ πάῃ κολυμπώντας ὡς τὴν ἀκτὴ τοῦ Μαϊάμι.

Τὸ ρῆμα can δὲν ἔχει τρεῖς χρόνους, ὅπως ὅλα τὰ ἄλλα ρήματα. Ἔχει μόνο Ἐνεστώτα κι Ἀόριστο. Τοῦ λείπει ἡ παθητικὴ Μετοχή. Ὁ Ἀόριστος τοῦ can κάνει could. Ἡ ἄρνηση εἶναι could not καὶ ὁ σύντομος τύπος couldn't.

He could not swim last year = αὐτὸς δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ κολυμπήση πέρσι.
He could not go to the party yesterday because he was tired = αὐτὸς δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ πάη στὸ πάρτυ χθές, γιατὶ ἦταν κουρασμένος.

Τὸ ρῆμα can εἶναι ἐλλειπτικό. Ἐκτὸς τῆς παθητικῆς Μετοχῆς ποὺ δὲν ὑπάρχει, λείπει κι ὁ Μέλλων, ὁ Παρακείμενος κι ὁ Ὑπερσυντέλικος. Ὅταν ὑπάρχῃ ἀνάγκη νὰ χρησιμοποιήσουμε ἕναν ἀπ' αὐτοὺς τοὺς χρόνους, τότε δανειζόμαστε τοὺς χρόνους τοῦ ρήματος be able = εἶμαι ἱκανός, ποὺ ἔχει τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια μὲ τὸ βοηθητικὸ can.

Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

Ἐνεστὼς	I can go	ἢ στὸ ἀντίστοιχο ρῆμα I am able to go.
Ἀόριστος	I could go	ἢ I was able to go.
Μέλλων	—	I will be able to go.
Παρακείμενος	—	I have been able to go.
Ὑπερσυντέλικος		I had been able to go.

Ἔτσι ἡ πρόταση:

He can leave his hat on the table,

θὰ γίνῃ στὸν Ἀόριστο:

He could leave his hat on the table,

στὸν Μέλλοντα:

He will be able to leave his hat on the table,

στὸν Παρακείμενο:

He has been able to leave his hat on the table,

καὶ στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο:

He had been able to leave his has on the table.

Ἐπίσης ἡ πρόταση:

I can understand him well,

θὰ γίνῃ στὸν Ἀόριστο:

I could understand him well,

στὸν Μέλλοντα;

I will be able to understand him well,

στὸν Παρακείμενο:

I have been able to understand him well,

καὶ στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο:

I had been able to understand him well.

Τὸ ρῆμα **may** = μπορῶ, ἐκφράζει εἴτε ἄδεια εἴτε πιθανότητα. Δὲν ὑπάρχει σύντομος τύπος στὴν ἄρνηση π.χ:

May I borrow your English book? = μπορῶ νὰ δανεισθῶ τὸ ἀγγλικό σου βιβλίο;

Ἐδῶ αὐτὴ ἡ πρόταση ἐκφράζει ἄδεια. Ζητοῦμε τὴν ἄδεια ἀπὸ κάποιον, γιὰ νὰ κάνουμε κάτι.

Of course you may borrow it = βέβαια μπορεῖς νὰ τὸ δανεισθῇς.

Κι ὁ ἄλλος μᾶς δίνει τὴν ἄδεια, ποὺ ζητᾶμε.

I may see Mary tomorrow = μπορεῖ νὰ δῶ τὴν Μαίρη αὔριο.

Ἡ πρόταση αὐτὴ φανερώνει τὸ πιθανόν. Μπορεῖ νὰ τὴ δῶ τὴ Μαίρη μπορεῖ κι ὄχι, πιθανὸν ναί, ἀλλὰ ἴσως κι ὄχι. Ἀλλάζει ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ may.

He may have gone out because his hat isn't here = πιθανὸν νὰ βγῆκε ἔξω, γιατὶ τὸ καπέλο του δὲν εἶναι ἐδῶ.
He may have left, I haven't seen him since four o'clock = πιθανὸν νὰ ἔχη φύγει, δὲν τὸν ἔχω δῆ ἀπὸ τὶς τέσσερις ἡ ὥρα.

Ὁ Ἀόριστος τοῦ may εἶναι might. Ὅπως καὶ τὸ can ἔτσι καὶ τὸ may δὲν ἔχει δικούς του ἄλλους χρόνους, ἀλλὰ μόνο Ἐνεστῶτα κι Ἀόριστο. Τὸ might ἐκφράζει κι αὐτὸ ἄδεια καὶ πιθανότητα. Ἐπίσης ἐκφράζει μιὰ ἐλαφριὰ πιθανότητα στὸ μέλλον. Δὲν ὑπάρχει σύντομος τύπος στὴν ἄρνηση. Δὲν λέμε mightn't ἀλλὰ might not.

Examples:

Her mother said that she might go to the dance = ἡ μητέρα της εἶπε, ὅτι μποροῦσε νὰ πάῃ στὸ χορό.
'Εδῶ τὸ might ἐκφράζει ἄδεια.

I said (that) I might see her tomorrow = εἶπα, ὅτι πιθανὸν νὰ τὴν ἔβλεπα αὔριο.
'Εδῶ τὸ might ἐκφράζει τὸ πιθανόν.

I might see her tomorrow but I am not sure = πιθανὸν νὰ τὴν δῶ αὔριο, ἀλλὰ δὲν εἶμαι βέβαιος.
Τὸ might ἐδῶ ἐκφράζει μιὰ μικρὴ πιθανότητα στὸ μέλλον.

Do you think it might rain this afternoon? = νομίζεις, ὅτι πιθανὸν νὰ βρέξῃ ἀπόψε;
He thought that they might have left but he did not know = σκέφθηκε, ὅτι ἴσως εἶχαν φύγει, ἀλλὰ δὲν τὸ ἤξερε.
She might have gone with us if we had waited = αὐτὴ πιθανὸν νὰ εἶχε φύγει μαζί μας, ἂν τὴν περιμέναμε.
You might seen him if you come sooner = πιθανὸν νὰ τὸν εἶχες δῆ, ἂν εἶχες ἔλθει νωρίτερα.

Τὸ ρῆμα may, ἐπειδὴ δὲν ἔχει δικούς του χρόνους, σχηματίζει τοὺς ἄλλους χρόνους περιφραστικά. Ἔτσι Ἐνεστὼς may, Ἀόριστος might, Παρακείμενος may have, Ὑπερσυντέλικος might have. Δηλαδὴ στὸν Παρακείμενο καὶ στὸν Ὑπερσυντέλικο πρέπει νὰ ὑπάρχῃ ἀμέσως μετὰ τὸ have ἡ παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ ἑνὸς ἄλλου ρήματος. Σχηματίζονται αὐτοὶ οἱ χρόνοι μὲ τὸ may have καὶ τὸ might have, ἀλλὰ καὶ μὲ τὴν παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος τῆς προτάσεως.

Examples:

He may leave = αὐτὸς πιθανὸν νὰ φύγῃ.
He may have already left = αὐτὸς πιθανὸν νὰ ἔχῃ ἤδη φύγει.
I thought (that) he might have left before it rained = σκέφθηκα, (ὅτι) αὐτὸς πιθανὸν νὰ εἶχε φύγει, πρὶν νὰ βρέξῃ.

The door is open = ἡ πόρτα εἶναι ἀνοιχτή.

They may have come when we were downtown = αὐτοὶ πιθανὸν νὰ ἔχουν ἔλθει, ἐνόσω ἐμεῖς ἥμασταν κάτω στὴν πόλη.
I promised (that) I might go but I was not sure = ὑποσχέθηκα, (ὅτι) πιθανὸν νὰ πήγαινα, ἀλλὰ δὲν ἤμουν βέβαιος.

EXERCISE 272

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ can ἢ could:

. . . we finish the book this year?
Who . . . translate that sentence?
No one . . . translate it.
He says (that) he . . . wait for us.
He said (that) he . . . wait for us.
You . . . see the Washington Monument from many parts of the city.
She said (that) she . . . be there by noon.
You . . . travel by plane or by train.
. . . you tell me where she is.
I . . . come to the last class.
I . . . have sent it by air mail.
We . . . have come earlier.

EXERCISE 273

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ may ἢ might:

. . . I borrow your book?
Certainly you . . . use it.
You . . . enter this class if you already know some some English.
Her mother says (that) she . . . go.
Her mother said (that) she . . . go.

EXERCISE 274

Γράψτε τὶς προτάσεις στὸν Ἀοριστο, Μέλλοντα καὶ Παρακείμενο:

Example:

I can go there.
I could go there.
I will be able to go there.
I have been able to go there.

He can play tennis.
We can do this lesson.
She can cook very well.
I can go early if he lets me.
She can make her own dresses.
She can read a great deal.
He says I can have another one.
I can go swimming when it is warm.
She can play the piano.
John can stay up late.
We can speak English.
I can go out to the dance.
John can climb the tree.
You can borrow his book.
He can find a good answer.

ΤΟ ΡΗΜΑ AGREE

Τὸ ρῆμα **agree** (αγκρὶ) = συμφωνῶ, συντάσσεται μὲ διάφορες προθέσεις, μὲ τὸ that καὶ μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο.

Τὸ agree μὲ τὸ that ἀμέσως ἔπειτα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα.

Πολλὲς φορὲς τὸ that μέσα στὴν πρόταση παραλείπεται, ἀλλὰ πάντοτε ἐννοεῖται. Εἰσάγει δευτερεύουσα πρόταση, π. χ.:

Do you agree that my plan is better than yours? = συμφωνεῖτε, ὅτι τὸ σχέδιό μου εἶναι καλύτερο ἀπὸ τὸ δικό σας;
No one would agree that life was better three hundred years ago = κανένας δὲν θὰ συμφωνοῦσε, ὅτι ἡ ζωὴ ἦταν καλύτερη τριακόσια χρόνια πρίν.

Τὸ ρῆμα agree μὲ 'Απαρέμφατο κι ἕνα ἄλλο ρῆμα στὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο του:

Mr Williams has agreed to speak at the meeting = = ὁ κύριος Williams ἔχει συμφωνήσει νὰ μιλήση στὴν συγκέντρωση.

Has she agreed to marry you? = ἔχει συμφωνήσει νὰ σὲ παντρευτῆ;

Τὸ ρῆμα agree μὲ τὴν πρόθεση about ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ πρόσωπα:

They could not agree about who should do the work = δὲν μποροῦσαν νὰ συμφωνήσουν γιὰ τὸ ποιὸς θὰ ἔκανε τὴ δουλειά.
They can not agree about how the work should be done = δὲν μποροῦσαν νὰ συμφωνήσουν γιὰ τὸ πῶς ἔπρεπε νὰ γίνῃ ἡ δουλειά.

Τὸ ρῆμα agree μὲ τὴν πρόθεση with ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ πρόσωπα:

I quite agree with you = σχεδὸν συμφωνῶ μαζί σου.
Do you agree with George? = συμφωνεῖς μὲ τὸ Γιῶργο;

'Επίσης τὸ agree μὲ τὴν πρόθεση to χωρὶς δεύτερο ρῆμα μέσα στὴν πρόταση:

They agreed to our plans = συμφώνησαν στὰ σχέδιά μας.
I told him about our plan and he agreed to it = τοῦ εἶπα γιὰ τὸ σχέδιό μας κι αὐτὸς συμφώνησε μ' αὐτό.

ΤΟ ΡΗΜΑ NEED

Τὸ ρῆμα **need** (νιντ) = χρειάζομαι, ἔχω ἀνάγκη, συντάσσεται μὲ διαφόρους τρόπους μέσα στὴν πρόταση.

Τὸ need μὲ οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀντωνυμία σὰν ἀντικείμενό του.

Small children need more sleep than grown-up, children = τὰ μικρὰ παιδιὰ χρειάζονται περισσότερον ὕπνο ἀπὸ τὰ μεγάλα παιδιά.

He needs a new hat but he does not need new shoes = χρειάζεται ἕνα καινούργιο καπέλο, ἀλλὰ δὲν χρειάζεται καινούργια παπούτσια.
Does Mary need any new clothes? = χρειάζεται ἡ Μαίρη καθόλου καινούργια ροῦχα;
Do you need any help? = σοῦ χρειάζεται καθόλου βοήθεια;

Τὸ ρῆμα need συντάσσεται μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο κι ἕνα δεύτερο ρῆμα στὸν ἁπλὸ χρόνο, π. χ.:

He always needs to remember that he has not enough money to buy a new pair of shoes = αὐτὸς πάντοτε εἶναι ἀνάγκη νὰ θυμᾶται, ὅτι δὲν ἔχει ἀρκετὰ χρήματα, γιὰ νὰ ἀγοράση ἕνα καινούργιο ζευγάρι παπούτσια.
If you will lock your house well, you will not need to worry when you are away on vacations = ἂν κλειδώσης τὸ σπίτι σου καλά, δὲν θὰ χρειάζεται νὰ ἀνησυχῆς, ὅταν θὰ βρίσκεσαι μακριὰ γιὰ διακοπές.

Ἐπίσης τὸ need συντάσσεται μὲ οὐσιαστικὰ ἢ ρήματα, ποὺ ἔχουν τὴν κατάληξη -ing (γερούνδιο), π. χ.:

The work needs doing (to be done) at once = ἡ δουλειὰ χρειάζεται νὰ γίνη ἀμέσως.
These shoes need mending (to be mended) = αὐτὰ τὰ παπούτσια χρειάζονται μπάλωμα.

Γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσουμε ἔλλειψη ὑποχρεώσεως ἢ ἀνάγκη νά κάνουμε κάτι, δηλαδὴ τὸ ἀντίθετο τοῦ must = πρέπει, ἔχουμε τὸν τύπο need μὲ τὸ not.

You must go now = πρέπει νὰ πᾶς τώρα.
No, you need not go just now, you can stay a little longer = ὄχι, δὲν εἶναι ἀνάγκη νὰ φύγης ἀμέσως τώρα, μπορεῖς νὰ μείνης λίγο ἀκόμα.
I needn't do my homework again = δὲν χρειάζεται νὰ κάνω τὴν γραφικὴ μου ἐργασία πάλι.

PHMATIKA (VERBALS)

Τὰ ρήματα χωρίζονται σὲ δυὸ κατηγορίες, σὲ τέλεια καὶ ἀτελῆ.

Καὶ τέλεια λέγονται τὰ ρήματα ἐκεῖνα, ποὺ μποροῦν νὰ κάνουν κά-

ποια διαπίστωση γιὰ τὸ ὑποκείμενο. Ἀ τ ε λ ῆ δὲ ἐκεῖνα, ποὺ δὲν μποροῦν μόνα τους νὰ κάνουν κάποια διαπίστωση γιὰ τὸ ὑποκείμενο. Ἡ τελευταία αὐτὴ κατηγορία δὲν περιλαμβάνει τὰ καθαυτὸ ρήματα, ἀλλὰ ὁρισμένους τύπους, ποὺ μοιάζουν πολὺ μὲ τὰ ρήματα, χωρὶς νὰ εἶναι ρήματα. Οἱ τύποι αὐτοί, ποὺ πολλοὶ συγγραφεῖς ὀνομάζουν ρ η μ α τ ι κ ὰ (verbals), εἶναι τὸ γ ε ρ ο ύ ν δ ι ο (gerund), ἡ Μ ε τ ο χ ὴ (participle) καὶ τὸ Ἀ π α ρ έ μ φ α τ ο (infinitive).

Τί εἶναι ὅμως ρηματικὸ (verbal);

Ὁρισμός. Τὸ ρηματικὸ εἶναι μιὰ λέξη, ποὺ μοιάζει μ' ἕνα τέλειο ρῆμα στὴ μορφὴ καὶ στὴ δυνατότητα νὰ παίρνη ὑποκείμενα, κατηγορούμενα, ἀντικείμενα κι ἐμπρόθετους προσδιορισμούς, μὰ ποὺ διαφέρει ἀπ' αὐτὸ στὸ ὅτι δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ κάνη μόνο του μιὰ πλήρη διαπίστωση.

Ἄς πάρουμε μερικὰ παραδείγματα:

Edgar struck Stanley
Edgar striking Stanley . . .
Striking Stanley . . .
Stanley struck by Edgar . . .
Edgar to strike Stanley . . .
Edgar strike_ Stanley . . .

Ἀπὸ τὰ παραδείγματα αὐτὰ μόνο τὸ πρῶτο (Edgar struck Stanley) περιέχει ρῆμα. Ὅλα τὰ ἄλλα παραδείγματα περιέχουν ρ η μ α τ ι κ ὰ (verbals).

Ἄς δοῦμε τώρα τὸ καθένα ἀπὸ τὰ ρ η μ α τ ι κ ὰ (verbals) χωριστά:

ΓΕΡΟΥΝΔΙΟ

(GERUND)

Τὸ γερούνδιο ἔχει τὴν κατάληξη -ing.

Στὰ παλαιότερα ἀγγλικὰ ἔπαιρνε καὶ ἄρθρο κι εἶχε καθαρὴ σημασία οὐσιαστικοῦ, π. χ.:

The c o m i n g of the ship.

Ἀργότερα ὅμως ἔφυγε τὸ ἄρθρο καὶ τὸ γερούνδιον ἀπέκτησε τὰ χαρα-

κτηριστικὰ τοῦ ρήματος, δηλαδὴ μπορεῖ πιὰ νὰ προσδιορίζεται ἀπὸ ἐπίρρημα, νὰ πάρη ὑποκείμενο, ἀντικείμενο κ.λ.π.

Σήμερα στὴ θέση τοῦ παλιοῦ ἔναρθρου γερουνδίου, ποὺ ἔπαιζε ρόλο οὐσιαστικοῦ, χρησιμοποιοῦμε γνήσια οὐσιαστικὰ βγαλμένα ἀπὸ τὸ ἴδιο τὸ ρῆμα. Ἔτσι ἀντὶ νὰ ποῦμε the coming of the ship λέμε συνήθως the arrival of the ship κ.ο.κ.

Ἀλλὰ κι ἂν ἀκόμη συναντήσουμε τέτοιες ἐκφράσεις σὲ ing μὲ ἄρθρο, δὲν πρόκειται γιὰ γερούνδια, ἀλὰ γιὰ οὐσιαστικά. Αὐτὸ φαίνεται καθαρὰ ἀπὸ τὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα:

The racing of the motor ruined the car.
Racing the motor ruined the car.

Ἀπὸ τὰ παραδείγματα αὐτὰ μόνο στὸ δεύτερο τὸ racing εἶναι γερούνδιο. Στὸ πρῶτο εἶναι οὐσιαστικό.

Σχηματισμὸς τοῦ γερουνδίου

Τὸ γερούνδιον ἔχει δυὸ χρόνους: Ἐνεστώτα καὶ Παρακείμενο. Ἔχει ἐπίσης δυὸ φωνές, ἐνεργητικὴ καὶ παθητική.

Νὰ πῶς σχηματίζονται οἱ χρόνοι τοῦ γερουνδίου :

	Active Voice	Passive Voice
Present:	shooting	being shot
Present Perfect:	having shot	having been shot

Examples:

Shooting is against the law.
The defendant's having shot the policeman reacted against him.
Being shot is no joke.
His having been shot made him nervous.

Χρήση τοῦ γερουνδίου

Τὸ γερούνδιο ἔχει τόσο τὰ χαρακτηριστικὰ τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ ὅσο καὶ τὰ χαρακτηριστικὰ τοῦ ρήματος. Ἀνάλογη λοιπὸν εἶναι κι ἡ χρήση του μέσα στὴν πρόταση.

Ἔχοντας τὰ χαρακτηριστικὰ τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ γερούνδιον χρησιμοποιεῖται:

α) **σὰν ὑποκείμενο** (subject of a sentence), π. χ.:
T r e s p a s s i n g is forbidden.
W o r k i n g in these conditions is a pleasure.

β) **σὰν κατηγορούμενο** (complement of a sentence), π. χ.:
To keep money that you have found is s t e a l i n g.

γ) **σὰν ἀντικείμενο** (object of a sentence), π. χ.:
I remember s e e i n g him.
Your hair needs c u t t i n g.
The position required his c o p y i n g the encyclopaedia in longhand.

δ) **σὰν ἐμπρόθετος προσδιορισμὸς** (object of a preposition), π. χ.:
He began by e x p l a i n i n g the meaning of the words.

Ἔχοντας πάλι τὰ χαρακτηριστικὰ τοῦ ρήματος τὸ γερούνδιο:

α) Μπορεῖ νὰ πάρῃ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, π. χ.:
Meeting you has been a great pleasure.

β) Μπορεῖ νὰ προσδιορίζεται ἀπὸ ἐπίρρημα, π. χ.:
She likes d r i v i n g fast.
R e a d i n g poetry well needs a lot of practice.

γ) Μπορεῖ τὸ ἴδιο τὸ γερούνδιο νὰ προσδιορίζῃ οὐσιαστικό, π. χ.;
A walking-stick, a dancing-teacher,
a travelling-rug.

Προσέξτε τώρα αὐτὴ τὴ διαφορά.:

Participle	**Gerund**
A dancing bear (= a bear which dances)	a dancing-teacher (=a teacher of dancing)
a travelling circus (=a	a travelling-rug (=a rug

circus which travels) of travelling)

Δηλαδή: α) στὰ σύνθετα οὐσιαστικὰ μὲ γερούνδια ὑπάρχει παύλα, ἐνῶ στὰ σύνθετα οὐσιαστικὰ μὲ Μετοχὴ δὲν ὑπάρχει παύλα.

β) Ὅταν λέμε a dancing bear, ἐννοοῦμε μιὰ ἀρκούδα, ποὺ χορεύει. Ἐνῶ ὅταν λέμε a dancing-teacher, ἐννοοῦμε τὸ δάσκαλο τοῦ χοροῦ κι ὄχι τὸ δάσκαλο ποὺ χορεύει.

γ) Τὸ γερούνδιο θέλει κτητικὸ ἐπίθετο ἢ γενικὴ πτώση οὐσιαστικοῦ π. χ.:

She was annoyed at y o u r s a y i n g that.
We are looking forward to M a r y ' s c o m i n g.

Στὴν καθημερινὴ ὅμως ὁμιλία πολλὲς φορὲς χρησιμοποιεῖται κι ἡ ὀνομαστικὴ ἀντὶ τῆς γενικῆς, π. χ.:

.... annoyed at you saying.

Τὸ σωστότερο ὅμως εἶναι νὰ ποῦμε:

....annoyed at your saying.

Ποιὰ ρήματα ἀκολουθοῦνται ἀπὸ γερούνδιο:

Δὲν εἶναι εὔκολο νὰ ἀποφασίση κανείς, πότε θὰ χρησιμοποιήση γερούνδιο μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα καὶ πότε Ἀπαρέμφατο. Ὑπάρχουν ὡστόσο ὁρισμένα ρήματα, ποὺ ἀκολουθοῦνται πάντα ἀπὸ γερούνδιο.

Αὐτὰ εἶναι:

advise, avoid, consider, delay, deny, detest, dislike, endure, enjoy, escape, excuse, fancy, finish, imagine, mind, miss, postpone, practise, risk stop, suggest, understand.

Examples:

I couldn't a v o i d m e e t i n g him.
He e n j o y s l i s t e n i n g to music.
Do you m i n d p a s s i n g the salt?

Ἐπίσης γερούνδιο βάζουμε ὕστερα ἀπὸ ὁρισμένα π ε ρ ι φ ρ α σ τ ι κ ὰ ρ ή μ α τ α (phrasal verbs), π. χ.:

You must go on working.
He wants to given up smoking.

Τέλος γερούνδιο βάζουμε, ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὶς φράσεις: it's no good, it's no use, is worth, to be fond of, capable of, sick of, look forward to κ.λ.π., π. χ.:

It's no use crying over spilt milk.
If a thing is worth doing, it's worth doing well.

ΜΕΤΟΧΗ

(PARTICIPLE)

Ὑπάρχουν δυὸ εἰδῶν Μετοχές, ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα (Present Participle) κι ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle). Καὶ ἡ μὲν Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα (Present Participle) ἔχει κατάληξη -ing, ἡ δὲ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle), τοὐλάχιστον στὰ ὁμαλὰ ρήματα, ἔχει κατάληξη -ed. Ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχή, ὅπως εἴδαμε, εἶναι ἕνας ἀπὸ τοὺς ἀρχικοὺς χρόνους (principal parts) τοῦ ρήματος.

Ὅπως βλέπετε, ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα ἔχει τὸν ἴδιο τύπο (σὲ ing) μὲ τὸ γερούνδιο. Ἡ διαφορά τους ἔγκειται στὸ ὅτι, ἐνῶ τὸ γερούνδιο χρησιμοποιεῖται σὰν οὐσιαστικό, ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα χρησιμοποιεῖται μᾶλλον σὰν ἐπίθετο.

Τὰ ρήματα may, shall, can, will, must, ought, use (to) δὲν ἔχουν Μετοχή.

Διαφορὰ Μετοχῆς τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα καὶ Παθητικῆς Μετοχῆς.
Ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα (Present Participle) κατὰ κανόνα εἶναι ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς καὶ ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle) παθητικῆς φωνῆς. Νὰ μερικὰ παραδείγματα, ὅπου φαίνεται καθαρὰ αὐτὴ ἡ διαφορά:

He found the fire burning brightly (= the fire was burning. Active Voice).
He found the house burned down (= the house was burned. Passive Voice).

I heard him p l a y i n g the «Moonlight Sonata» (= he was playing. Active Voice).
I heard the «Moonlight Sonata» p l a y e d by Myra Hess (= it was played by. Passive Voice).

Αὐτὸ ὅμως δὲν συμβαίνει πάντοτε. Ὑπάρχουν καὶ περιπτώσεις, ἔστω καὶ σπάνιες, ποὺ ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle) εἶναι ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς. Νὰ μερικὰ παραδείγματα:

a r e t i r e d teacher (= a teacher who has retired).
the f a l l e n angels (the angels who fell).
a w i t h e r e d rose (a rose that has withered).
an e s c a p e d prisoner (= a prisoner who has escaped).

Χρήση τῆς Μετοχῆς. Μέχρι τώρα ἔχουμε μάθει, ὅτι ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστώτα χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν χ ρ ό ν ω ν δ ι α ρ κ ε ί α ς, μαζὶ μὲ διαφόρους τύπους τοῦ ρήματος be, π. χ.:

I am writing a letter to my father.
They are visiting their aunt.

Ἐπίσης ἔχουμε μάθει, ὅτι ἡ Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται:

α) γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῶν συνθέτων χρόνων, μαζὶ μὲ διαφόρους τύπους τοῦ ρήματος have. π. χ.:
He has studied English before he came to the United States.
I have bought a new car.

β) γιὰ τὸ σχηματισμὸ τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς, μὲ τὸ ρῆμα be, π. χ.:
The glass was broken.
The exercises are written.

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπ' αὐτὲς τὶς λειτουργίες τῆς Μετοχῆς, αὐτὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται συντακτικῶς καὶ σ' ὅλες τὶς περιπτώσεις, ποὺ χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ τὸ ἐπίθετο. Ἔτσι ἡ Μετοχὴ μπορεῖ μέσα στὴν πρόταση νὰ ἔχῃ θέση:

α) **ἐπιθετικοῦ προσδιορισμοῦ** (attributive position), π. χ.:
a r i s i n g tide, a f e s t e r i n g sore, some e n c h a n t e d evening, a b u r n e d - o u t bearing.

β) **παραθέσεως** (appositive position), π.χ.:
A woman, frightened and quaking, ran up the steps.
Disgusted, Sven left the room.

γ) **κατηγορουμένου** (predicate position), π. χ.:
The delay was maddening.
The girl seemed worried.
He was left stranded.

δ) **κατηγορηματικοῦ προσδιορισμοῦ** (objective complement), π.χ.:
He thinks the job exciting.
He found John somewhat recovered.

Ἡ Μετοχὴ μπορεῖ ἀκόμη νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῆ καὶ σὰν οὐσιαστικό, π. χ.:
The wounded and dying were loaded into a boxcar.

Θέση τῆς Μετοχῆς: Ὅταν ἡ Μετοχὴ ἀναφέρεται σὲ οὐσιαστικό, συνήθως μπαίνει μπροστὰ ἀπ' αὐτό, π. χ.:

The spoken language.
The torn sails of the ships.
I have his written promise.

Ὅταν ὅμως ἡ Μετοχὴ ἀποτελῆ μέρος μιᾶς φράσης ἢ ἔχη μᾶλλον ρηματικὴ παρὰ ἐπιθετικὴ ἰδιότητα, ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ οὐσιαστικό, π. χ.:

The language spoken in England.
The ship came into port, it sails torn by the gale.
Here is a letter written by Charles I.

Πότε ὅμως ἡ Μετοχὴ ἔχει ἐπιθετικὴ καὶ πότε ρηματικὴ ἰδιότητα;

Δὲν εἶναι πάντοτε εὔκολο νὰ τὸ ξεχωρίσουμε. Πάντως ἡ ἐπιθετικὴ ἰδιότητα εἶναι ἐπικρατέστερη, ὅταν ἡ Μετοχὴ ἔχη μέσα στὴν πρόταση θέση ἐπιθετικοῦ προσδιορισμοῦ (attributive position) ἢ κατηγορουμένου (predicate position).
Στὶς ἄλλες περιπτώσεις ἡ ρηματικὴ ἰδιότητα εἶναι ἐπικρατέστερη.

Χρόνοι τῆς Μετοχῆς: Ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὴν Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστῶτα (Present

Participle) καὶ τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle). ἡ Μετοχὴ σχηματίζει κι ἄλλους χρόνους. Ἔτσι ἔχουμε:

α) **Μετοχὴ Παρακειμένου** (Perfect Participle), π. χ.:
having gone, having struck, having loved καὶ

1 β) **Μετοχὴ Παρακειμένου διαρκείας** (Perfect Continuous Participle), π. χ.:
Having been going, having been striking, having been loving.

Ἡ *Μετοχὴ* τοῦ *Ἐνεστῶτα* συνήθως δείχνει τὸν ἴδιο χρόνο μὲ τὸ ρῆμα, π. χ.:

Striking Stanley, Edgar hurt his hand (the striking and the hurting occured together).
The girl *peeling* the onion smiled shyly (she smiled while peeling).

Πολλὲς φορὲς ὅμως ἡ Μετοχὴ τοῦ Ἐνεστῶτα ἔχει διαφορετικὸ χρόνο ἀπὸ τὸ χρόνο τοῦ ρήματος, π. χ.:

The man *wearing* the blue suit *used to be* a Socialist.
The house now *being built* probably *will be rented*.

Ἡ *Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ* (Past Participle) δείχνει χρόνο προγενέστερο ἀπὸ τὸν χρόνο τοῦ ρήματος, π. χ.:

Struck by Edgar, Stanley feel dead (he is struck before he falls).
The trees *knocked down* by the wind *were chopped up* for firewood.

Ἐπίσης κι ἡ *Μετοχὴ Παρακειμένου* (Perfect Participle) δείχνει χρόνο προγενέστερο τοῦ χρόνου τοῦ ρήματος. Διαφέρει ὅμως ἀπὸ τὴν Παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ (Past Participle) στὸ ὅτι στὴ Μετοχὴ Παρακειμένου μποροῦμε εὔκολα νὰ ξεχωρίσουμε τὴν ἐνεργητικὴ ἀπὸ τὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, π. χ.:

Active: The dean, h a v i n g s u m m o n e d Melrose, waited impatiently.
Passive: Melrose, h a v i n g b e e n s u m m o n e d b y the dean, prepared his defense.

Τέλος ἡ Μ ε τ ο χ ὴ Π α ρ α κ ε ι μ έ ν ο υ Δ ι α ρ κ ε ί α ς (Perfect Continuous Participle) ἔχει μόνο ἐνεργητικὴ φωνή, π. χ.:

H a v i n g b e e n d r i v i n g all day, we were rather tired.

Ὁ τύπος ὅμως αὐτὸς ἐλάχιστα χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ τείνει νὰ ἐξαλειφθῇ ὁλότελα τόσο ἀπὸ τὸν προφορικὸ ὅσο κι ἀπὸ τὸν γραπτὸ λόγο.

ΤΟ ΑΠΑΡΕΜΦΑΤΟ

(THE INFINITIVE)

Τὸ **Ἀπαρέμφατο** (Infinitive) εἶναι ὁ τύπος ἐκεῖνος τοῦ ρήματος, ποὺ δείχνει τὴ σημασία τοῦ ρήματος στὴ γενική της ἔννοια. Μ' αὐτὸν τὸν τύπο βρίσκουμε τὰ ρήματα στὰ λεξικά.

Τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο ἔχει ἐνεργητικὴ καὶ παθητικὴ φωνή, Ἐνεστώτα καὶ Παρακείμενο. Ἔτσι οἱ συχνότεροι τύποι τοῦ Ἀπαρεμφάτου εἶναι οἱ ἑξῆς:

	Simple Present	**Perfect**
Active	(to) write	(to) have written
Passive	(to) be written	(to) have been written

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπὸ τοὺς τύπους αὐτοὺς τοῦ Ἀπαρεμφάτου, συναντοῦμε καὶ τὸν Ἐνεστώτα διαρκείας τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς (to) be writing καὶ τὸν Παρακείμενο διαρκείας τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς (to) have been writing.

Οἱ φωνὲς στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο ξεχωρίζουν εὔκολα, ὅπως φαίνεται ἀπὸ τὰ παρακάτω παραδείγματα:

Active: He wants t o k n o w a general.

Passive: He wants t o b e k n o w n as a general.

'Απαρέμφατο μὲ to κι 'Απαρέμφατο χωρὶς to. Τὸ 'Απαρέμφατο ἄλλοτε ἔχει μπροστά του τὸ to κι ἄλλοτε εἶναι μόνο του, χωρὶς τὸ to. Στὴν τελευταία περίπτωση λέγεται plain infinitive ἢ bare infinitive.

Χωρὶς to τὸ 'Απαρέμφατο χρησιμοποιεῖται στὶς ἑξῆς περιπτώσεις:

1) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα, can (could), do (did), may (might), shall (should), will (would), must, dare, need π. χ.:

He can s p e a k English.
I will h e l p you.
You must c o m e with us.

'Ωστόσο τὸ 'Απαρέμφατο παίρνει to:
α) Μὲ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ought καὶ used, π. χ.:
You ought t o g o.
I used t o l i v e there.

β) Μὲ τὰ ρήματα do, need καὶ dare, ὅταν δὲν χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὰν βοηθητικά, ἀλλὰ σὰν κύρια ρήματα π. χ.:
I did t o p l e a s e you.
You don't need t o g o yet.

γ) Μὲ τὰ ρήματα be καὶ have, ὅταν χρησιμοποιοῦνται, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσουν προσταγή, ἐξαναγκασμό, π. χ.:
You are to go to the classroom at once.
I have to be in my office by 9 o'clock.

2) ὕστερα ἀπὸ ρήματα αἰσθήσεως σημαντικὰ (verbs of perception), π. χ.: see, hear, feel κ.λ.π. καὶ μετὰ τὰ ρήματα let καὶ make, π. χ.:
I heard her p l a y the piano.
He left his blood r u n cold.
Don't make me l a u g h.

Ὅταν ὅμως τὰ ρήματα αὐτὰ χρησιμοποιοῦνται στὴν παθητικὴ φωνή, παίρνουν to στὸ 'Απαρέμφατο, π. χ.:

He was heard t o c r y.
They had been made t o w o r k.

Τὸ ρῆμα help, ἰδιαίτερα στὴν ἀμερικανικὴ γλώσσα, συνήθως δὲν παίρνει to στὸ ᾿Απαρέμφατο, π. χ.:

He helped me (to) c o m p o s e the letter.

Στὴν ὀρθόδοξη ὅμως ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα παίρνει to.

3) Μετὰ τὶς ἐκφράσεις had better, had (would) rather, had (would) sooner, need hardly, cannot but, π. χ.:

You had better t e l l him the truth.
I had sooner t a k e a taxi than walk.

Τὸ ᾿Απαρέμφατο παίρνει to σ᾿ ὅλες τὶς ἄλλες περιπτώσεις.

Χρήση τοῦ ᾿Απαρεμφάτου. 1) Τὸ ᾿Απαρέμφατο μπορεῖ στὴν πρόταση νὰ παίζη ρόλο οὐσιαστικοῦ. Στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς στὴ νεώτερη ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα προτιμοῦν νὰ βάζουν γερούνδιο. Νὰ μερικὰ παραδείγματα.:

Σ ὰ ν ὑ π ο κ ε ί μ ε ν ο (subject):
To r u n would be foolish. (Running would be foolish.)

Σ ὰ ν κ α τ η γ ο ρ η μ α τ ι κ ὸ ς π ρ ο σ δ ι ο ρ ι σ μ ὸ ς (subjective complement):
Her worst mistake was t o i n v i t e Aunt Flo. (Her worst mistake was inviting Aunt Flo.)

Σ ὰ ν ἀ ν τ ι κ ε ί μ ε ν ο (object):
He hates to wash his face.

2) Τὸ ᾿Απαρέμφατο ὅμως μπορεῖ στὴν πρόταση νὰ παίζη ρόλο ἐπιρρήματος, ὁπότε δείχνει πρόθεση ἢ ἀποτέλεσμα, π.χ.:

I went there t o s e e him.
Mary has gone t o g e t some fruit.

3) Τέλος τὸ 'Απαρέμφατο μπορεῖ στὴν πρόταση νὰ παίζῃ ρόλο ἐπιθέτου, π. χ.:

That is not the way **to speak** to your uncle.
He gave me something **to eat**.

Πολλὲς φορὲς ἀνάμεσα στὸ to καὶ στὸ 'Απαρέμφατο παρεμβάλλεται ἕνα ἐπίρρημα, ὁπότε τὸ 'Απαρέμφατο λέγεται split infinitive. Συνήθως ὅμως αὐτὸ τὸ ἀποφεύγουμε, ἰδίως στὸ γραπτὸ λόγο.

LETTER WRITING

'Από σήμερα ἀρχίζουμε ἕνα καινούργιο μάθημα, τὸ Letter Writing, τὴν ἀλληλογραφία (ἐμπορική, ἰδιωτικὴ κ.λ.π.), δηλαδὴ τὸν τρόπο, μὲ τὸν ὁποῖον γράφουμε ἕνα γράμμα:

Τὸ μάθημα αὐτὸ θὰ τὸ κάνουμε ἀγγλικά. Σιγὰ-σιγὰ θὰ μιλᾶμε μόνο ἀγγλικά. Μὴ φοβᾶσθε. Θὰ τὰ καταφέρετε. Κι ἂν συναντήσετε καμιὰ δυσκολία, ἀνοῖξτε καὶ κανένα λεξικό.

Καλὴ ἀρχὴ λοιπόν!

I

LAYING OUT THE LETTER

I. BEGINNINGS AND ENDINGS

A letter to a fiancé(e), a husband or wife (1):

Wimborne,
15th May

John, my dearest (2),

. . . .

With all my love (3),
Mary

Remarks

(1). Letters to brothers, sisters, mothers, fathers and other mem-

bers of the family are not dealt with in this book, since they are normally written in the studen't mother-tongue.

(2). Or My dearest John,-My darling John, John- my darling-John, my sweetheart, My darling, My sweetheart,; or with a woman's name (e. g. Elizabeth, my dearest -My dearest Elizabeth, etc.).

(3). Or With best love-With fondest love- Affectionately yours.

A personal letter to a friend:

13, Morley Road,
Wimborne,
Dorset.
15th My, 1967

Dear John (4),

. . . .

Best wishes.
Yours sincerely,
Bill

A personal letter to an acquaintance or business associate whom you know personally and well:

My dear Robinson (5),

. . . .

Best wishes.
Yours sincerely,
Bill Jones

Remarks

(4). Or My dear John,; or with a woman's name (Dear Mary- My dear Mary,).

(5). Or (for a married woman) Dear Mrs Robinson,; or (for an unmarried woman) Dear Miss Robinson,

A personal letter to an acquaintance or business associate whom you Know personally but not very well:

Dear Robinson (5),

. . . .

Yours sincerely,
W. H. Jones (6)

An informal private letter to a person you do not know personally:

Dear Mr Robinson (5),

. . . .

Yours sincerely,
W. H. Jones (6)

A formal private letter to a person you do not know personally:

Dear Sir (7),

. . . .

Yours faithfully,
W. H. Jones (6)

Remarks

(6). The name can be typed underneath the signature. If the letter is signed by a man, he should not put Mr or Esq before or after his name. A married woman should put Mrs in brackets before her typed name, and an unmarried woman should put Miss.

(7). Or if the letter is addressed to a lady (married or unmarried, Dear Madam,

A business letter to someone whom you wish to write to in a friendly manner:

Messrs Jones & Co.,
13, Morley Road,
Wimborne,
Dorset.

Ref. LOWHJ (8)

J. H. Robinson, Esq. (9),
21, High Street,
Hayle,
Cheshire.

Dear Mr Robinson,

. . . .

Yours truly (10),
W. H. Jones

Remarks

(8). 'Η σημασία θὰ ἐξηγηθῆ ἀργότερα.

(9). Or, when writing to a married woman, Mrs J. H. Robinson (using her husband's initials, unless she has indicated that she wishes her own to be used); when writing to a widow, Mrs M. I. Robinson (using her own initials); when writing to an unmarried woman, Miss M. I. Robinson (using her own initials); and when writing to a boy of shool age, either Master L. F. Robinson, or Lawrence Robinson.

(10). Yours very truly is even more friendly.

An ordinary business letter:

Dear Sir (11),

. . . .

Yours faithfully,
W. H. Jones (12)

A very formal letter (e. g. to a Government Departmet):

13, Morley Road,
Wimborne,
Dorset.
15th May, 1967

Sir (13),

. . . .

The Under-Secretary of State,
The Foreign Office,
Whitehall,
London, S.W. 1.

I am Sir (13),
Your obedient servant,
W. H. Jones (6)

There are, of course, other ways of doing these things, but the above are safe ways to follow, and it would introduce unnecessary complications if we gave more.

Those who have to write to Lords, Mayors, Privy Councillors and other such dignitaries should Consult Black's Titles and Forms of Address or some other such work, as the average Englishman and Englishwoman has to do, to find the correct forms of address.

Note that in private letters it is not usual to put the address of the person one is writing to at the top or bottom of the letter. Business letters usually have this address at the top left of the letter, under the reference number, though it may appear at the bottom. Government Dèpartments and Universities, on the contrary, have the practice of putting the receiver's address at the bottom left.

If you want to put your telephone number on your letter, put it under your address and above the date, like this:

13 Morley Road,
Wimborne,
Dorset.
Tel. 54329
15th May, 1967

Carefully note the punctuation in the above beginnings and endings. Do not abbreviate such things as Street, Road and Square. Put commas, full-stops and capitals where you see them in the above letters.

Remarks:

(11). Or Dear Madam,-Dear Sirs,-Dear Mesdames, (the last when writing to more than one lady).

(12). Or for Messrs Jones & Co.—W. H. Jones.

(13). Or Gentlemen,-Madam,

VOCABULARY

good	(γκουντ)	=	ἐμπόρευμα
airway	(έϊργουέϊ)	=	ἀεροπορικὲς γραμμὲς
connect	(κονὲκτ)	=	συνδέω
shipping lines	(chίπινγκ λάϊνς)	=	ἀτμοπλοϊκὲς γραμμὲς
safe	(σέϊφ)	=	ἀσφαλὴς
peninsula	(πενίνσουλα)	=	χερσόνησος
protect	(προτὲκτ)	=	προστατεύω
storm	(στορμ)	=	θύελλα
irregular	(ιρέγκιουλαρ)	=	ἀκανόνιστος -η -ο
shape	(chέϊπ)	=	σχῆμα
space	(σπέϊς)	=	χῶρος
wharf	(γουὸρφ)	=	ἀποβάθρα
load	(λόουντ)	=	φορτώνω
unload	(ανλόουντ)	=	ξεφορτώνω
manufacture	(μανουφάκτchιουρ)	=	κατασκευάζω
thickly	(θίκλι)	=	πυκνὰ
populated	(πόπιουλέϊτιντ)	=	κατοικημένος -η -ο
wholesale	(hολσέϊλ)	=	χονδρικὴ πώληση
owner	(όουνερ)	=	ἰδιοκτήτης
quantity	(κουάντιτι)	=	ποσότητα
retail store	(ριτέϊλ στορ)	=	κατάστημα λιανικῆς πωλή-σεως
kick	(κικ)	=	κλωτσῶ
rough	(ραφ)	=	ἄγριος - α - ο
neighbour	(νέϊμπερ)	=	γείτονας
put off	(πουτ οφ)	=	ἀναβάλλω
flash	(φλαch)	=	λάμψη
unexpected	(ανεξπέκτιντ)	=	ἀπροσδόκητος - η - ο
celebrate	(σελεμπρέϊτ)	=	γιορτάζω
health	(hελθ)	=	ὑγεία
reason	(ρίζεν)	=	αἰτία
disagreement	(ντιζαγκρίμεντ)	=	διαφωνία
farewell	(φέϊργουελ)	=	ἀντίο
wedding	(γουέντιγκ)	=	γάμος
murderer	(μέρντερερ)	=	δολοφόνος
stupid	(στιούπιντ)	=	ἀνόητος - η - ο
inhabitant	(ινhάμπιταντ)	=	κάτοικος

wonder	(γουόντερ)	=	ἀπορῶ
God	(γκαντ)	=	Θεὸς
hesitate	(hεζιτέϊτ)	=	διστάζω
famous	(φέϊμες)	=	φημισμένος - η - ο
cherry tree	(τchέρι τρι)	=	κερασιὰ
in bloom	(ιν μπλουμ)	=	ἀνθισμένος
stretch	(στρετch)	=	ἐκτείνομαι
bridge	(μπριντj)	=	γέφυρα
cemetery	(σέμετρι)	=	νεκροταφεῖο
distinguish	(ντιστίνγκουϊch)	=	διακρίνω
soldier	(σόλντjερ)	=	στρατιώτης
sailor	(σέϊλορ)	=	ναύτης
burry	(μπέρι)	=	θάβω
lie	(λάϊ)	=	κεῖμαι
tomb	(τομπ)	=	τάφος
Unknown Soldier	(αν-νόουν σόλντjερ)	=	Ἄγνωστος Στρατιώτης
permanent	(πέρμανεντ)	=	μόνιμος - η - ο
guard	(γκαρντ)	=	φρουρὰ
honor	(όνορ)	=	τιμὴ
colonial	(κολόνιαλ)	=	ἀποικιακὸς - ὴ - ὸ
tobacco	(τομπέϊκο)	=	καπνὸς
plantation	(πλαντέϊchεν)	=	φυτεία
overlook	(όβερλουκ)	=	δεσπόζω
hill	(hιλ)	=	λόφος
national	(ναέchιοναλ)	=	ἐθνικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
shrine	(chράϊν)	=	βωμὸς
hold	(hολντ)	=	κρατῶ
lovely	(λάβλι)	=	ἀξιαγάπητος - η - ο
translate	(τρανσλέϊτ)	=	μεταφράζω
we should take		=	θὰ χρειασθοῦμε
alternate	(αλτερνέϊτ)	=	ἐναλλασσόμενος - η - ο
represent	(ρεπριζέντ)	=	ἀντιπροσωπεύω
background	(μπαεκγκράουντ)	=	φόντο
make up	(μέϊκ απ)	=	ἀποτελῶ
elect	(ελέκτ)	=	ἐκλέγω
governor	(γκάβερνερ)	=	κυβερνήτης
mayor	(μέϊγιορ)	=	δήμαρχος
senator	(σένατερ)	=	γερουσιαστὴς

representative	(ρεπριζέντατιβ)	=	ἀντιπρόσωπος
admire	(εντμάϊρ)	=	θαυμάζω
hurt	(χαρτ)	=	πληγώνω
accident	(αέξιντεντ)	=	δυστύχημα
author	(όθορ)	=	συγγραφέας
bell	(μπελ)	=	καμπάνα
halfway between		=	στὰ μισὰ τοῦ δρόμου
according to	(ακόρντινγκ του)	=	σύμφωνα μὲ
original	(ορίντjιναλ)	=	ἀρχικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
numerous	(νούμερους)	=	πολυάριθμος - η - ο
stately	(στέϊτλι)	=	ἐπιβλητικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
monument	(μόνιουμεντ)	=	μνημεῖο
government	(γκάβερνμεντ)	=	κυβέρνηση, κυβερνητικὸς
department	(ντιπάρτμεντ)	=	διαμέρισμα, τμῆμα
compare	(κομπέϊρ)	=	συγκρίνω
in size	(ιν σάϊζ)	=	σὲ μέγεθος
Republic	(ριπάμπλικ)	=	Δημοκρατία
mend	(μεντ)	=	μπαλώνω
although	(ολδόου)	=	ἂν καὶ
century	(σέντchιουρι)	=	αἰώνας
located	(λοκέϊτιντ)	=	κείμενος - η - ο
neither . . . not	(νίδερ . . . νορ)	=	οὔτε . . . οὔτε
industrial	(ιντάστριαλ)	=	βιομηχανικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
port	(πορτ)	=	λιμάνι
head	(hεντ)	=	κεφαλὴ
navigation	(ναβιγκέϊchιεν)	=	ναυσιπλοΐα
ocean liner	(όσιαν λάϊνερ)	=	ὑπερωκεάνιο
beyond	(μπιγιόντ)	=	πέραν
deep	(ντιπ)	=	βαθὺς - ιὰ - ὺ
water front	(γουότερ φροντ)	=	παραλία
railroad	(ρέϊλρόουντ)	=	σιδηρόδρομος
center	(σέντερ)	=	κέντρο
direction	(νταϊρέκchιεν)	=	διεύθυνση
interior	(ιντέριορ)	=	ἐσωτερικὸ
manufacture	(μανουφάκτchιουρ)	=	βιομηχανία
leading	(λίντινγκ)	=	σπουδαιότερος - η - ο
occupation	(οκιουπέϊchιεν)	=	ἀπασχόληση
preparation	(πρεπαρέϊchιεν)	=	προετοιμασία
stuff	(σταφ)	=	ὑλικὸ

refinery	(ρεφάϊνερι)	=	διυλιστήριο
oil	(όϊλ)	=	πετρέλαιο
sugar	(choύγκαρ)	=	ζάχαρη
textile mill	(τέξτιλ μιλ)	=	ὑφαντουργεῖο
tannery	(ταένερι)	=	βυρσοδεψεῖο
factory	(φάκτορι)	=	ἐργοστάσιο
ironwork	(άϊρονγουερκ)	=	σιδηρουργεῖο
construction	(κονστράκτchιεν)	=	κατασκευὴ
locomotive	(λόκομοτιβ)	=	ἀτμομηχανὴ
abundance	(αμπένταν ς)	=	ἀφθονία
coal	(κόουλ)	=	κάρβουνο
distribution	(ντιστριμπιούchεν)	=	διανομὴ
cultural	(κάλτchουραλ)	=	μορφωτικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
professional	(προφέchιοναλ)	=	ἐπαγγελματικὸς - ἡ - ὁ
possess	(ποζὲς)	=	κατέχω
boil	(μπόϊλ)	=	βράζω
repair	(ριπέαρ)	=	ἐπιδιορθώνω
fig	(φιγκ)	=	σύκο
fire insurance		=	ἀσφαλιστικὴ ἑταιρία
rainy	(ρέϊνι)	=	βροχερὸς - ἡ - ὁ
hut	(hατ)	=	καλύβα
grass	(γκρας)	=	χόρτο
raise	(ρέϊζ)	=	καλλιεργῶ
obtain	(ομπτέϊν)	=	ἀποκτῶ
hunt	(hαντ)	=	κυνηγῶ
hunter	(hάντερ)	=	κυνηγὸς
farther	(φάρδερ)	=	μακρύτερα, πέραν
quite	(κουάϊτ)	=	σχεδὸν
differently	(ντίφερεντλι)	=	διαφορετικὰ
tribe	(τράϊμπ)	=	φυλὴ
fierce	(φίερς)	=	ἄγριος - α - ο
warlike	(γουόρλάϊκ)	=	πολεμοχαρὴς
wander	(γουάντερ)	=	περιπλανῶμαι
thick	(θικ)	=	πυκνὸς - ἡ - ὁ
plain	(πλέϊν)	=	πεδιάδα
chiefly	(τchίφλι)	=	κυρίως
quarrel	(κουόρελ)	=	καυγαδίζω
possession	(ποζέchιεν)	=	κατοχὴ
add	(αεντ)	=	προσθέτω

supply	(σαπλάϊ)	=	προμήθεια
gather	(γκάδερ)	=	μαζεύω
simple	(σιμπλ)	=	ἁπλὸς - ἡ - ὸ
corn	(κορν)	=	καλαμπόκι
divide	(ντιβάϊντ)	=	μοιράζω
tribal	(τράϊμπαλ)	=	φυλετικὸς - ἡ - ὸ
silver	(σίλβερ)	=	ἀσήμι
jewelry	(ντjτούερλι)	=	ἀσημικά, χρυσαφικὰ
pottery	(πότερι)	=	ἀγγειοπλαστικὴ
equal	(ίκουαλ)	=	ἴσος - η - ο
scissors	(σίζερζ)	=	ψαλίδι
train	(τρέϊν)	=	ἐξασκῶ
regularly	(ρέγκιουλαρλι)	=	ὁμαλὰ
dangerous	(ντέϊντjερεζ)	=	ἐπικίνδυνος - η - ο

TEXT

THE INDIANS

The Indians of the West part of America and of other warm, rainy parts of the New World, lived in huts of wood and grass and wore very few clothes. They had smalll gardens where they raised vegetables and fruit and they also obtained food by hunting and fishing. Farther north, where the hot summers are followed by cold winters, the Indians lived quite differently. Many of the northern tribes were fierce and warlike. They wandered through the thick forests and over the green plains, getting their living chiefly by hunting wild animals. They quarreled over the possessing of the ground and were often at war with one another. Some of them added to their food supply by fishing or gathering fruit. Others carried on farming in a simple way, raising a little corn and a few vegetables each summer.

Little by little the Indians were conquered by the white men and they had to leave their houses and to divide their lands with them. Most of the Indian tribes lost their freedom. They lost their homes and lands and had to go from one place to another to live. Today they can live anywhere the United States but the government gives them lands where they can have their

tribal villages and make their living by farming, by selling silver jewelry and by making fine pottery.

TRANSLATION

Οἱ 'Ινδιάνοι

Οἱ 'Ινδιάνοι ἀπὸ τὰ δυτικὰ μέρη τῆς 'Αμερικῆς καὶ ἀπὸ ἄλλα θερμὰ βροχερὰ μέρη τοῦ Νέου Κόσμου ζοῦσαν σὲ καλύβες ἀπὸ ξύλα καὶ χόρτο καὶ φοροῦσαν πολὺ λίγα ροῦχα. Εἶχαν μικροὺς κήπους, ὅπου καλλιεργοῦσαν λαχανικὰ καὶ φροῦτα καὶ ἐπίσης ἀποκτοῦσαν τὴν τροφὴ μὲ τὸ κυνήγι καὶ τὸ ψάρεμα. Πιὸ πέρα στὰ βόρεια, ὅπου τὰ ζεστὰ καλοκαίρια ἀκολουθοῦσαν κρύοι χειμῶνες, οἱ 'Ινδιάνοι ζοῦσαν πολὺ διαφορετικά. Πολλὲς ἀπὸ τὶς βόρειες φυλὲς ἦταν ἄγριες καὶ πολεμοχαρεῖς. Περιπλανιόνταν μέσα στὰ πυκνὰ δάση καὶ πάνω ἀπὸ τὶς πράσινες πεδιάδες ἀποκτώντας τὴν τροφή τους κυρίως ἀπὸ τὸ κυνήγι ἀγρίων ζώων. Μάλωναν γιὰ τὴν κατοχὴ τοῦ ἐδάφους καὶ βρίσκονταν συχνὰ σὲ πόλεμο ὁ ἕνας μὲ τὸν ἄλλον. Μερικοὶ ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς προσέθεταν στὴν τροφή τους προμήθειες μὲ τὸ νὰ ψαρεύουν ἢ νὰ μαζεύουν φροῦτα. Ἄλλοι συνέχιζαν τὴν γεωργία μὲ ἕναν ἁπλὸ τρόπο καλλιεργώντας λίγο καλαμπόκι καὶ λίγα λαχανικὰ κάθε καλοκαίρι.

Σιγὰ-σιγὰ οἱ 'Ινδιάνοι ὑπετάγησαν στοὺς λευκοὺς κι ἀναγκάσθηκαν νὰ ἀφήσουν τὰ σπίτια τους καὶ νὰ μοιράσουν τὴν γῆ τους μαζί τους. Οἱ περισσότερες ἀπὸ τὶς ἰνδιάνικες φυλὲς ἔχασαν τὴν ἐλευθερία τους. Ἔχασαν τὰ σπίτια τους καὶ τὴ γῆ τους κι ἔπρεπε νὰ πηγαίνουν ἀπὸ τὸ ἕνα μέρος στὸ ἄλλο, γιὰ νὰ ζήσουν. Σήμερα μποροῦν νὰ ζήσουν ὁπουδήποτε στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες, ἀλλὰ ἡ κυβέρνηση τοὺς δίνει γῆ, ὅπου μποροῦν νὰ ἔχουν τὰ φυλετικὰ χωριά τους καὶ νὰ βγάζουν τὸ ψωμί τους μὲ τὴ γεωργία, μὲ τὴν πώληση ἀσημένιων κοσμημάτων καὶ μὲ τὴν κατασκευὴ ὡραίων ἀγγείων.

EXERCISE 275

COMPEHENSION

Answer the questions:

Where did the Indians live?
Did they wear many clothes?
Did they have big gardens?
What did they raise in the gardens?
Did they go hunting and fishing?

How did the Indians of the North live?
Were the tribes of the North farmers?
How did they live?
Did they quarrel? Were they often in war? Why?
Did they raise corn?
By whom were the Indians conquered?
What did they lose?
Can they live anywhere the United States?
What did the government give them?
How do they live today?

EXERCISE 276

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις μὲ τὸ for, since καὶ ago:

How long ago did you begin to study English?
How long ago did he go to work there?
How long ago did he come to this country?
How long ago did you have something to eat?
How long ago was she in the United States?
How long ago did you see her?
How long ago did you talk with him?
How long ago did you go to the dentist?
How long ago did you get your tickets?
How long have you been studying French?

EXERCISE 277

Μεταφράστε τὶς παρακάτω προτάσεις ἀπὸ τὰ ἑλληνικὰ στὰ ἀγγλικά:

Σοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ τρῶς; Ὄχι δὲν μοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ τρώω, μοῦ ἀρέσει νὰ κοιμᾶμαι.
Τί μέρα εἶναι σήμερα; Εἶναι Πέμπτη.
Ἡ μητέρα μου μιλᾶ γαλλικὰ πολὺ καλά.
Ἀκούω τὸ ραδιόφωνο τώρα.
Τί κάνετε τώρα; Διαβάζουμε τὴν ἄσκηση.

EXERCISE 278

Βάλτε τὶς παρακάτω φράσεις ἀπὸ τὸν ἑνικὸ στὸν πληθυντικό. Κάνετε ὕστερα ἄλλες φράσεις βάζοντας τὰ ρήματα στὸν Ἀόριστο, Παρακείμενο κι Ὑπερσυντέλικο:

He is explaining the lesson now.
My mother is a housewife.
Where does the child sit?
The man does the exercise.
I am going to the library now.

EXERCISE 279

Μετατρέψτε τὶς παρακάτω προτάσεις ἀπὸ καταφατικὲς σὲ ἀρνητικὲς κι ἐρωτηματικές:

I am a nurse.
We are students.
We are writing now.
I study the lesson.
She likes to go to the store.
She has a son.

EXERCISE 280

Γράψτε ἐρωτήσεις, στὶς ὁποῖες οἱ παρακάτω προτάσεις εἶναι ἀπαντήσεις:

Example:

I went to school at eight. What time did you go to school?

Mary has been in New York for three months.
She is going to study at the University.
The last meal of the day is called supper (dinner).
The play starts at half past seven.

No, I haven't made a mistake.
There are twelve months in a year.
Yes, I am sometimes tired of American food.
No, English people don't drink much coffee.
Yes, he speaks Spanish.
Yes I have been there several times.
We did not have any rains.
He helped his wife many times.
I met my old friend downtown.
Miss Green went out to lunch at one o'clock.
Mr Brown drank a bottle of beer with his lunch yesterday.

EXERCISE 281

Γράψτε τὶς ἀκόλουθες προτάσεις στὸν ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο καὶ στὸν ἀρνητικό:

Example:

We have to write this exercise.
Do we have to write this exercise?
We don't have to write this exercise.

They have to learn the new words.
He has to leave home early tomorrow.
The teacher has to explain it again.
You have to wait for a bus.
Virginia had to see the doctor.
Robert had to call her up.
She had to write some letters.
We had to ask the driver for some change.
We will have to be on time.
You will have to see her before class.
They will have to take a train at six o'clock.
You will have to get up early.
We will have to pay for it immediately.

EXERCISE 282

Γράψτε τίς προτάσεις μέ τό must στόν 'Ενεστώτα, 'Αόριστο καί Μέλλοντα:

Example:

She must go to school.
She had to go to school.
She will have to go to school.

Virginia . . . go to see the doctor.
She . . . go on a light diet.
She . . . take some tonic, too.
She . . . stand up in the crowded bus.
They . . . go to Washington by train.
. . . we learn these words?
. . . you wait for them?
. . . we make our plans?
. . . they take a taxi to see the city?
. . . they stop in Philadelphia?

EXERCISE 283

Συμπληρῶστε στά κενά for, since καί ago:

The Quakers founded the city of Philadelphia many years . .
The present city of Miami has developed . . . 1896.
He has been in Washington . . . a year now.
What have you been doing . . . the last time I saw you?
How long . . . did you see them?
I haven't seen them . . . a month.
I haven't seen them . . . last month.
It has been two years . . . I was there.
I met my teacher a year . . . .
I have known him . . . a year.

EXERCISE 284

Γράψτε ἐρωτήσεις, στὶς ὁποῖες οἱ παρακάτω προτάσεις εἶναι ἀπαντήσεις:

Example:

He is twenty years old.How old is he?

Christmas is only a month away.
Yes, there are a lot of books about poems.
He went for a walk because he wanted to take fresh air.
No, I won't be there at noon.
I have six nieces and seven nephews.
John broke the dining-room window.
He left last Monday.
He broke it by kicking his football through it.
The letter is for my cousin Mary.
I am going to spend my summer vacations at the sea.
She met Mary at school.
We went there on foot.
I got up at seven.
She called me to go upstairs.

XXIX

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 272

Can we finish the book this year?
Who can translate that sentence?
No one can translate it.
He says (that) he can wait for us.
He said (that) he could wait for us.
You can see the Washington Monument from many parts of the city.
She said (that) she could be there by noon.
You can travel by plane or by train.
Can you tell me where she is?
I can come to the last class.
I could have sent it by air mail.
We could have come earlier.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 273

May I borrow your book?
Certainly you may use it.
You may enter this class if you already know some English.
Her mother says (that) she may go.
Her mother said (that) she might go.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 274

He could play tennis.
He will be able to play tennis.
He has been able to play tennis

We could do this lesson.
We will be able to do this lesson.
We have been able to do this lesson.

She could cook very well.
She will be able to cook very well.
She has been able to cook very well.

I could go early if he let ('Αόριστος) me.
I will be able to go early if he lets me.
I would have been able to go early if he had let me.

She could make her own dresses.
She will be able to make her own dresses.
She has been able to make her own dresses.

She could read a great deal.
She will be able to read a great deal.
She has been able to read a great deal.

He says «I could have another one.»
He says «I will be able to have another one.»
He says «I have been able to have another one.»

I could go swimming when it is warm.
I will be able to go swimming when it is warm.
I would have been able to go swimming when it was warm.

She could play the piano.
She will be able to play the piano.
She has been able to play the piano.

John could stay up late.
John will be able to stay up late.
John has been able to stay up late.

We could speak English.
We will be able to speak English.
We have been able to speak English.

I could go out to the dance.
I will be able to go out to the dance.
I have been able to go out to the dance.

John could climb the tree.
John will be able to climb the tree.
John has been able to climb the tree

You could borrow his book.
You will be able to borrow his book.
You have been able to borrow his book.

He could find a good answer.
He will be able to find a good answer.
He has been able to find a good answer.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 275

COMPREHENSION

The Indians lived in huts of wood and grass.
No, they wore very few clothes.
No, they had small gardens.
They raised vegetables and fruit.
Yes, they went hunting and fishing.
The Indians of the North, where the hot summers are followed by cold winters, lived quite differently.
No, the tribes of the North were not farmers.
They wandered through the thick forests and over the green plains getting their living chiefly by hunting wild animals.
Yes, they quarreled over the possessing of the ground and were often in war one another.
Some of them carried on farming in a simple way, raising a little corn and vegetables each summer.
Little by little the Indians were conquered by the white men.
They lost their freedom, their homes and lands.
Yes, today they can live anywhere the United States.

The government gave them lands where they can have their tribal villages.
They live by farming, by selling silver jewerly and by making fine pottery.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 276

I began to study English three years ago.
He went to work there three months ago.
He came to this country ten years ago.
I had something to eat two hours ago.
She was in the United States three months ago.
I saw her three months ago.
I talked with him three hours ago.
I went to the dentist a week ago.
I got my tickets three hours ago.
I have been studying French since last June.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 277

Do you like to eat?
No, I don't like to eat, I like to sleep.
What day is today? It is Wednesday.
My mother speaks French very well.
I am listening to the radio now.
What are you doing now? We are reading the exercise.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 278

They are explaining the lesson now.
Our mothers are housewives.
Where do the children sit?
The men do the exercises.
We are going to the library now.

He explained the lesson now.

He has explained the lesson now.
He had explained the lesson now.

My mother was a housewife.
My mother has been a housewife.
My mother had been a housewife.

Where did the child sit?
Where has the child sat?
Where had the child sat?

The man did the exercise.
The man has done the exercise.
The man had done the exercise.

I went to the library.
I have gone to the library.
I had gone to the library.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 279

I am not a nurse.
Am I a nurse?

We are not students.
Are we students?

We are not writing now.
Are we writing now?

I don't study the lesson.
Do I study the lesson?

She does not like to go to the store.
Does she like to go to the the store?

She does not have a son.
Does she have a son?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 280

How long has Mary been in New York?
Where is she going to study?
How is called the last meal of the day?
What time does the play start?
Have you made a mistake?
How many months are there in a year?
Are you sometimes tired of American food?
Do English people drink much coffee?
Does he speak Spanish?
Have you been there?
Did you have any rains?
Did he help his wife many times?
Where did you meet your old friend?
What time did Miss Green go out to lunch?
What did Mr Brown drink with his lunch yesterday?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 281

Do they have to learn the new words?
No, they don't have to learn the new words.

Does he have to leave home early tomorrow?
No, he does not have to leave home early tomorrow.

Does the teacher have to explain it again?
No, the teacher does not have to explain it again.

Do you have to wait for a bus?
No, you do not have to wait for a bus.

Did Virginia have to see the doctor?
No, Virginia did not have to see the doctor.

Did Robert have to call her up?

No, Robert did not have to call her up.

Did she have to write any letters?
No, she did not have to write any letters.

Did we have to ask the driver for some change?
No, we did not have to ask the driver for some change.

Will we have to be on time?
No, we won't have to be on time.

Will you have to see her before class?
No, we won't have to see her before class.

Will they have to take a train at six o'clock?
No, they won't have to take a train at six o'clock.

Will you have to get up early?
No, I won't have to get up early.

Will we have to pay for it immediately?
No, we won't have to pay for it immediately.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 282

Virginia must go to see the doctor.
Virginia had to go to see the doctor.
Virginia will have to go to see the doctor.

She must go on a light diet.
She had to go on a light diet.
She will have to go on a light diet.

She must take some tonic, too.
She had to take some tonic, too.
She will have to take some tonic, too.

She must stand up in the crowded bus.

She had to stand up in the crowded bus.
She will have to stand up in the crowded bus.

They must go to Washington by train.
They had to go to Washington by train.
They will have to go to Washington by train.

Must we learn these words?
Did we have to learn these words?
Will we have to learn these words?

Must you wait for them?
Did you have to wait for them?
Will you have to wait for them?

Must we make our plans?
Did we have to make our plans?
Will we have to make our plans?

Must they take a taxi to see the city?
Did they have to take a taxi to see the city?
Will they have to take a taxi to see the city?

Must they stop in Philadelphia?
Did they have to stop in Philadelphia?
Will they have to stop in Philadelphia?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 283

The Quakers founded the city of Philadelphia many years ago.
The present city of Miami has developed since 1896.
He has been in Washington for a year now.
What have you been doing since the last time I saw you?
How long ago did you see them?
I haven't seen them for a month.
I haven't seen them since last month.
It has been two years since I was there.

I met my teacher a year ago.
I have known him for a year.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 284

How long away is Christmas?
Are there many books about poems?
Why did he go for a walk?
Will you be there at noon?
How many nieces and nephews do you have?
What did John break?
When did he leave?
How did he break it?
Whom is the letter for?
Where are you going to spend your summer vacations?
Where did she meet Mary?
How did you go there?
What time did you get up?
What did she call you?

ALREADY

Ἡ λέξη **already** = ἤδη, χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις καθὼς καὶ σὲ ἐρωτήσεις. Συνήθως κατέχει μέσα στὴν πρόταση τὴν ἴδια θέση, ποὺ ἔχουν τὰ ἐπιρρήματα συχνότητας always, usually, often. Γιὰ νὰ τονίση τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος, ἀκολουθεῖ τὸ κύριο ρῆμα καὶ τότε ἐκφράζει ἔκπληξη, π. χ.:

It is already noon and they haven't come = εἶναι ἤδη μεσημέρι κι αὐτοὶ δὲν ἔχουν ἔλθει.
Has the class already begun? = ἔχει ἀρχίσει ἤδη τὸ μάθημα;
Has the class begun already? = ἔχει τὸ μάθημα ἀρχίσει ἤδη;

Αὐτὴ ἡ πρόταση φανερώνει ἔκπληξη, γι' αὐτὸ καὶ τὸ already βρίσκεται στὸ τέλος.

George and Jack are already up = ὁ George κι ὁ Jack ἔχουν ἤδη σηκωθῆ.
My mother is already here = ἡ μητέρα μου εἶναι ἤδη ἐδῶ.
They said they were going to come late but they are already here = αὐτοὶ εἶπαν, ὅτι θὰ ἔρχονταν ἀργά, ἀλλὰ εἶναι ἤδη ἐδῶ.
Have you finished your soup already? = ἔχεις ἤδη φάει τὴ σούπα σου;
They have already moved to their country house = αὐτοὶ ἔχουν ἤδη μετακομίσει στὸ ἐξοχικό τους σπίτι.
I have already bought my ticket because I am in a hurry and I want to be there on time = ἔχω ἤδη ἀγοράσει τὸ εἰσιτήριό μου, γιατὶ βιάζομαι καὶ θέλω νὰ εἶμαι ἐκεῖ ἐγκαίρως.
She has already finished her writings although she said she could not = αὐτὴ ἔχει ἤδη τελειώσει τὰ γραψίματά της, ἂν καὶ εἶπε, ὅτι δὲν μποροῦσε.
What, have you already slept? It is very early = τί, ἔχεις κοιμηθῆ ἀπὸ τώρα; εἶναι πολὺ νωρίς.

YET

Ἡ λέξη **yet** = ἀκόμη, χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἀρνητικὲς προτάσεις καὶ σὲ ἐρωτήσεις συχνὰ μὲ Παρακείμενο. Στὴν πρόταση ἔχει τὴ θέση τῶν ἐπιρρημάτων χρόνου, καὶ μπαίνει πάντοτε στὸ τέλος. Τὰ χρονικὰ ἐπιρρήματα μπαίνουν καὶ στὴν ἀρχὴ μιᾶς προτάσεως, ἀλλὰ ἡ λέξη yet μπαίνει στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως.

Examples:

Has the class begun yet? No, not yet = ἔχει ἀρχίσει τὸ μάθημα ἤδη; ὄχι, ὄχι ἀκόμη.
The teacher isn't here yet = ὁ δάσκαλος δὲν εἶναι ἐδῶ ἀκόμη.
He hasn't come yet = αὐτὸς δὲν ἔχει ἔλθει ἀκόμη.
The two boys are still asleep, they are not awake yet = τὰ δυὸ ἀγόρια ἀκόμη κοιμοῦνται, αὐτὰ δὲν ξύπνησαν ἀκόμη.
David is not out of bed yet = ὁ David δὲν σηκώθηκε ἀπὸ τὸ κρεβάτι ἀκόμη.
Has George finished breakfast yet? No, not yet, he has not finished breakfast yet = ὁ George ἔχει ἤδη τελειώσει τὸ πρόγευμα; ὄχι, ὄχι ἀκόμη, δὲν ἔχει τελειώσει τὸ πρόγευμά του ἀκόμη.

Has your brother come back yet? No, he has not come back yet = ἔχει γυρίσει ὁ ἀδελφός σου ἤδη; ὄχι, δὲν ἔχει γυρίσει ἀκόμη.
He is still in New York = εἶναι ἀκόμη στὴ Νέα 'Υόρκη.
Yes, he has come already = ναί, ἔχει ἔλθει ἤδη ἢ yes, he is already here = ναί, αὐτὸς εἶναι ἤδη ἐδῶ.
Are Roger and David up yet? No, they are still in bed = δὲν σηκώθηκαν ἀκόμη ὁ Roger καὶ ὁ David; ὄχι, αὐτοὶ εἶναι ἀκόμη στὸ κρεβάτι.
Yes, they are already up = ναί, αὐτοὶ ἤδη σηκώθηκαν.

ΠΑΡΑΛΕΙΨΕΙΣ

'Ορισμένα ρήματα συχνὰ χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὸ to σὲ σύντομες ἀπαντήσεις, ὅταν ἡ ἔννοια ποὺ ἐκφράζουν δὲν ἐπαναλαμβάνεται. Μερικὰ ἀπ' αὐτὰ τὰ ρήματα εἶναι τὸ hope = ἐλπίζω, expect = περιμένω, want = θέλω, intend = σκοπεύω, need = χρειάζομαι, like = μ' ἀρέσει, have = ἔχω, plan = σχεδιάζω, be able = εἶμαι ἱκανός, know how = γνωρίζω πῶς.

Examples:

I can't speak English well yet, but I want to (speak it well some day) = δὲν μπορῶ νὰ μιλήσω ἀγγλικὰ καλὰ ἀκόμη, ἀλλὰ θέλω (νὰ τὰ μιλήσω καλὰ μιὰ μέρα).

'Η πρόταση σταματᾶ στὸ want to καὶ ἐννοοῦμε ὅλο τὸ ἄλλο, ἀλλὰ συνήθως δὲν τὸ λέμε. Αὐτὸς ὁ λεκτικὸς τύπος εἶναι πολὺ συνηθισμένος στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα.

I wrote the letter because I had to (write the letter) = ἔγραψα τὸ γράμμα, γιατὶ ἔπρεπε (νὰ τὸ γράψω τὸ γράμμα).
Mr Miller hasn't made reservation yet, but he expects to (make it) = ὁ κύριος Μίλλερ δὲν ἔχει κλείσει θέσεις ἀκόμη, ἀλλὰ περιμένει (νὰ τὸ κάνη).
She hasn't seen New York, would she like to? (see it) = αὐτὴ δὲν ἔχει δῆ τὴ Νέα 'Υόρκη, θὰ τῆς ἄρεζε;
I can't meet her but I hope to later (to meet her) = δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τὴν συναντήσω, ἀλλὰ ἐλπίζω ἀργότερα (νὰ τὴν συναντήσω).
He has not visited his sister but he wants to = αὐτὸς δὲν ἔχει ἐπισκεφθῆ τὴν ἀδελφή του, ἀλλὰ τὸ θέλει (νὰ τὴν ἐπισκεφθῆ).

I like to paint because I know to (paint pictures) = μ' ἀρέσει νὰ ζωγραφίζω, γιατὶ ξέρω πῶς (νὰ ζωγραφίζω) εἰκόνες).
I told him to stay but he did not want to (stay) = τοῦ εἶπα νὰ μείνη, ἀλλὰ δὲν ἤθελε (νὰ μείνη).

AFRAID

Ἡ λέξη **afraid** συντάσσεται μὲ τὴν πρόθεση of. I am **afraid of** = φοβοῦμαι. Ἐπίσης συντάσσεται καὶ μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο καὶ μὲ τὸ that, ποὺ εἰσάγει μιὰ δευτερεύουσα πρόταση, π.χ.:

Are you afraid of the dog? = φοβᾶσαι τὸν σκύλο;
Are you afraid of beeing kicked by George? = φοβᾶσαι νὰ μὴ σὲ κλωτσήση ὁ George;
Are you afraid of what people will say if you run away? = φοβᾶσαι, τί θὰ πῆ ὁ κόσμος, ἂν θὰ φύγης;
The child was afraid to go to bed in the dark = τὸ παιδὶ φοβόταν νὰ πάη γιὰ ὕπνο στὸ σκοτάδι.
Don't be afraid to ask questions = μὴ φοβᾶσαι νὰ κάνης ἐρωτήσεις.
She was afraid to swim because the sea was very rough = αὐτὴ φοβόταν νὰ κολυμπήση, γιατὶ ἡ θάλασσα ἦταν πολὺ ἄγρια (ταραγμένη).
Don't be afraid to talk with him, he is a very good old man = μὴν φοβᾶσαι νὰ τοῦ μιλήσης, αὐτὸς εἶναι ἕνας πολὺ καλὸς ἡλικιωμένος ἄνθρωπος.
He was afraid that he would make mistakes = αὐτὸς φοβόταν, ὅτι θὰ ἔκανε λάθη.
I am afraid that I can't help you = φοβοῦμαι, ὅτι δὲν μπορῶ νὰ σὲ βοηθήσω.
I am afraid that it is going to rain = φοβοῦμαι, ὅτι θὰ βρέξη.
She was walking fast because she was afraid that she was late for school = αὐτὴ περπατοῦσε γρήγορα, γιατὶ φοβόταν, ὅτι ἄργησε γιὰ τὸ σχολεῖο.

CAN - COULD, MAY - MIGHT

Ὅταν θέλουμε νὰ ἐκφράσουμε ἱκανότητα, τότε ἔχουμε τὸ can, could καὶ could have μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Τὸ can Ἐνεστώς, could Ἀόριστος καὶ could have Παρακείμενος μπαίνουν μὲ τὴν παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

Examples:

Harry can speak Spanish now = ὁ Χάρρυ μπορεῖ νὰ μιλήση ἱσπανικὰ τώρα.
He couldn't speak Spanish three years ago = δὲν μποροῦσε νὰ μιλήση ἱσπανικὰ τρία χρόνια πρίν.
Mary can read Latin now = ἡ Μαίρη μπορεῖ νὰ διαβάση λατινικὰ τώρα.
She could read Latin when she was ten = αὐτὴ μποροῦσε νὰ διαβάση λατινικά, ὅταν ἦταν δέκα χρονῶν.
Could you speak English well last year? = μποροῦσες νὰ μιλήσης ἀγγλικὰ καλὰ πέρσι;
I could have gone there but it rained = θὰ μποροῦσα νὰ εἶχα πάει ἐκεῖ, ἀλλὰ ἔβρεχε.

Τὸ could have εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο μὲ τὸ would have been able to. Τὸ can δὲν ἔχει δικούς του χρόνους καὶ δανείζεται τοὺς χρόνους τοῦ to be able. Ἐπομένως μποροῦμε νὰ ποῦμε I could have gone καὶ I would have been able to go. Εἶναι ὁ ἴδιος χρόνος.

I could have gone if I had had the money = θὰ μποροῦσα νὰ εἶχα πάει, ἐὰν εἶχα τὰ χρήματα ἢ I would have been able to go if I had had the money.

Γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσουμε τὴν ἄδεια, ἔχουμε τὸ ρῆμα may καὶ Ἀόριστος might π.χ.:

May I borrow your book? = μπορῶ νὰ δανεισθῶ τὸ βιβλίο σου;
Yes, you may = ναί, μπορεῖς.
May I borrow your toothbrush? = μπορῶ νὰ δανεισθῶ τὴν ὀδοντόβουρτσά σου;
No, you may not = ὄχι, δὲν μπορεῖς.

Τὸ ρῆμα may ἔχει κι ἄλλη σημασία, ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ πιθανόν, may, may have καὶ might, might have.

I may see her tomorrow = πιθανὸν νὰ τὴν δῶ αὔριο.
He may have gone out because the windows are shut = πιθανὸν νὰ ἔχη βγῆ ἔξω, γιατὶ τὰ παράθυρα εἶναι κλειστά.

They may have left, their car is no here = πιθανὸν νὰ ἔχουν φύγει, τὸ αὐτοκίνητό τους δὲν εἶναι ἐδῶ.
I said I might see her tomorrow. She might have gone us if we had waited a little longer = αὐτὴ πιθανὸν νὰ ἔρχονταν μαζί μας, ἐὰν εἴχαμε περιμένει λίγο ἀκόμα.
Tom is late, he may have missed the train = ὁ Τὸμ ἄργησε, ἴσως νὰ ἔχη χάσει τὸ τραῖνο.

MUST

Ὅταν ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος εἶναι «πρέπει», χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὰ ρήματα must καὶ have to. Καὶ τὰ δύο ἐκφράζουν τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ πρέπει, εἶναι ἀνάγκη νὰ γίνη κάτι, π. χ.:

Mary went into the country so John had to get his own meals = ἡ Μαίρη πῆγε στὴν ἐξοχή, ἔτσι ὁ John ἔπρεπε νὰ ἑτοιμάση τὰ γεύματά του μόνος του.
We had to ask the doctor to come and see Mary because she didn't feel so well = ἀναγκασθήκαμε νὰ φωνάξουμε τὸ γιατρὸ νὰ ἔλθη νὰ δῆ τὴ Μαίρη, γιατὶ δὲν αἰσθάνονταν πολὺ καλά.
We must have the television set repaired = πρέπει νὰ διορθώσουμε τὴν συσκευὴ τηλεοράσεως.

Σὲ ἀπαγόρευση ἔχουμε must not (mustn't).

You mustn't study so hard, you will be ill = δὲν πρέπει νὰ μελετᾶς τόσο πολύ, θὰ ἀρρωστήσης.
He mustn't sleep so late at nights if he wants to get up early in the morning = αὐτὸς δὲν πρέπει νὰ κοιμᾶται τόσο ἀργὰ τὰ βράδια, ἂν θέλη νὰ σηκώνεται νωρὶς τὸ πρωΐ.

Τὸ must ἐπίσης φανερώνει πιθανότητα καθὼς καὶ τὸ must have μὲ τὴν παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος.

It must be time for dinner = πρέπει νὰ εἶναι ὥρα γιὰ γεῦμα.
You must have had a nice time = θὰ πρέπει νὰ εἶχες καλὴ διασκέδαση.
It must have been a fine trip = πρέπει νὰ ἦταν ἕνα περίφημο ταξίδι.

Γιὰ ὑποχρέωση ἔχουμε τὸ should, should have, ought to, ought to have. Τὸ should καὶ τὸ ought ἔχουν τὴν ἴδια ἔννοια, π.χ.:

I should meet him but I don't have time = θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ τὸν συναντοῦσα, ἀλλὰ δὲν ἔχω καιρό.
I should have written my lessons but I want to go to school = θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἶχα γράψει τὰ μαθήματά μου, ἀλλὰ θέλω νὰ πάω στὸ σχολεῖο.
She should have stayed at home and rested = θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἶχε μείνει στὸ σπίτι νὰ ξεκουραστῇ.
You ought to come early at the lecture = θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἶχες ἔλθει νωρὶς στὴν διάλεξη.
You ought to have come early yesterday = θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἶχες ἔλθει νωρὶς χθές.

EXERCISE 285

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὰ ἀνάλογα βοηθητικά:

Example:

You ... come early (ἀνάγκη).
You must come early.

We ... practice our English every day (ὑποχρέωση).
He ... drink so much coffee (ἀπαγόρευση).
I ... write a letter but I ... not find my pen (ἀνάγκη, ἱκανότητα).
He said that he ... lend me his (would - should).
I ... go home before coming here (ἀνάγκη).
... they write English? (ἱκανότητα).
They said that they ... not understand English (ἱκανότητα).
They said that they ... come tomorrow (ἱκανότητα).
If I ... speak English, I ... like to go to the United States. (ἱκανότητα, would - should).
... I borrow your book for a moment? (ἄδεια).
I think that she ... be in Washington (Μέλλων).
He says that he ... be here next month (Μέλλων + ἄρνηση).

We ... see you on Tuesday at five o'clock (Μέλλων).
... we write the sentence? (do you want me to ...).
Virginia ... play the piano every day (συνήθεια στὸ παρελθόν).
We ... go to the movies on Monday (πιθανόν).
Who knows? We ... go to the United States someday (πιθανότητα).
He has left the office. It ... be after five o'clock because that's when he usually leaves (πιθανότητα).
He ... gone with Mr West (πρέπει).
You ... called up earlier (ὑποχρέωση).
I ... gone to play tennis but it rained (ἱκανότητα).
I hope that we ... finished this book by the end of the year (Μέλλων).
They ... been there early but I didn't see them because I arrived late (πιθανότητα).

EXERCISE 286

Συμπληρῶστε τὰ κενὰ μὲ τὸ κατάλληλο βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα:

Example:

He thinks that he ... leave tomorrow.
He thinks that he must leave tomorrow.

She thought that we ... like to go.
We hoped that you ... return early.
I know that he ... have a good time.
I thought that you ... gone.
I knew that they ... be interested in it.
Did you think that I ... forgotten you?
She promised that she ... be there.
They think that they ... go with us.
He said that the program ... begin at two.
He says that he ... meet us.
I thought that it ... rain today.
He told us that they ... go there.
Where did you say that he ... have gone?

I didn't realize that he ... speak French.
They said that they ... stay a week or more.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 285

We have to practice our English every day.
He must not drink so much coffee.
I have to write a letter but I can not find my pen.
He said that he would lend me his.
I must go home before coming here.
Can they write English?
They said that they could not understand English.
They said that they could come tomorrow.
If I could speak English I should like to go to the United States.
May I borrow your book for a moment?
I think that she will be in Washington.
He says that he won't be here next month.
We shall see you on Tuesday at five o' clock.
Shall we write the sentence?
Virginia used to play the piano every day.
We may go to the movies on Monday.
Who knows? We may go to the United States someday.
He has left the office. It may be after five o'clock because that's when he usually leaves.
He must have gone with Mr West.
You ought to have called up earlier.
I could have gone to play tennis, but it rained.
I hope that we shall have finished this book by the end of the year.
They might have been there early, but I didn't see them because I arrived late.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 286

She thought that we should like to go.
We hoped that you would return early.
I know that he can have a good time.

I thought that you had gone (might have).
I knew that they might be interested in it.
Did you think that I could have forgotten you?
She promised that she would be here.
Thet think that they can go with us.
He said that the program ought to begin at two.
He says that he must meet us.
I thought that it might rain today.
He told us that they might go there.
Where did you say that he might have gone?
I didn't realize that he could speak French.
They said that they might stay a week or more.

ΠΙΝΑΚΑΣ ΒΟΗΘΗΤΙΚΩΝ

Σᾶς δίνουμε στὸν ἀκόλουθο πίνακα ὅλα τὰ βοηθητικὰ καὶ τὶς διάφορες κατηγορίες ποὺ ἀνήκουν.

Habit (past) συνήθεια στὸ παρελθὸν: used to, would.
Future: be going to, shall, shall have, will, will have.
Questions: shall (do you want me to . . . ?)
Willingness (προθυμία) will, would.
Conditional: should, would.
Ability (ἱκανότητα): can, could, could have.
Permission (ἄδεια) may, might.
Possibility (πιθανότητα): may, may have, might, might have.
Necessity (ἀνάγκη): must, have to.
No necessity: have to (negative).
Prohibition (ἀπαγόρευση) must not (mustn't).
Probability (πιθανότητα) must, must have.
Obligation (ὑποχρέωση): should, should have, ought, ought to have.

VOCABULARY

incredible	(ινκρέντιμπλ)	=	ἀπίστευτος - η - ο
profound	(προφάουντ)	=	βαθὺς - ιὰ - ὺ
impression	(ιμπρέchιεν)	=	ἐντύπωση

lofty	(λόφτι)	=	ὑψηλὸς - ὴ - ὸ
gigantic	(ντjαϊγκάντικ)	=	γιγαντιαῖος - α - ο
department	(ντιπάρτμεντ)	=	κατάστημα
magnificent	(μαγκνίφισεντ)	=	μεγαλοπρεπὴς
exclusive	(εξκλούσιβ)	=	ἀποκλειστικὸς - ὴ - ὸ
fabulous	(φέϊμπουλους)	=	μυθώδης - ης - ες
price	(πράϊς)	=	τιμὴ
permanent	(πέρμανεντ)	=	μόνιμος - η - ο
settler	(σέτλερ)	=	ἄποικος
imagine	(ιμάντjιν)	=	φαντάζομαι
Dutch	(ντατch)	=	Ὀλλανδὸς
equivalent	(ικουΐβαλεντ)	=	ἴσον
to be worth	(γουὸρθ)	=	ἀξίζω
acre	(έϊκρ)	=	στρέμμα
connect	(κονὲκτ)	=	συνδέω
as well as	(αεζ γουὲλ αεζ)	=	ὡς ἐπίσης καὶ
borough	(μπόροου)	=	προάστιο, τμῆμα πόλης
constitute	(κονστιτιοῦτ)	=	ἀποτελῶ
province	(πρόβινς)	=	ἐπαρχία
form	(φορμ)	=	σχηματίζω
foreigner	(φόρεϊνερ)	=	ξένος
symbolize	(σίμπολάϊζ)	=	συμβολίζω
freedom	(φρίντομ)	=	ἐλευθερία
be born	(μπορν)	=	γεννιέμαι
German	(ντjέρμαν)	=	Γερμανὸς
ground	(γκράουντ)	=	ἔδαφος
Irish	(άϊριch)	=	Ἰρλανδὸς
sky	(σκάϊ)	=	οὐρανὸς
statue	(στέϊτchιου)	=	ἄγαλμα
subway	(σάμπγουέϊ)	=	ὑπόγειος σιδηρόδρομος
Sweden	(σουΐντεν)	=	Σουηδία
wine	(γουάϊν)	=	κρασὶ
while	(γουάϊλ)	=	ἐνῶ, ἐνόσω
truck	(τρακ)	=	φορτηγὸ αὐτοκίνητο
pavement	(πέϊβμεντ)	=	πεζοδρόμιο
beneath	(μπινὶθ)	=	κάτωθεν
wholesale	(hόλσέϊλ)	=	χονδρικὴ πώληση
good	(γκουντ)	=	ἐμπόρευμα
buyer	(μπάϊερ)	=	ἀγοραστὴς

alive	(ελάϊβ)	=	ζωντανὸς
crowd	(κράουντ)	=	συνωστίζομαι
pour	(πουρ)	=	ξεχύνομαι
pier	(πίερ)	=	ἀποβάθρα
load	(λόουντ)	=	φορτώνω
unload	(ανλόουντ)	=	ξεφορτώνω
anchor	(άνκορ)	=	ἀγκυροβολῶ
freighter	(φρέϊτερ)	=	φορτηγὸ βαπόρι
ocean liner	(óchιαν λάϊνερ)	=	ὑπερωκεάνιο
rub	(ραμπ)	=	τρίβω
soap	(σόουπ)	=	σαπούνι
dry	(ντράϊ)	=	στεγνώνω

HAD BETTER

Τὸ **had better** (θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα) εἶναι ἕνα βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα δύο λέξεων, ποὺ ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Φανερώνει τὸ συμβουλευτικὸν τῆς πράξης, ποὺ ἐκφράζεται ἀπὸ τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο, ποὺ ἀκολουθεῖ. Μπορεῖ ἐπίσης καμιὰ φορὰ νὰ ἐκφράση μικρὴ ὑποχρέωση.

Τὸ had better ἀναφέρεται σὲ Ἐνεστῶτα ἢ σὲ μελλοντικὸ χρόνο, π.χ.:

We had better go early in order to get good seats = θὰ κάνουμε καλὰ νὰ πᾶμε νωρὶς μὲ σκοπὸ νὰ πάρουμε καλὲς θέσεις.
We had better not wait for her, she may be very late = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερο νὰ μὴν περιμένουμε αὐτή, ἴσως νὰ ἀργήση πολύ.
Had we better go early? = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ πᾶμε νωρίς;
Hadn't we better go a little early? = δὲν θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ πᾶμε λίγο πιὸ νωρίς;

Ὑπάρχει ἐπίσης κι ὁ σύντομος τύπος τοῦ had better, I'd better go, you'd better go, he'd better go etc.

Σὲ ἄρνηση:
I'd better not go = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ μὴ πάω ἢ I hadn't better go.
Σὲ ἀρνητικὴ ἐρώτηση:
Hadn't I better meet him? = δὲν θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ τὸν συναντήσω;

Examples:

You'd better not eat so much (you ought not eat so much, yon mustn't eat so much) = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα (δὲν θὰ ἔπρεπε) νὰ τρῶς τόσο πολύ.
If you feel tired you'd better stop and have a rest = ἐὰν αἰσθάνεσαι κουρασμένος, θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ σταματήσης καὶ νὰ ξεκουραστῇς.
Hadn't we better wait until the rain stops? = δὲν θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ περιμένουμε, ὥσπου νὰ σταματήση ἡ βροχή;
Hadn't you better hurry if you want to get the eight o'clock train? it is getting late = δὲν θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ βιατῇς, ἂν θέλης νὰ πάρης τὸ τραῖνο τῶν ὀκτώ; εἶναι ἀργά.
What had I better do? (What do you think I ought to do?) = τί θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ κάνω; (τί νομίζεις, ὅτι θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ κάνω;)
You had better meet her if you want to finish your work = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ τὴν συναντήσης, ἂν θέλης νὰ τελειώσης τὴ δουλειά σου.
You had better study your lessons again if you want to pass your examinations = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ μελετήσης τὰ μαθήματά σου πάλι, ἂν θέλης νὰ περάσης τὶς ἐξετάσεις σου.
We had better wait for half an hour until he comes = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ περιμένουμε γιὰ μισὴ ὥρα, ἕως ὅτου ἔλθη.
We had better walk fast, it is going to rain = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερα νὰ περπατήσουμε γρήγορα, θὰ βρέξη.
They had better not try to see all the important government buildings of Washington, they are too many and they will be very tired = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερο νὰ μὴ δοκιμάσουν νὰ δοῦν ὅλα τὰ σπουδαῖα κυβερνητικὰ κτίρια τῆς Washington, εἶναι πάρα πολλὰ καὶ θὰ κουρασθοῦν πολύ.
You had better sell your old car, you can buy a new one = θὰ ἦταν καλύτερο νὰ πουλήσης τὸ παλιό σου αὐτοκίνητο, μπορεῖς νὰ ἀγοράσης ἕνα καινούργιο.

WOULD RATHER

Τὸ **would rather** (prefer) = θὰ προτιμοῦσα, εἶναι ἕνα βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα δύο λέξεων ἀκολουθούμενο ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος. Φανερώνει Ἐνεστῶτα ἢ Μέλλοντα χρόνο.

Examples:

Would you rather walk or ride? = θὰ προτιμοῦσες νὰ περπατήσης ἢ νὰ πᾶς μὲ τὸ αὐτοκίνητο;

I would rather walk = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ περπατήσω.
Wouldn't you rather walk? it is a nice day = δὲν θὰ προτιμοῦσες νὰ περπατήσης; εἶναι μιὰ ὡραία μέρα.

Στὸν σύντομο τύπο στὴν κατάφαση:
I'd rather go, you 'd rather go, he'd rather walk.

Στὴν ἄρνηση:
I'd rather not go, you'd rather not run.

Στὴν ἀρνητικὴ ἐρώτηση:
Wouldn't I rather go? wouldn't you rather eat now?

I'd rather be alive than dead (I prefer to be alive) = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ εἶμαι ζωντανὸς παρὰ πεθαμένος.
Which would you rather have (which do you prefer) red wine or white? = ποιὸ θὰ προτιμοῦσες, τὸ κόκκινο κρασὶ ἢ τὸ ἄσπρο;
Would you like to go to the movies? = θὰ σοῦ ἄρεζε νὰ πᾶς στὸν κινηματογράφο;
No, thank you, I'd rather stay at home (than go to the movies) = ὄχι, εὐχαριστῶ, θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ μείνω στὸ σπίτι.
He would rather wear his old clothes for ten years than buy new ones = αὐτὸς θὰ προτιμοῦσε νὰ φορᾶ τὰ παλιά του ροῦχα γιὰ δέκα χρόνια ἀπὸ τὸ νὰ ἀγοράση καινούργια.
I would rather had a cup of coffee than a glass of milk = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ ἔχω ἕνα φλυτζάνι καφὲ ἀπὸ ἕνα ποτήρι γάλα.
I would rather lend him the money he wants than throw them away = θὰ ἦταν προτιμότερο νὰ τοῦ δανείσω τὰ χρήματα, ποὺ θέλει, ἀπὸ τὸ νὰ τὰ πετάξω μακριά.
I'd rather come at five than at six = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ ἔλθω στὶς πέντε παρὰ στὶς ἕξι.
I'd rather speak English in class than at home = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ μιλήσω ἀγγλικὰ στὴν τάξη παρὰ στὸ σπίτι.
You'd rather meet me in front of the theater than at the back = θὰ ἦταν προτιμότερο νὰ μὲ συναντοῦσες μπροστὰ στὸ θέατρο παρὰ πίσω.
Mary would rather spend her vacation at the seaside than on the mountain = ἡ Μαίρη θὰ προτιμοῦσε νὰ περάση τὶς διακοπές της στὴν ἀκρογιαλιὰ παρὰ ἐπάνω στὸ βουνό.

I would rather live here than in New York = θὰ προτιμοῦσα νὰ ζῶ ἐδῶ παρὰ στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη.

EXERCISE 287

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ had better:

You . . . see the doctor if you don't feel well.
You . . . study this lesson again.
We . . . wait a few minutes more.
You . . . make your reservation today.
He . . . go to bed early if he is going to get up at six.
You . . . not go without an umbrella.
We . . . not visit the museum until tomorrow.
He . . . not walk to the top of the Empire State Building.
She . . . not spend too much time there.
They . . . not try to see all of New York in a week.
. . . we . . . review the vocabulary?
. . . you . . . sell your car?
. . . she . . . take a coat with her?
. . . you . . . eat something before leaving?
. . . we . . . take a taxi?

EXERCISE 288

Ἀπαντῆστε στὶς ἐρωτήσεις:

Would you rather have tea or coffee?
Would you rather stay in New York or in Athens?
Would you rather ride on a bus or on the subway?
Would you rather have a class at six o'clock or at seven?
Would you rather spend your vacation here or in the country?
Wouldn't you rather spend more time in Washington than in Miami?
Wouldn't you rather meet me in front of the church?
Wouldn't you rather sit on the main floor than in the balcony?

Wouldn't you rather speak English in class?
Wouldn't you rather learn English than French?

EXERCISE 289

Ἀλλάξτε τὶς καταφατικὲς προτάσεις σὲ ἐρωτήσεις:

The streets are always crowded.
People always walk fast in New York.
He likes to ride on a subway.
The hotel was full when Mary arrived.
They took a boat from New York to New Jersey.
They were able to get a hotel room easily.
They have already seen the suspension bridges.
It would take a year to see that city.
They should plan to stay in New York longer.
We will be there by noon, if we leave now.

EXERCISE 290

Γράψτε ἐρωτήσεις, στὶς ὁποῖες οἱ παρακάτω προτάσεις εἶναι ἀπαντήσεις:

Example:

No, I did not meet him.
Did you meet him?

No, I have nothing to say.
The train for New York leaves at two.
I have three French books.
You can leave your hat and coat on the chair.
No, you can't eat well at that restaurant.
You must take another bus to go there.
It will cost you two dollars.
No, there are no buses for the village.

Sorry, but I don't have the money you ask.
No, this bus does not go downtown.

EXERCISE 291

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις:

Are they going . . . plane or . . . bus?
The second bus passes . . . my house.
Shall we wait . . . him?
It has been raining . . . noon.
It has been raining . . . two hours.
She took the hat . . . the table.
Would you like to walk . . . the park?
He has gone . . . the Bank.
They went to the movies . . . dinner.
I went downtown . . . lunch.

LETTER WRITING

2. ENVELOPES

In Britain we put the name of the person we are writing to first; then the number of his house, followed by the name of the road, on the same line; then the village or town in which he lives; then the county; and lastly the country, if the letter is an international one.

If I was writing to Mr W. H. Jones from India, for example, I would write on the envelope:

W. H. Jones, Esq.,
13 Morley Road,
Wimborne,
Dorset,
ENGLAND.

If I was writing from inside England, I would put:

W. H. Jones, Esq.,
13 Morley Road,
WINBORNE,
Dorset.

Esq. is short for Esquire, an old title which has now become a polite form of address. You can very well use Mr instead, if you do not know the man's initials, but don't use both at the same time, and remember that Mr goes before the name, whereas Esq. goes after it. Do not use Mr or Esq. when you are using some other title, such as Dr or Professor.

There are lots of orders, decorations, medals and societies in Britain which have initials that can be placed after a person's name (examples are V. C., K. C. M. G., D. S. O., M. M. and F. R. S.). Any good dictionary will give such abbreviations with their meanings.

They should always be placed after Esq., when both are used (e.g. W. H. Jones, Esq., M. B. E.), in order of importance.

When writing to a husband and wife, address the envelope as follows:

Mr and Mrs W. H. Jones.

Do not use Esq.

When writing to two unmarried ladies with the same name, write:

The Misses W. and F. Jones.

When the receiver's address is put at the beginning or end of the letter itself, it should be the same as the address on the envelope.

When writing to a firm or Government Department, copy its address carefully from its own stationery, from a reference book or from an advertisement.

If you want a letter to go by air mail, write BY AIR MAIL in the top left-hand corner of the envelope, or stick on one of the blue labels marked BY AIR MAIL provided by the post office.

If you want to send printed material by air mail, put SECOND CLASS AIR MAIL in the top left-hand corner.

For printed material to be sent by surface mail, put PRINTED MATTER in the top left-hand corner of the envelope.

If you want your letter to be sent on to the person you are writing to (because you do not know his new address), mark the envelope PLEASE FORWARD in the top left-hand corner of the envelope.

If you are sending photographs in your letter and you do not want them to be damaged, put PHOTOGRAPHS: PLEASE DO NOT BEND in the top left-hand corner of the envelope.

USED TO - BE USED TO - GET USED TO

Τὸ **used to** χρησιμεύει σὰν βοηθητικὸ κι ἐκφράζει συνήθεια στὸ παρελθόν. Ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ τὸν ἀπλὸ τύπο τοῦ κύριου ρήματος. Ὁ ἀρνητικὸς τύπος τοῦ used to εἶναι did not use to, ὁ σύντομος didn't use to, ὁ ἐρωτηματικὸς τύπος εἶναι did ... use to?

Examples:

He used to live around the corner from us = αὐτὸς συνήθιζε νὰ ζῆ γύρω στὴ γωνία ἀπὸ μᾶς (ἀπὸ τὸ δικό μας σπίτι).
He didn't use to talk too much = αὐτὸς δὲν συνήθιζε νὰ μιλᾶ πάρα πολύ.
Did he use to play tennis? = συνήθιζε νὰ παίζη τέννις;
Didn't he use to write poetry? = δὲν συνήθιζε νὰ γράφη ποιήματα;
When Mrs West went to London she was used to the heavy traffic there = ὅταν ἡ κυρία West πῆγε στὸ Λονδίνο, συνήθισε στὴν μεγάλη κυκλοφορία ἐκεῖ.
I used to walk every day in the summer = συνήθιζα νὰ περπατῶ κάθε μέρα τὸ καλοκαίρι.
She used to live in the country, didn't she? = αὐτὴ συνήθιζε νὰ ζῆ στὴν ἐξοχή, δὲν συνήθιζε;
She used to play tennis with her small brother = αὐτὴ συνήθιζε νὰ παίζη τέννις μὲ τὸν μικρὸ ἀδελφό της.
I used to go downtown on foot = συνήθιζα νὰ πηγαίνω στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης μὲ τὰ πόδια.
I used to visit my old aunt every Sunday morning = συνήθιζα νὰ ἐπισκέπτωμαι τὴν γριὰ θεία μου κάθε Κυριακὴ πρωΐ.

Τὸ **be used to**, εἶναι ἴδιο μὲ τὸ be accustomed to ἢ to be in a habit = τὸ νὰ εἶμαι συνηθισμένος ἢ νὰ εἶμαι σὲ συνήθεια. Αὐτὴ ἡ ἔκφραση ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀπὸ ἕνα γερούνδιο (τὸ γερούνδιο ἔχει τὴν κατάληξη -ing στὸ τέλος τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς ὅμως νὰ ὑπάρχη τὸ συνδετικὸ be).

She is used to cold water = αὐτὴ εἶναι συνηθισμένη στὸ κρύο νερό.

I am not used to getting up at six o'clock = δὲν εἶμαι συνηθισμένος νὰ σηκώνωμαι στὶς ἕξι ἡ ὥρα.
I was not used to getting up at six o'clock.

Τὸ **get used to** εἶναι ἴσον μὲ τὸ get accustomed to ἢ τὸ to get in the habit of. Ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀπὸ ἕνα γερούνδιο, π. χ.:

You are getting used to the subway now, aren't you? = συνηθίζεις τὸν ὑπόγειο (ἀρχίζεις νὰ συνηθίζης) τώρα, δὲν εἶναι ἔτσι;
He got used to the cold when he lived in New York = αὐτὸς ἄρχισε νὰ συνηθίζη τὸ κρύο, ὅταν ζοῦσε στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη.
I think that you will get used to the city after a while = νομίζω, ὅτι θὰ ἀρχίσης νὰ συνηθίζης τὴν πόλη μετὰ ἀπὸ λίγο.
I am not used to beeing spoken in that impolite way = δὲν εἶμαι συνηθισμένος νὰ μοῦ μιλοῦν μ' αὐτὸ τὸν ἀγενῆ τρόπο.
Mrs Green is from the country, she is not used to the noise and busy traffic of the city = ἡ κυρία Green εἶναι ἀπὸ τὴν ἐξοχή, δὲν εἶναι συνηθισμένη στὸ θόρυβο καὶ τὴ μεγάλη κυκλοφορία τῆς πόλης.
If you bring your car to England you' ll have to get used to driving on the left side of the road = ἐὰν φέρης τὸ αὐτοκίνητό σου στὴν Ἀγγλία, θὰ πρέπει νὰ συνηθίσης νὰ ὁδηγῆς στὴν ἀριστερὴ πλευρὰ τοῦ δρόμου.
When they went to New York they soon got used to having coffee for breakfast = ὅταν πῆγαν στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη, γρήγορα συνήθισαν νὰ ἔχουν καφὲ γιὰ πρόγευμα.
Last summer he got used writing his letters in English = πέρσι τὸ καλοκαίρι συνήθισε νὰ γράφη τὰ γράμματά του στὰ ἀγγλικά.

STILL

Ἡ λέξη **still** χρησιμεύει σὰν ἐπίρρημα χρονικό, γιὰ νὰ φανερώση τὴ συνέχεια μιᾶς πράξης. Ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸν Παρακείμενο ἔχει μέσα στὴν πρόταση τὴν ἴδια θέση ποὺ ἔχει ἕνα ἐπίρρημα συχνότητας ὅπως τὸ always, usually, often etc. δηλ. πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ κύριο ρῆμα, μετὰ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα καὶ μετὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα be. Δὲν τὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε στὸν Παρακείμενο παρὰ μόνο σὲ ἀρνητικὲς προτάσεις, ὅπου προηγεῖται τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος have.

Examples:

Are they still in New York? Yes, they are still there = εἶναι αὐτοὶ ἀκόμη στὴν Νέα 'Υόρκη; ναί, αὐτοὶ εἶναι ἀκόμη ἐκεῖ.

Does he still walk to school? Yes, he still walks to school = πάει αὐτὸς ἀκόμη περπατώντας στὸ σχολεῖο; ναί, αὐτὸς ἀκόμη πάει μὲ τὰ πόδια στὸ σχολεῖο.

Have you finished this lesson? = ἔχεις τελειώσει αὐτὸ τὸ μάθημα;

No, we still have a little to do = ὄχι, ἀκόμη, ἔχουμε λίγο νὰ κάνουμε.

We still haven't finished it = ἀκόμη δὲν τὸ ἔχουμε τελειώσει.

The two boys are still asleep = τὰ δυὸ ἀγόρια ἀκόμη κοιμοῦνται.

George is still in bed, he is not out of bed = ὁ Γιῶργος εἶναι ἀκόμη στὸ κρεβάτι, αὐτὸς δὲν σηκώθηκε.

The train has not left, it is still at the platform = τὸ τραῖνο δὲν ἔχει φύγει, εἶναι ἀκόμη στὴν πλατφόρμα.

Mary and John are still talking = ἡ Μαίρη κι ὁ John ἀκόμη κουβεντιάζουν.

She is still staying with some friends = αὐτὴ ἀκόμη μένει μὲ μερικοὺς φίλους.

ANY MORE - ANY LONGER

Τὸ **any more** καὶ τὸ **any longer** χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὲ ἀρνητικὲς προτάσεις. Τὸ any longer εἶναι πιὸ τυπικὸ ἀπὸ τὸ any more καὶ τονίζει περισσότερο τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ χρόνου.

Examples:

They aren't living there any more (any longer) = αὐτοὶ δὲν μένουν ἐκεῖ πιά.

I am sorry but I can't wait for them any longer = λυποῦμαι, ἀλλὰ δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τοὺς περιμένω περισσότερο.

He doesn't work for them any more = αὐτὸς δὲν ἐργάζεται γι' αὐτοὺς πιά.

She is very old, she doesn't sing any more = αὐτὴ εἶναι πολὺ ἡλικιωμένη, δὲν τραγουδᾶ πιά.

They sold their old house and they don't live in it any more = αὐτοὶ πούλησαν τὸ παλιό τους σπίτι καὶ δὲν κάθονται σ' αὐτὸ πλέον.

Do you still plan to meet her downtown? = ἀκόμη συνεχίζεις νὰ σχεδιάζης νὰ τὴν συναντήσης κάτω στὴν πόλη;

EXERCISE 292

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὴν ἔκφραση be used to στὸν ᾿Ενεστῶτα:

He . . . reading the newspaper every morning.
Most American . . . drinking their coffee with their meals.
Although he writes badly, I . . . reading his writing.
She . . . speaking English now.
I . . . going to bed early.
I . . . not . . . reading in bed.
We . . . not . . . his way of speaking.
. . . you . . . having tea every day?
. . . you . . . having dinner at noon or at night?
New Yorkers . . . spending a great deal of time on the subway.
They . . . living in New York and don't want to leave.
She . . . not . . . the noise of the big city.
Latin Americans . . . not . . . the cold winters of New York.
They . . . not . . . the heavy traffic in New York.
They . . . not . . . so many high buildings.

EXERCISE 293

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ τὴν ἔκφραση get used to:

You . . . hurrying if you live in New York (Future).
You . . . hearing rapid English in the United States (Future).
You . . . the traffic and the noise there (Present).
He . . . the food after a while (Past).
He . . . writing letters in English (Past).

EXERCISE 294

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ still, any more, any longer:

He is . . . studying English.

He . . . makes the same mistakes.
He doesn't make the same mistakes . . .
Is there . . . time to go to the movies?
Have they left? No, they are . . . here.
They aren't living in New York . . .
After twenty years he is . . . working for the same company.
Is it . . . raining? No, it isn't raining . . .
Do you . . . like to play tennis?

EXERCISE 295

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ already καὶ yet:

Has your brother left? No, he hasn't left . . .
Have they visited Washington . . . ?
Yes, they have been . . . . there.
Have you bought your ticket . . . ? No, I haven't bought it . . .
They weren't going to come early, but they are . . . here.
I haven't decided what to do . . .
Has he finished it . . . ? No, he hasn't finished it. . . .
We have . . . studied this lesson, haven't we?
Is it time to go . . . ? No, not . . .
Is he a citizen . . . ? No, he has to wait two years more.
Does he have his new car . . . ? Yes, he has . . . had it for a week.

EXERCISE 296

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ still, anymore, anylonger, already, yet:

Is he used to the subways . . . ?
Yes, he is . . . used to them.
Virginia isn't used to speaking English . . .
Virginia . . . speaks Spanish very often.
She doesn't sing . . .

They aren't ready to leave .....
Robert is ..... writing a letter.
They don't live in their old house .....
They have ..... moved into their new house.
She hasn't left the city .....
She is ..... staying with some friends.
She has ..... sent her books.
This week I haven't received a letter .....
Do you ..... plan to go on Saturday?
I ..... have ticket but I ..... have to do my things.

EXERCISE 297

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ for, since καὶ ago:

Boston was founded more than three hundred years .....
They have been living in Boston ..... 1950.
New York was a very big city from many years .....
Boston has had a University ..... 1636.
The harbor has been important ..... three hundred years.
They arrived in Boston a month .....
They have been there ..... last month.
They have been there ..... a month.
They think they will stay there ..... six months.
They began to study English five years .....

EXERCISE 29

Συμπληρῶστε στὰ κενὰ προθέσεις:

He bought his new house ..... a neighbour.
Have you paid ..... the tickets?
He went ..... horseback to see the river.
The car is .... the house.
It is time ..... us to go.
We waited ..... them ..... half an hour.
Would you like ..... walk ..... the park?

They meet them ..... the theater.
Where are you .....?
He borrowed a dollar ..... Mr West.
I haven't heard ..... my sister ..... two weeks.
We arrived ..... the theater ten minutes later.

XXX

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 287

You had better see the doctor if you don't feel well.
You had better study this lesson again.
We had better wait a few minutes more.
You had better make your reservation today.
He had better go to bed early if he is going to get up at six.
You had better not go without an umbrella.
We had better not visit the museum until tomorrow.
He had better not walk to the top of the Empire State Building.
She had better not spend too much time there.
They had better not try to see all of New York in a week.
Had we better review the vocabulary?
Had you better sell your car?
Had she better take a coat with her?
Had you better eat something before leaving?
Had we better take a taxi?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 288

I would rather have tea.
I would rather stay in Athens.
I would rather ride on a bus.
I would rather have a class at seven.
I would rather spend my vacation in the country.
I would rather spend more time in Miami.
Yes, I would rather meet you there.
I would rather sit on the main floor.
No, I wouldn't rather speak English in class.
I would rather learn English.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 289

Are the streets always crowded?
Do people always walk fast in New York?
Does he like to ride on a subway?
Was the hotel full when Mary arrived?
Did they take a boat from New York to New Jersey?
Were they able to get a hotel room easily?
Have they already seen the suspension bridges?
Would it take a year to see that city?
Should they plan to stay in New York longer?
Will we be there by noon, if we leave now?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 290

Have you anything to say?
What time does the train for New York leave?
How many French books do you have?
Can we leave our hat and coat on the chair?
Can I eat well at that restaurant?
Must we take another bus to go there?
How much will it cost me?
Are there any buses for the village?
Do you have to lend me some money?
Does this bus go downtown?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 291

Are they going by plane or by bus?
The second bus passes near my house.
Shall we wait for him?
It has been raining since noon.
It has been raining for two hours.
She took the hat from the table.
Would you like to walk in the park?
He has gone into the Bank.

They went to the movies after dinner.
I went downtown for lunch.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 292

He is used to reading the newspaper every morning.
Most Americans are used to drinking their coffee with their meals.
Although he writes badly, I am used to reading his writing.
She is used to speaking English now.
I am used to going to bed early.
I am not used to reading in bed.
We are not used to his way of speaking.
Are you used to having tea every day?
Are you used to having dinner at noon or at night?
New Yorkers are used to spending a great deal of time on the subway.
They are used to living in New York and don't want to leave.
She is not used to the noise of the big city.
Latin Americans are not used to the cold winters of New York.
They are not used to the heavy traffic in New York.
They are not used to so many high buildings.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 293

You will get used to hurrying if you live in New York.
You will get used to hearing rapid English in the United States.
You are getting used to the traffic and the noise there.
He got used to the food after a while.
He got used to writing letters in English.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 294

He is still studying English.
He still makes the same mistakes.
He doesn't make the same mistakes any more.
Is there still time to go to the movies?
Have they left? No, they are still here.

They aren't living in New York any more.
After twenty years he is still working for the same company.
Is it still raining? No, it isn't raining any more.
Do you still like to play tennis?

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 295

Has your brother left? No, he hasn't left yet.
Have they visited Washington yet?
Yes, they have been already there.
Have you bought your ticket yet? No, I haven't bought it yet?
They weren't going to come early, but they are already here.
I haven't decided what to do yet.
Has he finished it yet? No, he hasn't finished it yet.
We have already studied this lesson, haven't we?
Is it time to go yet? No, not yet.
Is he a citizen yet? No, he has to wait two years more.
Does he have his new car yet? Yes, he has already had it for a week.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 296

Is he used to the subways yet?
Yes, he is already used to them.
Virginia isn't used to speaking English yet.
Virginia still speaks Spanish very often.
She doesn't sing any more.
They aren't ready to leave yet.
Robert is still writing a letter.
They don't live in their old house any longer.
They have already moved into their new house.
She hasn't left the city yet.
She is still staying with some friends.
She has already sent her books.
This week I havent't received a letter yet.
Do you still plan to go on Saturday?
I already have my ticket but I still have to do my things.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 297

Boston was founded more than three hundred years ago.
They have been living in Boston since 1950.
New York was a very big city from many years ago.
Boston has had a University since 1636.
The harbor has been important for three hundred years.
They arrived in Boston a month ago.
They have been there since last month.
They have been there for a month.
They think they will stay there for six months.
They began to study English five years ago.

ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΣ 298

He bought his new house from a neighbour.
Have you paid for the tickets?
He went on horseback to see the river.
The car is in front of the house.
It is time for us to go.
We waited for them for half an hour.
Would you like to walk in the park?
They meet them at the theater.
Where are you from?
He borrowed a dollar from Mr West.
I haven't heard from my sister for two weeks.
We arrived at the theater ten minutes later.

VOCABULARY

narrow	(ναέροου)	= στενός -ή -ό
tendency	(τέντενσι)	= τάση
worship	(γουόρchιπ)	= λατρεύω
tradition	(τραντίchιεν)	= παράδοση
share	(chέαρ)	= μοιράζομαι
charm	(τchάρμ)	= γοητεία, θέλγητρο
numerous	(νούμερους)	= πολυάριθμος -η -ο

Jew	(ντjιού)	= 'Εβραῖος -α
Irish	(άϊριch)	= 'Ιρλανδὸς -ή
recently	(ρίσεντλι)	= προσφάτως
majority	(μαντjόριτι)	= πλειονότης, πλειοψηφία
Catholic	(κάθολικ)	= Καθολικὸς
patriot	(πάτριοτ)	= πατριώτης
signal	(σίγκναλ)	= σύνθημα
steeple	(στιπλ)	= καμπαναριὸ
horseback	(χόρσμπαεκ)	= καβάλα
warn	(γουόρν)	= προειδοποιῶ
result	(ριζάλτ)	= ἀποτέλεσμα
general	(ντjένεραλ)	= στρατηγὸς
munition	(μιουνίchιεν)	= πολεμοφόδια
battle	(μπατλ)	= μάχη
victory	(βίκτορι)	= νίκη
speaker	(σπίκερ)	= ὁμιλητὴς
horseshoe	(hόρσchιου)	= πέταλο ἀλόγου
neighboring	(νέϊμπορινγκ)	= γειτονικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
in spite of	(ιν σπάϊτ οφ)	= παρ' ὅλον ὅτι, μολονότι
rough	(ραφ)	= ἄγριος, τραχὺς -ιὰ -ὺ
surface	(σάρφεϊς)	= ἐπιφάνεια
soil	(σόϊλ)	= ἔδαφος
corn	(κορν)	= καλαμπόκι
rye	(ράϊ)	= σίκαλις, βρύζα
wheat	(hουὴτ)	= σιτάρι
cattle	(κατλ)	= βοοειδῆ
pig	(πιγκ)	= γουρούνι
sheep	(chιπ)	= πρόβατα
hide	(hάϊντ)	= προβιὰ
beef	(μπιφ)	= βοδινὸ κρέας
provide	(προβάϊντ)	= προμηθεύω
leather	(λέδερ)	= δέρμα
wool	(γουλ)	= μαλλὶ
material	(ματίριαλ)	= ὑλικὸ
spin	(σπιν)	= κλώθω
thread	(θρεντ)	= κλωστὴ
weave-wove-woven	(γουὴβ)	= ὑφαίνω
fortunately	(φόρτchιουνατλι)	= εὐτυχῶς
cod	(κοντ)	= μπακαλιάρος

plenty	(πλέντι)	= ἄφθονος -η -ο
add	(αεντ)	= προσθέτω
trade	(τρέϊντ)	= ἐμπόριο
lumber	(λάμπερ)	= ξυλεία
quatity	(κουάντιτι)	= ποσότητα
commerce	(κάμερς)	= ἐμπόριο
industrial	(ιντάστριαλ)	= βιομηχανικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
aspect	(άσπεκτ)	= ὄψη
region	(ρίντjιον)	= περιοχὴ
factory	(φάκτορι)	= ἐργοστάσιο
firearm	(φάϊαρμ)	= πυροβόλο ὅπλο
stormy	(στόρμι)	= θυελλώδης
voyage	(βόγιεντj)	= ταξίδι
shore	(chop)	= ἀκτὴ
inland	(ίνλαντ)	= ἐσωτερικὸ
supply	(σαπλάϊ)	= προμηθεύω, προμήθεια
wilderness	(γουάϊλντερνες)	= ἀγριότητα
building material		= οἰκοδομήσιμο ὑλικὸ
problem	(πρόμπλεμ)	= πρόβλημα
plant	(πλαεντ)	= φυτεύω
crop	(κροπ)	= συγκομιδὴ
mean	(μιν)	= ἐννοῶ
bush	(μπουch)	= θάμνος
rock	(ροκ)	= βράχος
go on	(γκόου ον)	= συνεχίζω
blind	(μπλάϊντ)	= τυφλὸς -ὴ
plate	(πλέϊτ)	= πιάτο
private	(πράϊβετ)	= ἰδιωτικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
location	(λοκέechιεν)	= τοποθεσία
oat	(όουτ)	= βρώμη
grain	(γκρέϊν)	= σιτηρά, σπόρος
farther	(φάρδερ)	= μακρύτερα
mill	(μιλ)	= μύλος
flour	(φλάορ)	= ἀλεύρι
hog	(χογκ)	= γουρούνι
machinery	(μαchίνερι)	= μηχανήματα
water power		= ἐνέργεια, λευκὸς ἄνθραξ
water way		= πλωτὸς δρόμος
canal	(κάναλ)	= κανάλι, διώρυγα

form	(φορμ)	= σχηματίζω
divide	(ντιβάϊντ)	= χωρίζω
thunder	(θάντερ)	= κεραυνὸς
immense	(ιμένς)	= ἀπέραντος -η -ο
volume	(βόλιουμ)	= ὄγκος
furnish	(φέρνιch)	= παράγω
power	(πάουερ)	= δύναμη
vicinity	(βισίνιτι)	= πέριξ, γύρω
incidentally	(ινσιντένταλι)	= τυχαῖα
favorite	(φέϊβοριτ)	= ἀγαπητὸς -ὴ -ὸ
spot	(σποτ)	= τοποθεσία, σημεῖο
honeymoon	(hόνιϊμουν)	= μῆνας τοῦ μέλιτος
navigable	(ναβιγκέϊμπλ)	= πλωτὸς -ὴ -ὸ
allow	(αελόου)	= ἐπιτρέπω
forth	(φορθ)	= ἐμπρὸς
clause	(κλόουζ)	= πρόταση
suppose	(σαπὸζ)	= ὑποθέτω
weight	(γουέϊτ)	= βάρος
comparison	(κομπάριζεν)	= σύγκριση
imagine	(ιμάτjιν)	= φαντάζομαι
settlement	(σέτλεμεντ)	= ἐγκατάσταση
sail	(σέϊλ)	= πλέω
settle	(σέτλ)	= ἐγκαθίσταμαι
jazz	(ντjατj)	= τζὰζ (μουσικὴ)
cathedral	(καθίντραλ)	= καθεδρικὸς (ναὸς)
club	(κλαμπ)	= κέντρο, λέσχη
publishing house	(πάμπλιchινγκ hάους)	= ἐκδοτικὸς οἶκος
international	(ιντερνέϊchιοναλ)	= διεθνὴς -ὴς -ὲς
fame	(φέϊμ)	= φήμη
imitation	(ιμιτέϊchιεν)	= ἀπομίμηση
diamond	(ντάϊαμοντ)	= διαμάντι
souvenir	(σουβενὶρ)	= ἐνθύμιον
ugliness	(άγκλινες)	= ἀσχήμια
spectacular	(σπεκτάκιουλαρ)	= θεαματικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
impersonal	(ινμπέρσοναλ)	= ἀπρόσωπος -η -ο
mixture	(μίξτιουρ)	= μίγμα
means of transportation		= μέσα συγκοινωνίας
exist	(εγκζὶστ)	= ὑπάρχω

fare	(φέαρ)	= ναῦλος
impolite	(ιμπολάϊτ)	= ἀγενὴς -ὴς -ὲς
rapid	(ραέπιντ)	= γρήγορος -η -ο
airport	(έερποπρτ)	= ἀερολιμένας
bright	(μπράϊτ)	= λαμπερὸς -ὴ -ὸ
ferry	(φέρι)	= πορθμεῖον
noisy	(νόϊζι)	= θορυβώδης -ης -ες
subway	(σάμπγουέϊ)	= ὑπόγειος σιδηρόδρομος
to be in a hurry		= βιάζομαι

LETTER WRITING

PERSONAL LETTERS

1. HEALTH

This is a subject that is often referred to in private letters. Here are some useful remarks about it that can be put into a letter:

About the health of the person addressed: How are you? — How is your cold? — I hope you have got over your cold — I hope you are well — I hope you are quite well again now — I hope you are feeling better — I hope you are better soon — I hope you get better very soon — I wish you a speedy recovery.

About the health of others whom the person addressed knows about: How is your mother? — How is your father now? — Is John any better? — I hope Mary has got over her cold — I hope your wife is quite well — I hope the children are both well — I hope your brother is feeling better now — I hope your sister gets better very soon — It must be a great worry for you having Jim in hospital — I wish your brother a speedy recovery.

About the health of the writer: I am fine — I am feeling fine — I am well — I am quite well — I have a bit of a cold — I have a cold — I have a bad cold — I am feeling a bit better now — I am feeling better — I am feeling a lot better — I am feeling quite well again now — I have got over my cold completely — I have a sprained ankle — I had to go

and see the doctor today about my tonsils — I shall have to go into hospital for an operation soon — I am going into hospital next Thursday — I am in hospital with pneumonia, but it is nothing serious — I have just come out of hospital.

About the health of others whom the writer knows about: I am glad to say that the family are all well — The children are fine — My wife has a bit of a cold, unfortunately — John has a cold — My father has a bad cold — Mary is feeling a bit better now — Mother is feeling better — Mother is feeling a lot better — My children are feeling quite well again now — Julius has got over his fever completely now — Fred has a broken collar-bone — My wife had to go and see the doctor yesterday about her asthma — Aunt Ann will have to go into hospital for an operation soon — Uncle George is in hospital with lumbago — My wife has just come out of hospital.

2. THE WEATHER

This is a frequent subject of comment in Britain, because the weather is so irregular there.

Telling about the weather: We are having lovely weather — We are having plenty of sun this month — We are having a heat-wave — It is unusually warm for this time of the year — We have had a lovely summer — We are having a lovely autumn — We have been having a lot of rain recently — We haven't had much sunshine during the past few days — It has been cloudy for several days — We are having a lot of rain and dark skies — It is cold outside — We are having a lot of wind — We had frost last night — We have had some snow recently — We have had a terrible summer this year — It has been unusually cold this month — We have had floods in some parts of this area.

Asking about the weather: What sort of weather are you having? — How has the weather been recently in your part of the country? — What sort of summer are you having? — What sort of winter have you had?

3. ASKING FOR NEWS

I haven't heard from you for some time. How are you getting on? — What are you going these days? — How is your job going? — How are

you finding life in London? — How is your wife liking Edinburgh — How are the children getting on at school? — How is your son getting on in his new job? — Do please write and let me know how you are getting on—I have been wondering for some time how you are getting on.

4. GREETINGS

Greetings to and from others. It is quite common, when writing a letter, to pass on someone else's greetings to the person one is writing to, or to ask him to pass one's own greetings on to someone else.

Passing the greetings of others on: My wife sends you her kindest regards — Mary joins me in sending you and Elizabeth our best wishes — My mother asks to be remembered to the children — Please give your parents my wife's warmest greetings — Please remember George to Bill — Kind regards to the children from ours —With good wishes to your family from us all, (just before Yours sincerely,).

Asking that one's own greetings should be passed on: Please remember me to the children — Please give your parents my kind regards — Please pass my best wishes on to your sister — Kind regards to your wife —With good wishes to your mother, (immediately before Yours sincerely,).

5. ANNOUNCEMENTS

Births

Informal announcements:

Jane gave birth to a baby girl at the Battle Hospital yesterday. Both are doing well. The baby weighed 7 lb. 9 oz. at birth, and we are going to call her Elizabeth Jane.

Formal announcements, as in a newspaper:

SMITH. —On May 17th, 1961, to Jane, wife of Janes Smith of 12 Dorset Rd., Twyford, Berks—a daughter (ELIZABETH JANE).

Christenings:

Our son John is going to be christened at St. Mary's Church at 3 p. m. tomorrow.

Examinations:

I am taking my Lower Certificate examination in English this month — I am glad to be able to inform you that I passed my Lower Certificate examination last June. The results have just come out — I am sorry to have to tell you that I failed in the Certificate of Proficiency examination which I took last June. I am planning to try again in December — I was referred in English Language in the Certificate of Proficiency examination held last June. This means that I have to take only that one paper next time.

Engagements

Informal announcements:

Our son John has become engaged to Betty Palmer.

Formal announcements:

The engagement is announced between John, elder son of Mr and Mrs H. F. Price of 12 Church Street, Fareham, Hants, and Lorna, only daughter of Col. and Mrs H. Spinks of «Treganna», Marine Drive, Lee-on-Solent, Hants.

Marriages

Informal announcements:

Our son John is getting married to Betty Palmer at St John's Church, Kenwood, at 3 p. m. next Friday, 23rd June — Our son John married Betty Palmer at St John's Church, Kenwood, last Monday.

Formal announcements:

The marriage arranged between George Tregennis and May Kirk will take place at 3 p. m. on April 15th at St. George's Church, Penzance — The marriage took place on 23rd June, at St. John's Church, Kenwood, Sussex, of Mr John Lionel Price of Kenwood, younger son of Mr and Mrs G. F. Price, and Miss Elizabeth Ann Palmer of Miami, Florida, elder daughter of Mr George W. Palmer and the late Mrs Gloria Palmer — PRICE: PALMER.—On June 23rd at Penzance, Cornwall, JOHN PRICE to ELIZABETH PALMER (this last announcement is the sort of thing that might appear under MARRIAGES in the personal columns of a newspaper).

Deaths

Informal announcements:

I am very sorry to have to inform you that William Robinson died last night after a short illness. The funeral will be at St John's Church, Maidenhead, at 3 p. m. tomorrow — I am very sorry to have to tell you that Maria passed away this morning in her sleep — It is with the deepest sorrow that I am writing to tell you that George Tracy died suddenly yesterday evening. He did not suffer at all in his last hours.

Formal announcements:

HART.—On May 19th, 1961, peacefully, at the Devon Royal Hospital, GEORGE ALEC HART, in his 73rd year. Funeral, May 24th, at St Barnabas Church, Bude, Cornwall, 3 p. m. Flowers to the church.

6. GOOD WISHES

For an examination: My best wishes for your success in the examination you are taking— Joan and I wish you the best of luck in your examination and look forward to hearing in due course that you have passed.

For a birthday: Many happy returns of your birthday on June 15th.

For an engagement (14): I was very pleased to hear of your engagement to John and wish you a long and happy married life.

For a marriage (14): I was very glad to hear of your forthcoming marriage and wish you and your fiancé a long and happy married life.

After a wedding (14): I was very pleased to hear of your marriage and wish you and your husband a long and happy married life.

REMARK

14. It is the custom to congratulate the fiancé or bridegroom, but never the bride, to whom one should send good wishes instead.

CLAUSES = ΠΡΟΤΑΣΕΙΣ

Μιὰ πρόταση εἶναι ἕνα σύνολο λέξεων. Μιὰ πρόταση μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι κυρία καὶ μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι δευτερεύουσα. Μιὰ κυρία πρόταση εἶναι ὁλοκληρω-

μένη μόνη της, ἔχει μόνη της πλήρη ἔννοια, καὶ δὲν ἐξαρτᾶται ἀπὸ πουθενά. Μιὰ δευτερεύουσα πρόταση ἐξαρτᾶται ἀπὸ τὴν κυρία πρόταση, γιὰ νὰ συμπληρώση τὴν ἔννοιά της. Σὲ ὅλες γενικὰ τὶς προτάσεις, κύριες καὶ δευτερεύουσες τὸ ὑποκείμενο μπαίνει μπροστὰ ἀπὸ τὸ κατηγορούμενο.

Μιὰ οὐσιαστικὴ πρόταση εἶναι μιὰ ἐξηρτημένη πρόταση, ποὺ χρησιμεύει σὰν οὐσιαστικό. Μιὰ τέτοια πρόταση εἶναι συχνὰ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο ἑνὸς ρήματος, π.χ.:

I think (that) Mississipi river must be beautiful = νομίζω, ὅτι ὁ ποταμὸς Μισισιπῆς πρέπει νὰ εἶναι ὄμορφος.

Τὸ ὑποκείμενο σ' αὐτὴ τὴν πρόταση εἶναι τὸ I, τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι τὸ think καὶ ὅλη ἡ ἄλλη πρόταση, that Mississipi river must be beautiful: εἶναι ἡ οὐσιαστικὴ πρόταση, δευτερεύουσα, ἐξηρτημένη ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς πρώτης προτάσεως, τὸ think.

He says (that) he has never seen the falls = αὐτὸς λέει, ὅτι δὲν ἔχει δῆ ποτέ του τοὺς καταρράκτες.

He, τὸ ὑποκείμενο, says, τὸ ρῆμα καὶ ὅλο τὸ ἄλλο ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος, δευτερεύουσα ἐξηρτημένη πρόταση.

Ἐὰν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο, τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης ἐξηρτημένης προτάσεως πρέπει νὰ εἶναι ἐπίσης στὸν ἴδιο χρόνο. Ὑπάρχει ἀντιστοιχία χρόνων στὶς προτάσεις. Τὸ ρῆμα πρέπει νὰ συμφωνῆ στὸν χρόνο μὲ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως.

I thought that Niagara river was much higher than that = νόμιζα, ὅτι ὁ ποταμὸς Νιαγάρας εἶναι πολὺ ψηλότερος ἀπὸ αὐτό.

Ἔχουμε Ἀόριστο καὶ στὰ δύο ρήματα τῆς προτάσεως, thought τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας καὶ was τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ἐξηρτημένης προτάσεως.

He said (that) he had never seen Niagara falls = εἶπε, ὅτι δὲν ἔχει δῆ ποτέ του τοὺς καταρράκτες τοῦ Νιαγάρα.

He told me (that) he sold his old house = μοῦ εἶπε, ὅτι πούλησε τὸ παλιό του σπίτι.

The lesson explained (that) Chicago was located at the southern end of Lake Michigan = τὸ μάθημα ἐξηγοῦσε, ὅτι τὸ Chicago εἶναι τοποθετημένο στὴν νότια ἄκρη τῆς λίμνης Michigan.

He tells us (that) he has a lot of money = αὐτὸς μᾶς λέει, ὅτι ἔχει πολλὰ χρήματα.

Σὲ ὅλες αὐτὲς τὶς προτάσεις ὑπάρχει τὸ that, ἀλλά, ἐὰν θέλουμε, τὸ λέμε. Συνήθως παραλείπεται.

He told us (that) he lost his way at night = μᾶς εἶπε, ὅτι ἔχασε τὸ δρόμο του τὸ βράδυ.
I think that Boston is an important city of New England = νομίζω, ὅτι ἡ Βοστώνη εἶναι μιὰ σπουδαία πόλη τῆς Νέας Ἀγγλίας.
He thought that the falls were divided in three parts but he was mistaken = αὐτὸς σκέφθηκε, ὅτι οἱ καταρράκτες χωρίζονται σὲ τρία μέρη, ἀλλὰ ἔκανε λάθος.
The lesson explains (that) there are five great lakes in the United States = τὸ μάθημα ἐξηγεῖ, ὅτι ὑπάρχουν πέντε μεγάλες λίμνες στὶς Ἡνωμένες Πολιτεῖες.
He said that the water furnished power and electricity = αὐτὸς εἶπε ὅτι τὸ νερὸ παράγει ἐνέργεια κι ἠλεκτρισμό.

Ἡ λέξη **so** συχνὰ χρησιμοποιεῖται μετὰ ἀπὸ ὁρισμένα ρήματα, γιὰ νὰ ἀντικαταστήση μιὰ δευτερεύουσα (οὐσιαστικὴ) πρόταση, ποὺ ἔχει θέση ἀμέσου ἀντικειμένου καὶ εἰσάγεται μὲ τὸ that, π.χ.:

Do you think that it will rain? Yes, I think so (that it will rain) = νομίζεις, ὅτι θὰ βρέξη; ναί, ἔτσι νομίζω (ὅτι θὰ βρέξη).

Ἀντὶ νὰ ἀπαντήσουμε μὲ ὁλόκληρη πρόταση σταματοῦμε στὸ so καὶ ἐννοοῦμε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, ποὺ ἐπαναλαμβάνεται.

Is Virginia going with us? No, I don't think so (that she is going) = θὰ ἔλθη ἡ Virginia μαζί μας; ὄχι, δὲν τὸ νομίζω (ὅτι αὐτὴ θὰ ἔλθη).
Are we on the right road? Yes, I think so (that we are on the right road) = εἴμαστε στὸν σωστὸ δρόμο; ναί, ἔτσι νομίζω (ὅτι εἴμαστε στὸν σωστό δρόμο).
Do you think Smith will pay the money back? I don't think so ἢ I don't suppose so (that he will pay the money back) = νομίζεις, ὅτι ὁ Σμὶθ θὰ πληρώση πίσω τὰ χρήματα; δὲν τὸ νομίζω ἢ δὲν τὸ ὑποθέτω (ὅτι θὰ πληρώση πίσω τὰ χρήματα).

Is it going to rain? I hope not (that it is not going to rain) = θὰ βρέξῃ; ἐλπίζω ὄχι (ὅτι δὲν θὰ βρέξῃ).

Is the weather going to stay fine? I am afraid not ἢ I think so (that it is going to stay fine) = θὰ μείνῃ ὁ καιρὸς καλός; φοβοῦμαι ὄχι, ἢ ἔτσι νομίζω (ὅτι θὰ μείνῃ ὡραῖος).

You will have to eat less if you want to get your weight down. I suppose so. I am afraid so (I suppose that I shall have to eat less if I want to get my weight down) = θὰ πρέπει νὰ τρῶς λιγότερο, ἂν θέλῃς νὰ κατεβάσῃς τὸ βάρος σου. Ἔτσι ὑποθέτω. Τὸ φοβᾶμαι (ὑποθέτω ὅτι θὰ πρέπει νὰ τρώω λιγότερο, ἂν θέλω νὰ λιγοστέψω τὸ βάρος μου).

Mr White has gone to New York. So I have heard ἢ so I have been told (that he has gone to New York) = ὁ κύριος Χουάϊτ ἔχει πάει στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη. Ἔτσι ἔχω ἀκούσει ἢ ἔτσι μοῦ ἔχουν πῆ (ὅτι ἔχει πάει στὴ Νέα Ὑόρκη).

Mrs Miller is learning to drive. So her husband told me (that she was learning to drive) = ἡ κυρία Μίλλερ μαθαίνει νὰ ὁδηγῇ. Ἔτσι μοῦ εἶπε ὁ σύζυγός της (ὅτι αὐτὴ μάθαινει νὰ ὁδηγῇ).

Are you tired? Yes, I think so. I am afraid so (that I am tired) = εἶσαι κουρασμένος; ναί, ἔτσι νομίζω, τὸ φοβοῦμαι (ὅτι εἶμαι κουρασμένος).

Is Mrs West an American? Yes, I think so ἢ I have heard so (that she is an American) = εἶναι ἡ κυρία West Ἀμερικανίδα; ναί, ἔτσι νομίζω ἢ ἔτσι ἔχω ἀκούσει (ὅτι εἶναι Ἀμερικανίδα).

ΔΕΥΤΕΡΕΥΟΥΣΕΣ ΧΡΟΝΙΚΕΣ ΠΡΟΤΑΣΕΙΣ

Οἱ δευτερεύουσες χρονικὲς προτάσεις ἀρχίζουν μὲ τὰ **when** = ὅταν, **as soon as** = ἀμέσως μόλις, **after** = μετά, **before** = πρίν, **until** = ἕως, **since** = ἀφ'ὅτου καὶ ἀναφέρονται σέ κάποιον ὁρισμένο χρόνο. Ἐὰν ἡ ἰδέα τοῦ ρήματος, ἡ ἔννοια ποὺ ἐκφράζει τὸ ρῆμα, ἀναφέρεται στὸ παρὸν ἢ στὸ μέλλον, τότε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστώτα ἢ στὸν Μέλλοντα. Ἐὰν ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ ρήματος ἀναφέρεται σὲ παρελθόν, τότε μετὰ ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς τοὺς συνδέσμους θὰ ἔχουμε τὸ ρῆμα σὲ Ἀόριστο.

Examples:

He always leaves when the milkman comes = αὐτὸς πάντοτε φεύγει, ὅταν ἔρχεται ὁ γαλατάς.

Τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως ἀναφέρεται στὸν Ἐνεστώτα, τὸ ρῆμα

τῆς δευτερευούσης χρονικῆς προτάσεως εἶναι κι αὐτὸ στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα στὸ ἴδιο πρόσωπο.

He will leave when the postman comes = αὐτὸς θὰ φύγῃ, ὅταν ὁ ταχυδρόμος θὰ ἔλθῃ.

Ἐδῶ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως ἀναφέρεται σὲ Μέλλοντα, τὸ ρῆμα τῆς χρονικῆς προτάσεως εἶναι σὲ Ἐνεστῶτα.

He left when the teacher came = αὐτὸς ἔφυγε, ὅταν ἦλθε ὁ δάσκαλος.

Ἐδῶ τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι σὲ Ἀόριστο καὶ τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα τῆς χρονικῆς προτάσεως βρίσκεται στὸν ἴδιο χρόνο. Ὑπάρχει ἀντιστοιχία χρόνων ἀνάμεσα στὰ ρήματα τῆς κυρίας καὶ τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως.

He was leaving when the milkman came = αὐτὸς ἔφευγε, ὅταν ἦλθε ὁ γαλατάς.

Ἐδῶ τὸ was leaving εἶναι Ἀόριστος Διαρκείας. Δὲν εἶναι ἁπλὸς Ἀόριστος ἀλλὰ Ἀόριστος Διαρκείας, ποὺ φανερώνει, πὼς κάτι γινόταν στὸ παρελθὸν σὲ μιὰ ὁρισμένη στιγμὴ κι εἶχε διάρκεια, τὴν ὁποία ἐπιθυμοῦμε νὰ τονίσουμε. Εἶναι περιγραφικὸς αὐτὸς ὁ χρόνος.

He will leave as soon as he eats his breakfast = αὐτὸς θὰ φύγῃ ἀμέσως, μόλις φάῃ τὸ πρόγευμά του.

He left as soon as he ate his breakfast = αὐτὸς ἔφυγε, ἀμέσως μόλις ἔφαγε τὸ πρόγευμά του.

Mary will write after the teacher comes = ἡ Μαίρη θὰ γράψῃ, ἀφοῦ ἔλθῃ ὁ δάσκαλος.

He left after he came = αὐτὴ ἔφυγε, ἀφοῦ ἦλθε αὐτός.

He won't leave until the postman comes = αὐτὸς δὲν θὰ φύγῃ, ἕως ὅτου ἔλθῃ ὁ ταχυδρόμος.

He didn't leave until the postman came = αὐτὸς δὲν ἔφυγε, ἕως ὅτου ἦλθε ὁ ταχυδρόμος.

He won't leave before the postman comes = αὐτὸς δὲν θὰ φύγῃ, ἕως ὅτου ἔλθῃ ὁ ταχυδρόμος.

He didn't leave before the postman came = αὐτὸς δὲν ἔφυγε, πρὶν νὰ ἔλθῃ ὁ ταχυδρόμος.

He will write a letter as soon as he goes to his country = αὐτὸς θὰ γράψη ἕνα γράμμα, μόλις πάη στὴν πατρίδα του.

He always drinks coffee when he gets up in the morning = αὐτὸς πάντοτε πίνει καφέ, ὅταν σηκώνεται τὸ πρωΐ.

Mary didn't go to school until she finished her lessons = ἡ Μαίρη δὲν πῆγε στὸ σχολεῖο, ἕως ὅτου τελείωσε τὰ μαθήματά της.

I was reading until my brother called me = ἐγὼ διάβαζα, ἕως ὅτου ὁ ἀδελφός μου μὲ φώναξε.

She won't go to meet him until he writes to her = αὐτὴ δὲν θὰ πάη νὰ τὸν συναντήση, ἕως ὅτου αὐτὸς τῆς γράψη.

He has been reading his mail since the postman left = αὐτὸς διάβαζε τὸ ταχυδρομεῖο του, ἀφ' ὅτου ἔφυγε ὁ ταχυδρόμος.

Ὁ σύνδεσμος **while** = ἐνῶ, φανερώνει διάρκεια χρόνου καὶ μερικὲς φορὲς μιὰ πράξη ταυτόχρονη μὲ μιὰ ἄλλη.

Ὅταν ὑπάρχη αὐτὸς ὁ σύνδεσμος μέσα στὴν πρόταση, μποροῦμε νὰ ἔχουμε Ἐνεστῶτα, Ἀόριστο καὶ τὴν κατάληξη -ing.

Δηλαδὴ ἐὰν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα, τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως, ποὺ εἰσάγεται μὲ τὸ while, θὰ εἶναι πάλι στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα.

Ἐὰν τὸ πρῶτο ρῆμα εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο, τότε καὶ τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα θὰ εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο.

Ἐὰν τὸ πρῶτο ρῆμα εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστῶτα Διαρκείας (βοηθητικὸ be καὶ ἡ κατάληξη -ing στὸ τέλος τοῦ ρήματος), τότε τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι στὸν ἴδιο χρόνο ἢ στὸν ἁπλὸν Ἐνεστῶτα. Ἐὰν τὸ πρῶτο ρῆμα εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο διαρκείας (βοηθητικὸ be στὸν Ἀόριστο καὶ ἡ κατάληξη -ing στὸ τέλος τοῦ ρήματος), τότε τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα θὰ εἶναι στὸν ἴδιο χρόνο ἢ στὸν ἁπλὸν Ἀόριστο. Ὑπάρχει δηλαδὴ ἀντιστοιχία χρόνων καὶ στὰ δυὸ ρήματα τῆς προτάσεως.

Ἡ διαφορὰ ἀνάμεσα στὸ while καὶ στὸ when εἶναι ἡ ἑξῆς:

Τὸ while φανερώνει χρονικὴ διάρκεια, κάτι ποὺ συνεχίζει νὰ γίνεται.

Τὸ when φανερώνει χρόνο ἀλλὰ ὄχι καὶ διάρκεια, ἀρχίζει κάτι ἀλλὰ δὲν συνεχίζεται. Τὸ when δείχνει κάτι τὸ ὁλοκληρωμένο, κάτι ποὺ δὲν συνεχίζεται, π.χ:

While she reads I am going for a walk = ἐνῶ αὐτὴ γράφει, ἐγὼ πάω γιὰ ἕναν περίπατο, ἢ while she is reading I am going for a walk.

She read while I wrote a letter = αὐτὴ διάβαζε, ἐνῶ ἐγὼ ἔγραφα ἕνα γράμμα ἢ she was reading while I wrote a letter ἢ she was reading while I was writing a letter.
When Mary was small she was used to play tennis = ὅταν ἡ Μαίρη ἦταν μικρή, συνήθιζε νὰ παίζη τέννις.
While Mary was at the country she played tennis again = ἐνῶ ἡ Μαίρη ἦταν στὴν ἐξοχή, ἔπαιξε τέννις πάλι.
He was singing while he walked = αὐτὸς τραγουδοῦσε, ἐνῶ περπατοῦσε.
He used to sing when he ate = αὐτὸς συνήθιζε νὰ τραγουδᾶ, ὅταν ἔτρωγε.
I couldn't write while the others were talking = δὲν μποροῦσα νὰ γράψω, ἐνῶ οἱ ἄλλοι μιλοῦσαν.
When the others were talking I wrote a letter = ὅταν οἱ ἄλλοι μιλοῦσαν, ἐγὼ ἔγραψα ἕνα γράμμα.
While the children were playing they saw a big rat = ἐνῶ τὰ παιδιὰ ἔπαιζαν, εἶδαν ἕνα μεγάλο ἀρουραῖο.
He was walking downtown when he met her = αὐτὸς περπατοῦσε κάτω στὴν πόλη, ὅταν τὴν εἶδε.

Ἡ λέξη while μερικὲς φορὲς χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ whereas ≐ ἐνόσω, ὅταν ἐκφράζωνται ἀντίθετες ἔννοιες, π.χ:

The buses in New York are slow while the subways go as fast as railroad trains = τὰ λεωφορεῖα στὴν Νέα Ὑόρκη πᾶνε ἀργά, ἐνῶ ὁ ὑπόγειος πάει τόσο γρήγορα ὅσο κι ὁ σιδηρόδρομος.

Ἐδῶ τὸ while παίρνει τὴ θέση τοῦ whereas, γιατὶ οἱ ἔννοιες ποὺ ἐκφράζονται εἶναι ἀντίθετες καὶ γιατὶ τὸ whereas δὲν εἶναι τόσο συνηθισμένο.

On Fifth Avenue there are many expensive shops while round the corner there are little shops where cheap souvenirs are sold = στὴν Πέμπτη Λεωφόρο ὑπάρχουν πολλὰ ἀκριβὰ καταστήματα, ἐνῶ γύρω ἀπὸ τὴ γωνία ὑπάρχουν μικρὰ καταστήματα, ὅπου πουλιοῦνται φθηνὰ ἐνθύμια.
Boston has crooked streets downtown while in the newer part there are wide avenues = ἡ Βοστώνη ἔχει κυρτοὺς δρόμους στὸ κέντρο τῆς πόλης, ἐνῶ στὸ νεότερο τμῆμα ὑπάρχουν φαρδεῖς λεωφόροι.
The people were attracted to Denver by the rich deposits of gold while today people are attracted by the city's climate = οἱ ἄνθρωποι προσελκύσθηκαν στὸ Denver ἀπὸ τὰ πλούσια ἀποθέματα χρυσοῦ, ἐνῶ σήμερα οἱ ἄνθρωποι προσελκύονται ἀπὸ τὸ κλίμα τῆς πόλης.

Between Chicago and St. Louis one sees wheat fields and corn fields while south of St. Louis the principal crop is cotton = ἀνάμεσα στὸ Σικάγο καὶ στὸ St. Louis βλέπει κανεὶς ἀγροὺς σίτου καὶ καλαμποκιοῦ, ἐνῶ νότια τοῦ St. Louis ἡ σπουδιαότερη συγκομιδὴ εἶναι τὸ βαμβάκι.

WHEN ΜΕ ΕΝΕΣΤΩΤΑ ΜΕ ΣΗΜΑΣΙΑ ΜΕΛΛΟΝΤΑ

Προσέξτε αὐτὰ τὰ παραδείγματα:

When I have money, I shall go to the movies = ὅταν θὰ ἔχω χρήματα, θὰ πάω στὸν κινηματογράφο.

Στὰ ἀγγλικὰ λέμε when **I have** money (κατὰ λέξη: ὅταν ἔχω χρήματα). Τὸ μεταφράζουμε ὅμως στὰ ἑλληνικά: ὅταν θὰ ἔχω χρήματα.

Δηλαδὴ μὲ τὸν χρονικὸ σύνδεσμο when δὲν βάζουμε Μέλλοντα στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, ἀλλὰ Ἐνεστώτα. Ὁ Ἐνεστὼς ὅμως αὐτὸς ἔχει σημασία Μέλλοντα καὶ μεταφράζεται πάντοτε στὴν ἑλληνικὴ γλώσσα μὲ Μέλλοντα.

Ὑπάρχει ὅμως κι ἕνα ἄλλο when στὴν ἀγγλικὴ γλώσσα, ποὺ δὲν παίρνει Ἐνεστώτα (μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα), ἀλλὰ παίρνει Μέλλοντα. Αὐτὸ τὸ when δὲν εἶναι χρονικὸς σύνδεσμος, ἀλλὰ χρονικὸ ἐπίρρημα. Νὰ ἕνα παράδειγμα, γιὰ νὰ τὸ καταλάβετε:

I don't know when I shall have money = δὲν ξέρω, πότε θὰ ἔχω χρήματα.

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ ἔχουμε τὸ ἐρωτηματικὸ when κι ὄχι τὸν χρονικὸ σύνδεσμο. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ βάλαμε Μέλλοντα (κι ὄχι Ἐνεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα).

Στὶς καθαρὲς λοιπὸν χρονικὲς προτάσεις τὸ when δὲν παίρνει Μέλλοντα, ἀλλ' Ἐνεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα. Στὶς ἐρωτηματικὲς τὸ when παίρνει Μέλλοντα.

Ὑπάρχει κι ἕνας πρακτικὸς τρόπος, γιὰ νὰ καταλάβουμε, πότε τὸ when παίρνει Ἐνεστώτα μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα καὶ πότε παίρνει Μέλλοντα. Προσέξτε τον:

Ὅταν τὸ when τὸ μεταφράζουμε στὰ ἑλληνικὰ μὲ τὸ «ὅταν», θέλει Ἐνεστώτα (μὲ σημασία Μέλλοντα), π.χ.:

When I have money, I shall go to the movies = ὅταν θὰ ἔχω χρήματα, θὰ πάω στὸν κινηματογράφο.

Ὅταν πάλι τὸ when τὸ μεταφράζουμε στὰ ἑλληνικὰ «πότε», θέλει Μέλλοντα, π.χ.:

I don't know when I shall have money = δὲν ξέρω, πότε θὰ ἔχω χρήματα.

ΠΛΑΓΙΕΣ ΕΡΩΤΗΣΕΙΣ

Μιὰ δευτερεύουσα πρόταση, ποὺ ἔχει θέση ἀμέσου ἀντικειμένου, συχνὰ ἀρχίζει μὲ μιὰ ἐρωτηματικὴ λέξη ὅπως **who** = ποιός, **whom** = ποιόν, **whose** = τίνος, **which** = ποιό, **where** = ποῦ, **when** = πότε, **why** = γιατί, **how** = πῶς. Αὐτὸς ὁ τύπος τῆς προτάσεως ὀνομάζεται **πλάγια ἐρώτηση**. Οἱ ἀντωνυμίες αὐτὲς εἰσάγουν τὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση, ποὺ εἶναι κι αὐτὴ μιὰ δευτερεύουσα πρόταση κι ἐξηρτημένη ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως.

Στὶς πλάγιες ἐρωτήσεις δὲν ὑπάρχει ἐρωτηματικὸ κι ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων παραμένει ἡ ἴδια. Ἀφοῦ εἶναι ἐρωτήσεις, θὰ ἔπρεπε νὰ εἴχαμε πρῶτα τὸ ρῆμα καὶ κατόπιν τὸ ὑποκείμενο. Ἐδῶ ὅμως τὸ ὑποκείμενο προηγεῖται τοῦ ρήματος. Ἐπίσης ἂν καὶ εἶναι ἐρωτήσεις, δὲν ἔχουν τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα do, does ἢ did. Ἐὰν δηλαδὴ στὴν πρώτη ἐρώτηση, τὴν εὐθεῖα, ὑπάρχῃ τὸ βοηθητικὸ do, does, did, στοὺς διάφορους χρόνους, στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση δὲν τὸ ἔχουμε, ἀλλὰ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως μπαίνει στὸν ἀνάλογο χρόνο καὶ τὸ ἀνάλογο πρόσωπο. Ἐὰν θὰ ρωτούσαμε μὲ τὸ do στὴν εὐθεῖα πρόταση, στὴν πλαγία θὰ ἔχουμε σκέτο τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος. Ἐὰν θὰ ρωτούσαμε μὲ τὸ does, θὰ ἔχουμε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς πλάγιας ἐρωτήσεως στὸ τρίτο πρόσωπο χωρὶς τὸ does. Ἐὰν θὰ ρωτούσαμε μὲ τὸ did στὴν εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, στὴν πλάγια θὰ ἔχουμε Ἀόριστο τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς νὰ ὑπάρχῃ τὸ did.

Examples:

What time is it? = τί ὥρα εἶναι;

Αὐτὴ εἶναι ἡ εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, κυρία πρόταση, χωρὶς νὰ ἐξαρτᾶται ἀπὸ πουθενά. Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἀλλάξῃ καὶ θὰ προσθέσουμε καὶ κάτι παραπάνω στὸ νόημα.

You always ask what time it is = πάντοτε ρωτᾶς, τί ὥρα εἶναι
ἢ ἀκόμη μπορούσαμε νὰ ἔχουμε:
John asks what time it is = ὁ John ρωτᾶ, τί ὥρα εἶναι.

Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων εἶναι ἴδια μὲ τὴ σειρὰ μιᾶς καταφατικῆς προτάσεως, ὑποκείμενο, ρῆμα. Ἡ πρόταση αὐτὴ εἶναι μιὰ πλάγια ἐρώτηση χωρὶς ὅμως νὰ ὑπάρχῃ τὸ ἐρωτηματικό. Τὴν ὀνομάζουμε πλάγια, γιατὶ ἡ ἐρώτηση ποὺ περιέχει δὲν γίνεται κατ' εὐθεῖαν ἀλλὰ μὲ πλάγιο τρόπο κι ἡ πρόταση χωρίζεται στὰ δυό, ἔχουμε δυὸ προτάσεις, μιὰ κυρία πρόταση καὶ μιὰ δευτερεύουσα. Ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρόταση εἰσάγεται μὲ μιὰ ἀντωνυμία, ἐρωτηματική, χρονική, ἀναφορικὴ κ.λ.π., κι ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων εἶναι πάντοτε ὑποκείμενο, ρῆμα, ἀντικείμενο. Ἐὰν ὑπάρχουν κι ἄλλοι προσδιορισμοί, ἀκολουθοῦν κατόπιν μετὰ τὸ ἀντικείμενο ἀνάλογα μὲ τὴν θέση, ποὺ ἔχουν μέσα στὴν πρόταση.

When did she leave? = πότε ἔφυγε αὐτή;
Ἡ ἐρώτηση εἶναι εὐθεῖα.
Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἔχουμε:
I don't remember when she left = δὲν θυμοῦμαι, πότε ἔφυγε ἢ
Mary asked when she left = ἡ Μαίρη ρώτησε, πότε ἔφυγε.

Στὴν πρώτη ἐρώτηση εἴχαμε τὸ did καὶ τὸν Ἐνεστώτα, ἁπλὸ τύπο τοῦ ρήματος, ὅλο μαζὶ μιὰ ἐρώτηση στὸν Ἀόριστο. Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση ἔχουμε τὸν Ἀόριστο τοῦ πρώτου ρήματος χωρὶς ὅμως τὸ did. Καὶ πάλι τὸ ὑποκείμενο προηγεῖται τοῦ ρήματος, πρῶτα τὸ she καὶ κατόπιν τὸ ρῆμα στὸν Ἀόριστο, τὸ left.

Μ' ἄλλα λόγια στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση τὸ ρῆμα μπαίνει στὸν καταφατικὸ κι ὄχι στὸν ἀρνητικὸ τύπο.
Where was she going? = ποῦ πήγαινε αὐτή;
Ἔχουμε εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση.
Ἀλλὰ ἐδῶ τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι ἕνας τύπος τοῦ ρήματος be. Γι' αὐτὸ κι εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο πάλι στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση. Δὲν ἔχουμε τὸ βοηθητικὸ do ἀλλὰ ἕναν τύπο τοῦ ρήματος be, ποὺ ἀλλάζει καὶ στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση.

I don't know where she was going = δὲν ξέρω, ποῦ πήγαινε.

Αὐτὴ ἡ πρόταση εἰσάγεται μὲ τὸ where. Τὸ ὑποκείμενο μπαίνει πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα was. He asked where she was going = αὐτὸς ρώτησε, ποῦ πήγαινε ἐκείνη, εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο πρᾶγμα.

Where does Miss Green work? = ποῦ ἐργάζεται ἡ δεσποινὶς Γκρὴν;
Αὐτὴ εἶναι ἡ εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση.
Do you know where Miss Green works? = γνωρίζετε, ποῦ ἐργάζεται ἡ δεσποινὶς Γκρὴν;
Ἐδῶ ἔχουμε ἐρωτηματικό. Αὐτὴ πλέον εἶναι ἐρώτηση πλάγια μὲν ἐξηρτημένη, ἀλλὰ ἐρώτηση, γι' αὐτὸ κι ἔχουμε καὶ τὸ ἐρωτηματικό, ποὺ ἀφορᾶ ὅμως τὴν κυρία πρόταση do you know. Τὰ προηγούμενα παραδείγματα δὲν εἶχαν, γιατὶ δὲν ὑπῆρχε σ' αὐτὰ ἐρώτηση, ἦταν καταφατικὲς προτάσεις στὸν πλάγιο λόγο, ἐνῶ εἶναι ἐδῶ πλάγια ἐρώτηση, ποὺ ἔχει τὸ ἐρωτηματικὸ στὸ τέλος, γιατὶ ἡ κυρία πρόταση εἶναι εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση.

When is Miss Green going to get married? = πότε θὰ παντρευτῇ ἡ δεσποινὶς Γκρὴν;
Do you know when Miss Green is going to get married? = ξέρεις, πότε θὰ παντρευτῇ ἡ δεσποινὶς Γκρὴν;

Ἡ δεύτερη πρόταση εἶναι πλαγία ἐρώτηση. Εἰσάγεται μὲ τὸ when, τὸ ὑποκείμενο εἶναι Miss Green καὶ τὸ ρῆμα τὸ is. Δὲν ἀλλάζει, γιατὶ εἶναι ἕνας τύπος τοῦ ρήματος be καὶ σχηματίζει μόνο του, χωρὶς τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα do, ἐρώτηση.

When did MrWest go home? = πότε πῆγε ὁ κύριοςWest στὸ σπίτι;
Do you know when Mr West went home? = γνωρίζεις, πότε ὁ κύριος West πῆγε στὸ σπίτι;
How do you spell the word? = πῶς προφέρεις τὴν λέξη;
Do you know, how you spell the word? =γνωρίζεις, πῶς προφέρεις τὴν λέξη;

Μερικὲς φορὲς δὲν ὑπάρχει ἐρωτηματικὴ λέξη, γιὰ νὰ εἰσαγάγη τὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση. Σ' αὐτὴ τὴν περίπτωση ἔχουμε τὸν σύνδεσμο whether = ἐάν, γιὰ νὰ συνδέση τὶς δύο προτάσεις, τὴν κυρία πρόταση καὶ τὴν δευτερεύουσα, Τὸ or not = ἢ ὄχι, συχνὰ εἶναι στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως. Πολλὲς φορὲς στὴν θέση τοῦ whether ἔχουμε τὸ if = ἐάν, ποὺ εἶναι τὸ ἴδιο μὲ τὸ whether. Ἀλλὰ στὰ σωστότερα ἀγγλικὰ στὶς πλάγιες ἐρωτήσεις χρησιμοποιεῖται τὸ whether.

Will they be here? = θὰ ἔλθουν ἐδῶ;
Ἔχουμε εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση.
I don't know whether they will be here (or not) = δὲν ξέρω, ἐὰν θὰ ἔλθουν ἐδῶ ἢ ὄχι ἢ She asked me whether they will be here (or not) = μὲ ρώτησε, ἐὰν θὰ ἔλθουν ἐδῶ ἢ ὄχι.

Ἔχουμε μιλήσει γιὰ τὴ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων μέσα σὲ μιὰ πλάγια ἐρώτηση. Παρ' ὅλο ὅτι εἶναι ἐρώτηση, δὲν ἔχουμε πρῶτα τὸ ρῆμα καὶ κατόπιν τὸ ὑποκείμενο, ἀλλὰ τὴν σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων τῆς καταφατικῆς προτάσεως. Πρῶτα τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ κατόπιν τὸ ρῆμα καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι προσδιορισμοί.

Ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς εὐθείας ἐρωτήσεως εἶναι τὸ who ἢ τὸ what, τότε στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων εἶναι ἡ ἴδια μὲ τῆς εὐθείας ἐρωτήσεως. Ἐπαναλαμβάνεται δηλαδὴ ἡ ἐρώτηση ἀλλὰ κάπως διαφορετικά, π.χ.:

Who is going to the party? = ποιὸς πάει στὸ πάρτυ;
Εἶναι ἡ εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση. Τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι τὸ is going καὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τὸ who. Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἔχουμε:
Do you know who is going to the party? = ξέρεις; ποιὸς πάει στὸ πάρτυ;
Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων δὲν ἀλλάζει, ἀλλὰ παραμένει ἡ ἴδια.
What is in the box? = τί εἶναι μέσα στὸ κουτί;
Τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως εἶναι τὸ is καὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τὸ what. Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἔχουμε:
Do you know what is in the box? = ξέρεις, τί εἶναι μέσα στὸ κουτί;
Ἡ σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων παραμένει ἡ ἴδια.
Who is that girl? = ποιὸ εἶναι ἐκεῖνο τὸ κορίτσι;
Ἔχουμε εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, is τὸ ρῆμα, that girl τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ ὄχι τὸ who. Ἑπομένως ἡ πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ γίνη:
Do you know who that girl is? = γνωρίζεις, ποιὸ εἶναι ἐκεῖνο τὸ κορίτσι;

Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση δὲν θὰ ἔχουμε ὁλόκληρη τὴν εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, ἀλλὰ πρῶτα τὸ ὑποκείμενο καὶ κατόπιν τὸ ρῆμα, γιατὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς εὐθείας ἐρωτήσεως δὲν ἦταν τὸ who, ἀλλὰ τὸ that girl.

What is the lesson? = ποιὸ (τί) εἶναι τὸ μάθημα;
Ἔχουμε εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, is τὸ ρῆμα, the lesson τὸ ὑποκείμενο τὸ what ἔχει θέση κατηγορουμένου καὶ ὄχι ὑποκειμένου μέσα στὴν ἐρώτηση. Γι' αὐτὸ κι ἡ πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ γίνη:
I don't know what the lesson is = δὲν γνωρίζω περὶ τίνος εἶναι τὸ μάθημα (ποιὸ εἶναι τὸ μάθημα).
Who is her teacher? = ποιὸς εἶναι ὁ δάσκαλός της;
Ἐδῶ τὸ who ἔχει θέση κατηγορουμένου μέσα στὴν πρόταση. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἔχουμε;
Do you know who her teacher is? = γνωρίζεις, ποιὸς εἶναι ὁ δάσκαλός της;

Who wrote that letter? = ποιὸς ἔγραψε αὐτὸ τὸ γράμμα;
Ἔχουμε εὐθεῖα ἐρώτηση, τὸ ρῆμα wrote, τὸ ὑποκείμενο who, ἀντικείμενο τὸ that letter. Στὴν πλάγια ἐρώτηση θὰ ἔχουμε:
I don't know who wrote that letter.

Ὅταν τὸ κύριο ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως εἶναι see = βλέπω, hear = ἀκούω, watch = παρακολουθῶ, make = κατασκευάζω, have = ἔχω, let = ἀφήνω, help = βοηθῶ, ἡ πρόταση συχνὰ συμπληρώνεται ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ ἀπὸ μιὰ ἀντωνυμία, ποὺ ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ τὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο ἑνὸς ἄλλου ρήματος. Μὲ ρήματα αἰσθήσεως ὅπως see = βλέπω, hear = ἀκούω, watch = παρακολουθῶ, τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα μπορεῖ νὰ ἔχῃ κατάληξη -ing χωρὶς τὸ βοηθητικὸ be, μόνο τὴν κατάληξη -ing στὸ τέλος τοῦ ρήματος. Ἡ μόνη διαφορὰ στὴν ἔννοια εἶναι, ὅτι αὐτὴ ἡ κατάληξη -ing φανερώνει περιγραφή, ἐνῶ τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο φανερώνει ἕνα γεγονὸς ἢ μιὰ ὁλοκληρωμένη πράξη.

Μὲ τὸ ρῆμα help τὸ δεύτερο ρῆμα μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι στὸν ἁπλὸ τύπο ἢ στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο μὲ τὸ to, π.χ.:

I say him get (getting) on the bus = τὸν εἶδα νὰ ἀνεβαίνῃ στὸ λεωφορεῖο.
Have you heard him play (playing) the piano? = τὸν ἄκουσες νὰ παίζῃ πιάνο;
We watched the cars pass (passing) by = ἐμεῖς παρακολουθούσαμε τὰ αὐτοκίνητα νὰ περνοῦν ἀπὸ κοντά.
He made us wait for half an hour = μᾶς ἀνάγκασε νὰ περιμένουμε μισὴ ὥρα.
They let me enter the class = μὲ ἄφησαν νὰ παρακολουθήσω τὴν τάξη (τὸ μάθημα).
This book will help you learn (to learn) English = αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο θὰ σὲ βοηθήσῃ νὰ μάθῃς ἀγγλικά.
Please let me help you to put your coat on = παρακαλῶ, ἄφησέ με νὰ σὲ βοηθήσω νὰ φορέσῃς τὸ σακάκι σου.
It was very kind of Mary to help her old aunt = ἦταν πολὺ εὐγενικὸ ἀπὸ τὴν Μαίρη νὰ βοηθήσῃ τὴν ἡλικιωμένη θεία της.

Μετὰ ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα call = καλῶ, ὀνομάζω, name = ὀνομάζω, elect = ἐκλέγω, appoint = διορίζω, consider = θεωρῶ καὶ make = κατασκευάζω, τὸ ἀντικείμενο συχνὰ ἀκολουθεῖται ἀπὸ ἕνα οὐσιαστικὸ σὰν ἐπεξήγηση. Τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ αὐτὸ ἐπεξηγεῖ κατὰ κάποιον τρόπο τὸ ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος, π.χ:

In English we call that machine a harvester = στὰ ἀγγλικὰ ὀνομάζουμε αὐτὴ τὴ μηχανὴ θεριστική.

Τὸ ρῆμα εἶναι call, τὸ we τὸ ὑποκείμενο, τὸ that machine τὸ ἀντικείμενο τοῦ ρήματος κι ἡ λέξη harvester ἐπεξηγεῖ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ ἀντικειμένου.

His parents named him Charles for his father = οἱ γονεῖς του τὸν ὀνόμασαν Charles στὴν θέση τοῦ πατέρα του.
The students elected him secretary = οἱ μαθηταὶ τὸν διάλεξαν γραμματέα.

Ἕνα ρῆμα μερικὲς φορὲς χρειάζεται ἕνα ἐπίθετο ἢ μία παθητικὴ Μετοχὴ μετὰ ἀπὸ τὸ ἄμεσο ἀντικείμενο, γιὰ νὰ ἀπαντήση στὴν ἐρώτηση what? ἢ στὴν ἐρώτηση how? π.χ.:

She made the room very attractive = αὐτὴ ἔκανε τὸ δωμάτιο πολὺ ἑλκυστικό. (what did she make the room? attractive) = τί (τὸ) ἔκανε τὸ δωμάτιο; ἑλκυστικό.
They kept their books closed = κράτησαν τὰ βιβλία τους κλειστά. (how did they keep their books? closed = πῶς κράτησαν τὰ βιβλία τους; κλειστά).

ΠΛΑΓΙΟΣ ΛΟΓΟΣ

Σᾶς ἐξήγησα μὲ λεπτομέρειες τὶς πλάγιες ἐρωτήσεις. Ἤδη θ' ἀσχοληθοῦμε μὲ τὸν Πλάγιο Λόγο.

Ὑποθέστε, πὼς αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμή, ποὺ κάνουμε μάθημα μέσα στὴν τάξη, μπαίνει ὁ John, ποὺ εἴχαμε καιρὸ νὰ τὸν δοῦμε, καὶ μᾶς λέει:

I am a soldier.

Κάποιος ἀπὸ τὰ τελευταῖα θρανία δὲν ἄκουσε καλὰ καὶ ρωτάει, τί εἶπε ὁ John. Θέλω λοιπὸν ἐγώ, ὁ δάσκαλος, νὰ τοῦ μεταβιβάσω τὴν παρατήρηση τοῦ John. Αὐτὸ μπορῶ νὰ τὸ κάνω μὲ δυὸ τρόπους :

John says «I am a soldier»
(Ὁ Γιάννης λέει «εἶμαι στρατιώτης»)

Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ μεταφέρω ἀτόφια τὰ λόγια τοῦ John. Αὐτὸ τὸ

εἶδος τοῦ λόγου λέγεται **εὐθὺς λόγος** (Direct Speech). Ἔχουμε δυὸ κύριες προτάσεις (John says ἡ μία, I am a soldier ἡ ἄλλη) καὶ δὲν ἀντιμετωπίζουμε κανένα ἀπολύτως πρόβλημα. Προσέξτε, ὅτι στὸν εὐθὺν λόγο τὰ λόγια τοῦ John (πού, ἐπαναλαμβάνουμε, τὰ μεταβιβάζουμε ἀπαράλλαχτα), μπῆκαν μέσα σὲ εἰσαγωγικὰ (« »).

Ὑπάρχει ὅμως κι ἄλλος τρόπος, γιὰ νὰ πῶ τὸ ἴδιο πρᾶμα :

John says (that) he is a soldier.
(Ὁ Γιάννης λέει, ὅτι εἶναι στρατιώτης).

Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ δὲν μεταφέρονται ἀτόφια τὰ λόγια τοῦ John, ἀλλὰ μετατρέπονται στὸ τρίτο πρόσωπο καὶ δὲν μπαίνουν μέσα σὲ εἰσαγωγικά. Ἐπίσης παίρνουν συνήθως μπροστὰ τὸν σύνδεσμο that, ποὺ μπορεῖ ὡστόσο καὶ νὰ παραλειφθῇ.

Αὐτὸ τὸ εἶδος τοῦ λόγου λέγεται **πλάγιος λόγος** (Indirect Speech ἢ Reported Speech).

Στὸν πλάγιο λόγο ἔχουμε πάλι δύο προτάσεις, ἀλλὰ ἡ μὲν μιὰ εἶναι **κυρία πρόταση** (main clause), ἡ John says, ἡ ἄλλη ὅμως εἶναι δευτερεύουσα **οὐσιαστικὴ πρόταση** (noun clause) κι ἀντιστοιχεῖ μὲ τὴν **εἰδικὴ πρόταση** τοῦ ἑλληνικοῦ συντακτικοῦ.

Ἔτσι λοιπὸν στὸν πλάγιο λόγο ἔχουμε δυὸ προτάσεις, τὴν main clause (κυρία) καὶ τὴν noun clause (εἰδική). Σ' αὐτὴν δὲν μεταφέρουμε ἀτόφια τὰ λόγια τοῦ προσώπου, ποὺ μιλάει, ἀλλὰ πλάγια, ἔμμεσα. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ λέγεται πλάγιος λόγος.

ΑΝΤΙΣΤΟΙΧΙΑ ΧΡΟΝΩΝ

Προσέξτε τώρα τὴν ἀντιστοιχία χρόνων στὸν πλάγιο λόγο:

Παράδειγμα 1ο

John **says** that **he is** a soldier ἢ
John **says** that **he will be** a soldier ἢ
John **says** that **he was** a soldier =
Ὁ Γιάννης λέει, ὅτι εἶναι στρατιώτης ἢ
Ὁ Γιάννης λέει, ὅτι θὰ εἶναι στρατιώτης ἢ
Ὁ Γιάννης λέει, ὅτι ἦταν στρατιώτης.

Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως στὸν πλάγιο λόγο εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστώτα, δὲν ὑπάρχει πρόβλημα: Τὸ ρῆμα τῆς εἰδικῆς προτάσεως παραμένει ἀμετάβλητο σ' ὁποιοδήποτε χρόνο κι ἂν βρίσκεται. Δηλαδὴ ἂν στὴν κυρία πρόταση ἔχουμε Ἐνεστώτα, στὴν εἰδικὴ μποροῦμε νὰ βάλουμε ὁποιοδήποτε χρόνο ἐπιθυμοῦμε.

Κάποια δυσκολία συναντᾶμε, ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο.

Παράδειγμα 2ο

Ὑποθέστε, πὼς ὕστερα ἀπὸ τρεῖς μέρες ἀπὸ τὴν ἐμφάνιση τοῦ John στὴν τάξη, ἔρχεται ὁ Richard, ποὺ ἀπουσίαζε τὴν ἡμέρα τῆς ἐπισκέψεώς του, καὶ μὲ ρωτάει, τί εἶπε ὁ John. Ἐγὼ τότε ἀπαντῶ στὸν πλάγιο λόγο:

John **said** that he **was** a soldier = Ὁ Γιάννης **εἶπε,** ὅτι **εἶναι** στρατιώτης.

Ὅπως βλέπετε, τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως (said) εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο. **Ὑποχρεωτικὰ στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ θὰ βάλουμε Ἀόριστο καὶ στὴν εἰδικὴ πρόταση.** Καὶ τὸν Ἀόριστον αὐτὸν θὰ τὸν μεταφράσουμε μὲ Ἐνεστώτα. Δηλαδὴ ὅταν λέμε:

John **said** that he **was** a soldier,

αὐτὸ δὲν σημαίνει:

Ὁ Γιάννης **εἶπε,** ὅτι **ἦταν** στρατιώτης, ἀλλὰ ὁ Γιάννης εἶπε, ὅτι **εἶναι** στρατιώτης.

Γιατὶ τὸ εἶπε μὲν αὐτὸ ὁ Γιάννης πρὶν ἀπὸ τρεῖς μέρες, ἀλλὰ ἐξακολουθεῖ ἀκόμη καὶ σήμερα νὰ εἶναι ἐπιστρατευμένος.

Τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως (John said) βρίσκονταν στὸν Ἀόριστο. Γι' αὐτὸ καὶ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς εἰδικῆς προτάσεως μπῆκε κι αὐτὸ στὸν Ἀόριστο. Ἀλλ' ὁ Ἀόριστος αὐτὸς δὲν εἶναι πραγματικός, εἶναι ἁπλὸ γραμματικὸ φαινόμενο τοῦ πλάγιου λόγου καὶ θὰ τὸν μεταφράσουμε στὰ ἑλληνικὰ μὲ Ἐνεστώτα.

Ἐξαίρεση ἔχουμε στὶς περιπτώσεις τῶν **παροιμιῶν** καὶ γενικῶν **ἀληθειῶν,** ὅπου στὸν πλάγιο λόγο **μποροῦμε** νὰ ἔχουμε Ἐνεστώτα στὴν εἰδικὴ πρόταση, κι ὅταν ἀκόμη ἡ κυρία πρόταση συντάσσεται μὲ Ἀόριστο, π.χ.:

John **said** that time **is** money.
(Ὁ Γιάννης εἶπε, πὼς ὁ χρόνος εἶναι χρῆμα).

Σύμφωνα μὲ τὴν ἀρχὴ τῆς ἀντιστοιχίας τῶν χρόνων, ποὺ ἀναπτύξαμε πιὸ πάνω, θἄπρεπε νὰ ποῦμε :

John said that time was money.

Ἐπειδὴ ὅμως εἶναι γενικὴ ἀλήθεια, θὰ ποῦμε :

John **said** that time **is** money.

Παράδειγμα 3ο

Προσέξτε τώρα κι αὐτὴ τὴν τελευταία περίπτωση : Θέλω νὰ πῶ, πὼς ὁ Γιάννης ἰσχυρίστηκε, ὅτι ἦταν στρατιώτης (τὸ 1950). Ἂν πῶ :

John said that he was a soldier. σύμφωνα μ' αὐτὰ ποὺ εἴπαμε πιὸ πάνω, αὐτὸ σημαίνει :

Ὁ Γιάννης εἶπε, ὅτι εἶναι στρατιώτης. Ἐγὼ ὅμως θέλω νὰ πῶ :

Ὁ Γιάννης εἶπε, ὅτι **ἦταν** στρατιώτης.

Στὴν περίπτωση αὐτὴ θὰ χρησιμοποιήσω στὴν εἰδικὴ πρόταση Ὑπερσυντέλικο καὶ θὰ πῶ :

John **said** that **he had been** a soldier (in 1950) = Ὁ Γιάννης εἶπε, ὅτι ἦταν στρατιώτης (τὸ 1950).

Ὅταν λοιπὸν θέλω νὰ τονίσω, ὅτι ἡ πράξη τῆς εἰδικῆς προτάσεως τοῦ πλάγιου λόγου ἔγινε στὸ παρελθὸν κι ἔπαψε πιὰ στὸ παρόν, τότε βάζω Ὑπερσυντέλικο κι ὄχι Ἀόριστο.

Συνοψίζοντας λοιπὸν τοὺς κανόνες τῆς ἀντιστοιχίας τῶν χρόνων στὸν πλάγιο λόγο μποροῦμε νὰ ποῦμε :

Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως στὸν πλάγιο λόγο εἶναι στὸν Ἐνεστώτα, στὴν εἰδικὴ πρόταση μποροῦμε νἄχουμε ὁποιονδήποτε χρόνο. Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως εἶναι στὸν Ἀόριστο, τότε ὁ μὲν Ἐνεστὼς τῆς εἰδικῆς προτάσεως γίνεται Ἀόριστος (καὶ μεταφράζεται μὲ Ἐνεστώτα), ὁ δὲ Ἀόριστος γίνεται Ὑπερσυντέλικος (καὶ μεταφράζεται μὲ Ἀόριστο).

VOCABULARY

for example	(φορ εγκζάμπλ)	=	παραδείγματος χάριν
enjoyable	((ιντjόγιαμπλ)	=	εὐχάριστος -η -ο (pleasant)
questioner	(κουέστchevερ)	=	αὐτὸς ποὺ ὑποβάλλει ἐρωτήσεις
simple	(σιμπλ)	=	ἁπλὸς -ἡ -ὁ
receive	(ρισίιβ)	=	take
free	(φρι)	=	δωρεάν, ἐλεύθερος -η -ο
continue	(κοντίνιου)	=	συνεχίζω
upper	(άπερ)	=	ἀνώτερος -η -ο
believe	(μπιλίιβ)	=	νομίζω
branch	(μπραντch)	=	κλάδος
thanks to . . .	(θενκς του . . .)	=	χάρις εἰς . . .
uncomfortable	(ανκόμφορταμπλ)	=	ἄβολος, στενόχωρος -η -ο
common	(κάμον)	=	κοινός, συνηθισμένος -η -ο
reason	(ρίζεν)	=	ἀφορμή, αἰτία
discussion	(ντισκάchev)	=	συζήτηση
gulf	(γκαλφ)	=	κόλπος
empty	(έμπτι)	=	ἀδειάζω
stream	(στριμ)	=	ρεῦμα
melt	(μελτ)	=	λυώνω
heavy	(hέβι)	=	δυνατός, βαρὺς -ιὰ -ὺ
rise	(ράϊζ)	=	ὑψώνομαι
overflow	(όβερφλόου)	=	ξεχύνομαι
bank	(μπανκ)	=	ὄχθη
sprend	(σπρεντ)	=	ἁπλώνω
worth	(γουόρθ)	=	ἀξίζω
damage	(ντάματj)	=	ζημία, καταστροφὴ
ruin	(ρουΐν)	=	καταστρέφω
barn	(μπαρν)	=	ἀποθήκη
sweep	(σουΐπ)	=	σπρώχνω
drown	(ντρόουν)	=	πνίγω
danger	(ντέϊντjερ)	=	κίνδυνος
flood	(φλουντ)	=	πλημμύρα
huge	(hιούτj)	=	πελώριος -α -ο
ordinary	(όρντιναρι)	=	τακτικός, κανονικὸς -ὴ -ὸ

occur	(οκιοὺρ)	=	συμβαίνει
natural	(νέϊτchιουραλ)	=	φυσικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
trade	(τρέϊντ)	=	ἐμπόριο
increase	(ινκρίζ)	=	αὐξάνω
picturesque	(πίκτchιουρεσκ)	=	γραφικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
fascinate	(φάchινέϊτ)	=	θέλγω, μαγεύω
parade	(παρέϊντ)	=	παρέλαση
pioneeress	(πάϊονιρες)	=	ἡ ἄποικος, πρωτοπόρος
quarter	(κουόρτερ)	=	συνοικία
railing	(ρέϊλινγκ)	=	κάγκελο
remain	(ριμέϊν)	=	παραμένω
shadow	(chαέντοου)	=	σκιὰ
simply	(σίμπλι)	=	ἁπλῶς
care	(κέαρ)	=	θέλω, ἐπιθυμῶ
remind someone	**of something**	=	θυμίζω κάτι σὲ κάποιον
celebrate	(σέλεμπρέϊτ)	=	γιορτάζω
compare	(κομπέαρ)	=	συγκρίνω
float	(φλόουτ)	=	ἐπιπλέω
record	(ρέκορντ)	=	δίσκος
guest	(γκέστ)	=	ξένος, φιλοξενούμενος
war	(γουὸρ)	=	πόλεμος
definitely	(ντέφινιτλι)	=	ὁριστικὰ
even	(ίβεν)	=	ἀκόμη
patio	(πάτιο)	=	αὐλὴ σπιτιοῦ
offer	(όφερ)	=	προσφέρω
delicious	(ντελίchιους)	=	θαυμάσιος -α -ο
suspend	(σασπέντ)	=	παραμελῶ, ἀναβάλλω
exhibit	(έξίμπιτ)	=	ἐκθέτω
local	(λόκαλ)	=	ντόπιος, τοπικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
gay	(γκέϊ)	=	χαρούμενος -η -ο
acre	(άϊκερ)	=	ἑκτάριον (4,046 τετρ. μέτ.)
border	(μπόρντερ)	=	σύνορο, ὅριον
cross	(κρος)	=	διασχίζω
fight	(φάϊτ)	=	πολεμῶ
ranch	(ραντch)	=	κτῆμα
rough	(ραφ)	=	τραχὺς -ιὰ -ὺ
thriving	(θράϊβινγκ)	=	εὐημερῶ
a long time		=	πολὺν καιρὸ

realize	(ρίελάϊζ)	=	ἀντιλαμβάνομαι
prosperous	(πρόσπερους)	=	εὐτυχὴς -ὴς -ὲς
oil	(όϊλ)	=	πετρέλαιο, λάδι
abundance	(αμπένταν ς)	=	ἀφθονία
significant	(σιγνίφικαντ)	=	σημαντικὸς -ἡ -ὸ
battle	(μπαετλ)	=	μάχη
revolution	(ρεβολιούchιεν)	=	ἐπανάσταση
separate	(σέπαρέϊτ)	=	ξεχωριστὸς -ἡ -ὸ
annex	(άνεξ)	=	ἑνώνω, προσαρτῶ
pasture	(πάστιουρ)	=	βοσκὴ
stretch	(στρετch)	=	ἐκτείνομαι
bottom	(μπότομ)	=	βάθος
shelter	(chέλτερ)	=	καταφεύγω, προφυλάγω
sweep	(σουὶπ)	=	σαρώνω
deposit	(ντεπόζιτ)	=	ἀπόθεμα
view	(βιοὺ)	=	θέα
wire	(γουάϊρ)	=	σύρμα
enormous	(ενόρμους)	=	τεράστιος -α -ο
stockyard	(στόκιαρντ)	=	σφαγεῖον
prepare.	(πριπέαρ)	=	προετοιμάζω
kill	(κιλ)	=	σκοτώνω
examine	(εγκζάμιν)	=	ἐξετάζω
inspector	(ινσπέκτορ)	=	ἐπιθεωρητὴς
product	(προντάκτ)	=	προϊὸν
comb	(κόμπ)	=	χτένα
button	(μπατ'ν)	=	κουμπὶ
soap	(σόουπ)	=	σαπούνι
candle	(καεντλ)	=	κερὶ
lard	(λαντ)	=	λαρδὶ
cultural	(κάλτchιουραλ)	=	μορφωτικὸς -ἡ -ὸ
advantage	(αντβαέντεϊτj)	=	πλεονέκτημα
facility	(φασίλιτι)	=	εὐκολία
thick	(θικ)	=	παχύς, πυκνὸς -ἡ -ὸ
thin	(θιν)	=	λεπτὸς -ἡ -ὸ
tailor	(τέϊλορ)	=	ράφτης
skirt	(σκερτ)	=	φούστα
post	(πόοστ)	=	ταχυδρομῶ
elect	(ιλέκτ)	=	ἐκλέγω
appoint	(αεπόϊντ)	=	διορίζω

consider	(κονσίντερ)	=	θεωρῶ
harvester	(χάρβεστερ)	=	θεριστικὴ μηχανὴ
well done		=	καλοψημένος (καλοφτιαγμένος)
boiled	(μπόϊλντ)	=	βρασμένα
scrambled	(σκράμπλντ)	=	ὀμελέττα μὲ αὐγὰ
resemble	(ριζέμπλ)	=	ὁμοιάζω
approach	(απρότch)	=	προσεγγίζω
lack	(λακ)	=	στεροῦμαι
joke	(ντjοκ)	=	ἀστεῖο
boss	(μπος)	=	ἀφεντικὸ
disagree	(ντισαεγκρὶ)	=	διαφωνῶ
knock	(νοκ)	=	χτυπῶ

TEXT

A DISCUSSION

Are you glad that you are living in the second half of the twentieth century? Or do you wish that you had lived during some time in the past? If you had lived during the second half of the sixteenth century, for example, do you think life would have been more enjoyable or less enjoyable? Miss Braun, a teacher, answered: What the questioner wants to know is this: Was life easier then or more difficult? Was life four hundred years ago more pleasant or less pleasant than it is today? Those are questions that cannot be answered with a simple «yes» or «no». I am a teacher and I am interested in education. Today all children receive free education from the age of five or six until they are fifteen or sixteen. If they are clever, they continue to receive free education until they are eighteen and sometimes when they are at the University. How many children in the sinxteenth century learnt ever to read and write? Very few. Only the children of the upper class. You all agree, I am sure, that education is a good thing. I believe that education helps us to enjoy life. Think of the pleasure of reading. Every town and village today has its own library or branch library. Think of the pleasure

of music. Today thanks to the radio and television sets, we can enjoy the world's greatest music in our own homes. Four hundred years ago very few people had books. I am glad to be living now and I am quite sure that life is much more enjoyable now than it was then. Today travel is easy. Four hundred years ago, travel was slow, difficult, uncomfortable and dangerous. Travel as we know it today, travel for education and pleasure, was not at all common. For this reason, too, I am glad to be living today.

TRANSLATION

ΜΙΑ ΣΥΖΗΤΗΣΗ

Εἶσθε χαρούμενος, πού ζῆτε στό δεύτερο μισό τοῦ εἰκοστοῦ αἰώνα; Ἦ θά ἐπιθυμούσατε νά εἴχατε ζήσει κάποια ἐποχή στό παρελθόν; Ἐάν εἴχατε ζήσει κατά τήν διάρκεια τοῦ δευτέρου μισοῦ τοῦ δεκάτου ἕκτου αἰώνα, παραδείγματος χάριν, πιστεύετε, ὅτι ἡ ζωή θά ἔπρεπε νά ἦταν περισσότερο εὐχάριστη ἤ λιγότερο εὐχάριστη; Ἡ δεσποινίς Μπράουν, μιά διδασκάλισσα, ἀπάντησε: Αὐτό πού θέλει νά μάθη ὁ ἐρωτῶν εἶναι τό ἑξῆς: Ἦταν ἡ ζωή εὐκολότερη τότε ἤ περισσότερο δύσκολη; Ἦταν ἡ ζωή τετρακόσια χρόνια πρίν περισσότερο εὐχάριστη ἤ λιγότερο εὐχάριστη ἀπό ὅ,τι εἶναι σήμερα; Αὐτές εἶναι ἐρωτήσεις, πού δέν μποροῦν νά ἀπαντηθοῦν μέ ἕνα ἁπλό «ναί» ἤ «ὄχι». Ἐγώ εἶμαι διδασκάλισσα κι ἐνδιαφέρομαι γιά τήν ἐκπαίδευση. Σήμερα ὅλα τά παιδιά παίρνουν δωρεάν ἐκπαίδευση ἀπό τήν ἡλικία τῶν πέντε ἤ ἕξι ἕως ὅτου γίνουν δεκαπέντε ἤ δέκα ἕξι. Ἐάν εἶναι ἔξυπνα, συνεχίζουν νά παίρνουν δωρεάν ἐκπαίδευση, ἕως ὅτου γίνουν δέκα ὀκτώ καί μερικές φορές ὅταν εἶναι στό Πανεπιστήμιο. Πόσα παιδιά στόν δέκατο ἕκτο αἰώνα ἔμαθαν ποτέ νά διαβάζουν καί νά γράφουν; Πολύ λίγα. Μόνο τά παιδιά τῆς ἀνώτερης τάξης. Ὅλοι σας συμφωνεῖτε, εἶμαι βέβαιη, ὅτι ἡ ἐκπαίδευση εἶναι καλό πρᾶγμα. Πιστεύω, ὅτι ἡ ἐκπαίδευση μᾶς βοηθάει ν' ἀπολαύσουμε τή ζωή. Σκεφθῆτε τήν εὐχαρίστηση τοῦ διαβάσματος. Κάθε πόλη καί χωριό σήμερα ἔχει τήν δική του βιβλιοθήκη ἤ κλάδο βιβλιοθήκης. Σκεφθῆτε τήν ἀπόλαυση τῆς μουσικῆς. Σήμερα χάρη στό ραδιόφωνο καί στίς συσκευές τηλεοράσεως μποροῦμε νά ἀπολαύσουμε τήν καλύτερη παγκόσμια μουσική στά σπίτια μας. Τετρακόσια χρόνια πρίν πολλοί λίγοι ἄνθρωποι εἶχαν βιβλία. Χαίρομαι πού ζῶ τώρα κι εἶμαι σχεδόν βέβαιη, ὅτι ἡ ζωή εἶναι πολύ περισσότερο εὐχάριστη ἀπό ὅ,τι

ἦταν τότε. Σήμερα τὸ ταξίδι εἶναι εὔκολο. Τετρακόσια χρόνια πρὶν τὰ ταξίδια ἦταν ἀργά, δύσκολα, ἄβολα κι ἐπικίνδυνα. Τὸ ταξίδι, ὅπως τὸ ξέρουμε σήμερα, τὸ ταξίδι γιὰ μόρφωση κι εὐχαρίστηση, δὲν ἦταν καθόλου συνηθισμένο. Γι' αὐτὸ τὸν λόγο ἐπίσης χαίρομαι, ποὺ ζῶ σήμερα.

EXERCISE 299

COMPREHENSION

What was the question?
Who answered to that question?
What was Miss Brown?
Did she answer with a simple «yes» or «no»?
Was she interested in education?
Do children receive free education today?
When do they receive free education, at what age?
Do they receive it when they go to the University?
Did children learn to read and write in the sixteenth century?
Who learnt to read and write in that century?
Do all agree that education is a good thing?
Does it help us to enjoy life?
Are there libraries in every town, village and city?
Can we enjoy music today?
Did people have books to read four hundred years ago?
Were travels easy at that time?
Did people travel for pleasure and education?

ΤΕΛΟΣ Β' ΤΟΜΟΥ

ΕΥΡΕΤΗΡΙΟ ΤΩΝ ΛΕΞΕΩΝ

ΠΟΥ ΕΧΡΗΣΙΜΟΠΟΙΗΘΗΣΑΝ ΕΙΣ ΤΟΝ Β' ΤΟΜΟ

Aa

ability	(αμπίλιτι)	= ἱκανότητα
able	(έϊ-μπ'λ)	= ἱκανός -ὴ -ὸ
be able to	(μπι έϊ-μπλ του)	= μπορῶ (can)
above	(αε-μπὰβ)	= ὑπεράνω
absence	(ά-μπσενς)	= ἀπουσία
absent	(αέ-μπσεν-τ)	= ἀπὼν -οῦσα -ὸν
abundance	(α-μπέντανς)	= ἀφθονία
accept	(α-κσέπτ)	= δέχομαι, ἀποδέχομαι
ache	(έϊκ)	= suffer continued pain, πονῶ
accident	(αέξι-ντεν-τ)	= δυστύχημα
according to	(ακόρντινγ του)	= σύμφωνα μὲ
accuse	(ακιούζ)	= κατηγορῶ
accustom	(ακάστομ)	= συνηθίζω
acre	(έϊκερ)	= ἑκτάριον (4,046 τετρ. μέτ.)
acre	(έϊκρ)	= «στρέμμα»
add	(ae-ντ)	= προσθέτω
admire	(αε-ντμάϊρ)	= θαυμάζω
adopt	(α-ντόπτ)	= υἱοθετῶ
adoption	(α-ντόπchev)	= υἱοθεσία
in advance	(ιν α-ντβὰνς)	= ἐκ τῶν προτέρων
advantage	(α-ντβαέν-τεϊτj)	= πλεονέκτημα
adventure	(αe-ντβέν-τchep)	= περιπέτεια
adverb	(ά-ντβερ-μπ)	= ἐπίρρημα
adverbial	(α-ντβέρ-μπιαλ)	= ἐπιρρηματικὸς -ὴ -ὸ

advise	(α-ντβάϊζ)	= συμβουλεύω (counsel)
advice	(α-ντβάϊς)	= συμβουλὴ
affirmative	(αφέρματιβ)	= καταφατικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
afterward or afterwards	(άφτεργουερντζ)	= ἔπειτα
age	(έϊ-ντj)	= ἡλικία
agree	(αε-γκρὶ)	= συμφωνῶ (assent)
ahead	(αhέντ)	= ἐμπρὸς
airline	(έερλάϊν)	= ἀεροπορικὴ γραμμή, ἀεροπορικὴ ἑταιρία
airport	(έεπορτ)	= ἀερολιμένας
airway	(έεργουέϊζ)	= ἀεροπορικὲς γραμμὲς
alive	(ελάϊβ)	= ζωντανὸς (living)
allow	(αελάου)	= ἐπιτρέπω (permit)
aloud	(αελάου-ντ)	= δυνατὰ
although	(ολδόου)	= ἂν καὶ
alternate	(αλτερνέϊτ)	= ἐναλλασόμενος -η-ο
amuse	(αμιοὺζ)	= διασκεδάζω (entertain)
amusement	(αμιούζμεν-τ)	= διασκέδαση
amusing	(αμιούζινγ)	= διασκεδαστικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
anchor	(άνκερ)	= ἀγκυροβολῶ
angry	(άγκρι)	= θυμωμένος -η -ο
animal	(αένιμαλ)	= ζῶο
annex	(άνεξ)	= ἑνώνω, προσαρτῶ
answer the door	(άνσερ δε ντόορ)	= ἀνοίγω τὴν πόρτα
application	(απλικέϊchen)	= αἴτηση
appoint	(αεπόϊντ)	= διορίζω
appointment	(αεπόϊν-τμεντ)	= ραντεβοὺ (date), διορισμὸς
approach	(απρόουτch)	= προσεγγίζω
arise	(αεράϊζ)	= σηκώνομαι
army	(άρμι)	= στρατὸς
around	(αεράουντ)	= γύρω
arrival	(εράϊβαλ)	= ἄφιξη
ash - ashes	(ach)	= στάχτη - στάχτες
asleep	(αεσλὶπ)	= νυσταγμένος, κοιμισμένος

aspect	(άσπεκτ)	= ὄψη
at once	(αετ ουάνς)	= ἀμέσως
attend	(ἀτέντ)	= παρακολουθῶ, φοιτῶ
author	(όθορ)	= συγγραφέας
average	(άβερεϊντj)	= μέσος ὅρος

Bb

back	(μπαεκ)	= ὀπισθοχωρῶ, πίσω
be back	(μπι μπαεκ)	= come back, return, ἐπίστρεψε γύρνα πίσω
background	(μπαεκγκράουντ)	= φόντο
balcony	(μπάλκονι)	= μπαλκόνι, ὑπερῷον γαλαρία
ballet	(μπάλετ)	= μπαλέτο
bang	(μπαενγκ)	= χτυπῶ
bank	(μπαενκ)	= ὄχθη, τράπεζα
bank	(μπανκ)	= ὄχθη
barn	(μπάαρν)	= ἀποθήκη
baseball	(μπέϊζμπολ)	= τὸ μπέϊζμπολ
basin	(μπέϊσ'ν)	= νιπτήρας
basis	(μπέϊσιζ)	= βάση (base)
battle	(μπατλ)	= μάχη
bean	(μπίιν)	= φασόλι
bear	(μπεερ)	= γεννάω
beat	(μπίιτ)	= δέρνω, κτυπῶ (strike repeatedly)
become	(μπικάμ)	= γίνομαι, καθίσταμαι
beef	(μπιφ)	= βοδινὸ κρέας
beg	(μπε-γκ)	= παρακαλῶ, ζητῶ γιὰ χάρη
beggar	(μπέ-γκερ)	= ζητιάνος
believe	(μπιλίιβ)	= πιστεύω, νομίζω (think)
bell	(μπελ)	= καμπάνα

below	(μπιλόου)	= ἀπὸ κάτω
bend	(μπεντ)	= στροφὴ
beneath	(μπινίθ)	= κάτωθεν
beside	(μπισάϊντ)	= πλάϊ, κοντὰ (next to)
besides	(μπισάϊντς)	= ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ
beyond	(μπιγιόντ)	= πέραν
bill	(μπιλ)	= χαρτονόμισμα, λογαριασμὸς
bird	(μπερντ)	= πουλὶ
birthday	(μπέρθντέϊ)	= γενέθλια
blank	(μπλανκ)	= κενόν, ἄχρωμος-η-ο
blind	(μπλάϊντ)	= τυφλὸς - ἡ-ὸ
block	(μπλοκ)	= τετράγωνο
blond - blond	(μπλοντ)	= ξανθός -ἡ-ὸ
blood	(μπλα-ντ)	= αἷμα
in bloom	(ιν μπλουμ)	= ἀνθισμένος
blood pressure	(μπλα-ντ πρέchep)	= πίεση αἵματος
blossom	(μπλόσομ)	= ἀνθίζω, ἄνθη
blow	(μπλόου)	= φυσῶ
boat	(μπόουτ)	= καράβι, βάρκα
boil	(μπόϊλ)	= βράζω
boiled	(μπόϊλ-ντ)	= βρασμένα
boiler	(μπόϊλερ)	= καζάνι
bookcase	(μπουκκέϊς)	= βιβλιοθήκη (ἔπιπλο)
border	(μπόρντερ)	= σύνορο, ὅριο
be born	(μπορν)	= γεννιέμαι
borough	(μπόροου)	= προάστιο, τμῆμα πόλης
borrow	(μπόροου)	= δανείζομαι
boss	(μπος)	= ἀφεντικὸ
both	(μπόουθ)	= ἀμφότεροι -αι -α
bottom	(μπότομ)	= βάθος
bracelet	(μπρέϊσλετ)	= βραχιόλι
branch	(μπραν-τch)	= κλάδος
break	(μπρέϊκ)	= σπάζω
breath	(μπρεθ)	= ἀναπνοὴ
breathe	(μπρίιδ)	= ἀναπνέω
brick	(μπρικ)	= τοῦβλο

bridge	(μπριντj)	= γέφυρα
bright	(μπράϊτ)	= λαμπερὸς -ὴ -ὸ
brightly	(μπράϊτλι)	= λαμπερὰ
brilliant	(μπρίλιαν-τ)	= λαμπρὸς -ὴ -ὸ
brilliantly	(μπρίλιαν-τλι)	= λαμπρὰ
brunet - brunette	(μπρουνὲτ)	= καστανὸς -ὴ -ὸ
brush	(μπραch)	= βούρτσα, βουρτσίζω
building	(μπίλντιγκ)	= κτίριο
burglar	(μπαέργκλερ)	= διαρρήκτης
burn	(μπερν)	= καίω
burry	(μπέρι)	= θάβω
bus stop	(μπας στοπ)	= στάση λεωφορείου
bush	(μπουch)	= θάμνος
business letter	(μπίζνες λέτερ)	= ἐμπορικὴ ἐπιστολὴ
butter	(μπάτερ)	= βούτυρο
buttom	(μπτ'ν)	= κουμπὶ
buyer	(μπάϊορ)	= ἀγοραστὴς
buzz	(μπαζ)	= βομβῶ, βόμβος

Cc

calf	(καφ)	= μοσχάρι
call for	(κόολ φορ)	= ζητῶ
call up	(κόολ απ)	= καλῶ
calling card	(κόλιγκ καρντ)	= ἐπισκεπτήριο
camera	(κάμερε)	= φωτογραφικὴ μηχανὴ
campus	(κάμπους)	= ὁ γύρω χῶρος
canal	(κανὰλ)	= κανάλι, διώρυγα
candle	(καεντλ)	= κερὶ
care	(κέαρ)	= θέλω, ἐπιθυμῶ
carpet	(κάρπετ)	= χαλὶ (rug)
cash	(κach)	= εἰσπράττω, ταμεῖο, ἐξαργυρώνω
carrot	(καέρετ)	= καρότο
case	(κέϊς)	= περίπτωση

cat	(καετ)	= γάτα
catch	(κατch)	= ἁρπάζω, πιάνω
cathedral	(καθί-ντραλ)	= καθεδρικὸς (ναὸς)
catholic	(καθόλικ)	= καθολικὸς
cattle	(κατλ)	= βοοειδῆ
cauliflower	(κόλιφλάουερ)	= κουνουπίδι
cease	(σιζ)	= παύω
ceaseless	(σίζλες)	= ἀκατάπαυστος -η -ο
celebrate	(σέλεμπρέϊτ)	= γιορτάζω
cemetery	(σέμετρι)	= νεκροταφεῖο
center	(σέν-τερ)	= κέντρο
central	(σέν-τραλ)	= κεντρικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
century	(σέν-τchιουρι)	= αἰώνας
certain	(σέρτ'ν)	= σίγουρος, ὁρισμένος
certain	(σέρτ'ν)	= κάποιος, α, ο
certainly	(σέρτενλι)	= surely, of course βεβαίως
chain	(τchέϊν)	= ἁλυσίδα, ἁλυσοδένω
chance	(τchaενς)	= τύχη, πιθανότητες ἐπιτυχίας
change	(τchέϊντj)	= ἀλλάζω, ἀλλαγὴ
change	(τcheγ-τj)	= ἀλλάζω
chaperon	(τσhάπερον)	= συνοδὸς
charm	(τchάρμ)	= γοητεία, θέλγητρο
charming	(τchάρμινγ)	= χαριτωμένος -η -ο
cheap	(τchιπ)	= φτηνὸς -ὴ -ὸ
check	(τchεχ)	= ἐπιταγή, ἐλέγχω
cherry tree	(τchέρι τρι)	= κερασιὰ
chest	(τcheστ)	= στῆθος, κουτί, καλάθι
chiefly	(τchίφλι)	= κυρίως
choose	(τchουζ)	= διαλέγω
Christmas	(κρίσμας)	= Χριστούγεννα
cigarette	(σίγκαρετ)	= τσιγάρο
citizen	(σίτιζεν)	= πολίτης
clause	(κλόουζ)	= φράση, πρόταση (γραμ. ὅρος)
cleaner	(κλίνερ)	= καθαριστήριο
clear	(κλίερ)	= καθαρὸς-ὴ-ό,διαυγὴς

chergyman	(κλέρντjιμαεν)	= κληρικὸς
clever	(κλέβερ)	= ἔξυπνος -η -ο
cleverness	(κλέβερνες)	= ἐξυπνάδα
climb	(κλάϊμ)	= σκαρφαλώνω
club	(κλαμπ)	= κέντρο, λέσχη
coal	(κόουλ)	= κάρβουνο
cod	(κό-ντ)	= μπακαλιάρος
coin	(κόϊν)	= νόμισμα
college town	(κάλε-ντj τάουν).	= κολλεγιούπολη
colloquial	(κολόκουϊαλ)	= τῆς καθομιλουμένης
comb	(κόμπ)	= χτένα
comb	(κομ)	= χτένι, χτενίζω
come along	(καμ ελὸνγ)	= ἔρχομαι
comedy	(κόμε-ντι)	= κωμωδία
comfortably	(κάμφερταε-μπ'λ)	= ἄνετος -η -ο
comfortable	(κάμφερταε-μπλι)	= ἄνετα, ἀναπαυτικὰ
commerce	(κάμερς)	= ἐμπόριο
common	(κάμον)	= κοινός, συνηθισμέ-νος, -η -ο
cook	(κουκ)	= μαγειρεύω
compare	(κομ-πέερ)	= συγκρίνω
comparison	(κομ-πάριζεν)	= σύγκριση
complete	(καμ-πλίτ)	= πλήρης, συμπληρώ-νω
compliment	(κάμ-πλιμεν-τ)	= συγχαίρω, συγχα-ρητήρια
concern	(κανσὲρν)	= ἀφορῶ (relate to)
concerning	(κανσέρνινγ)	= ἀφορῶν -ῶσα -ῶν (relating to)
concession	(κανσέchev)	= παραχώρηση
condition	(καντίchev)	= ὅρος, προϋπόθεση
connect	(κονέκτ)	= συνδέω
conquer	(κόνκουερ)	= κυριαρχῶ, αἰχμαλω-τίζω
consider	(κονσί-ντερ)	= θεωρῶ
constitute	(κονστιτιούτ)	= ἀποτελῶ
constitution	(κονστιτιούchev)	= σύνταγμα
construction	(κονστράκτechev)	= κατασκευὴ

contain	(κον-τέϊν)	= περιέχω (include)
continue	(κον-τίνιου)	= συνεχίζω
contract	(καν-τρὰκτ)	= συμβόλαιο
corn	(κορν)	= καλαμπόκι
correct	(καρὲκτ)	= σωστὸς -ὴ -ὸ
correction	(καρέκτchev)	= διόρθωση
cost	(κοστ)	= κοστίζω, κόστος
cough	(κοφ)	= βήχας, βήχω
cover	(κάβερ)	= σκεπάζω
cheerful	(τchipφουλ)	= χαρούμενος -η -ο
crop	(κροπ)	= συγκομιδή, σοδειὰ
cross	(κρος)	= διασχίζω
crossing	(κρόσινγκ)	= διασταύρωση
crossroad	(κρόσροουντ)	= σταυροδρόμι
cry	(κράϊ)	= φωνάζω, κλαίω
crowd	(κράου-ντ)	= συνωστίζομαι
cuff	(καφ)	= μανικέτι
cut off	(κατ οφ)	= ἀποκλείομαι
cultural	(κάλτchouραλ)	= μορφωτικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
custom	(κάστεμ)	= συνήθεια

Dd

damage	(ντάματj)	= ζημία, καταστροφὴ
damage	(νταέμεϊτj)	= καταστρέφω
danger	(ντέϊντjερ)	= κίνδυνος
dangerous	(ντέϊντjερες)	= ἐπικίνδυνος (perilous)
dark	(νταρκ)	= σκοτάδι, σκοτεινὸς -ὴ -ὸ
the otherday	(δι άδερ ντέϊ)	= τὶς προάλλες
dead	(ντεντ)	= νεκρὸς (lifeless)
deaf	(ντεφ)	= κουφὸς -ὴ -ὸ
deafness	(ντέφνες)	= κουφαμάρα
debt	(ντεπτ)	= χρέος

decide	(ντισάϊντ)	= ἀποφασίζω
decision	(ντισίjεν)	= ἀπόφαση
deep	(ντιπ)	= βαθύς -ιὰ -ύ
deer	(ντιρ)	= ἐλάφι
definitely	(ντέφινιτλι)	= ὁριστικὰ
delicious	(ντελίches)	= θαυμάσιος -α -ο
demonstrate	(ντεμενστρέϊτ)	= ἀποδείχνω, δείχνω (prove)
demonstrative	(ντιμόνστρατιβ)	= δεικτικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
department	(ντιπάρτμεν-τ)	= διαμέρισμα, τμῆμα
departmentstore	(ντιπάρτμεν-τ στορ)	= μεγάλο κατάστημα
depend on...	(ντιπὲντ ον)	= ἐξαρτῶμαι ἀπό....
deposit	(ντεπόζιτ)	= ἀπόθεμα
deserve	(ντιζὲρβ)	= ἀξίζω (merit)
destory	(ντιστρόϊ)	= καταστρέφω
destroyer	(ντιστρόϊερ)	= καταστροφέας, ἀντι-τορπιλλικὸ
destruction	(ντιστράκchev)	= καταστροφὴ
develop	(ντιβέλοπ)	= ἀναπτύσσω
dial	(ντάϊελ)	= σχηματίζω ἀριθμὸ στὸ τηλέφωνο
diamond	(ντάϊαμοντ)	= διαμάντι
diary	(ντάϊαρι)	= ἡμερολόγιο
dictation	(ντικτέϊchev)	= ὀρθογραφία, ὑπα-γόρευση
dictionary	(ντίκchevερι)	= λεξικὸ
die	(ντάϊ)	= πεθαίνω
differ	(ντιφὲρ)	= διαφέρω
difference	(ντίφερενς)	= διαφορὰ
differently	(ντίφερεν-τλι)	= διαφορετικὰ
direct	(ντιρὲκτ)	= εὐθύς, ἄμεσος -η -ο
direction	(ντιρέκchev)	= διεύθυνση
directly	(ντιρέκτλι)	= κατ' εὐθεῖαν
dirty	(ντέρτι)	= βρώμικος -η -ο
disagree	(ντιζαε-γκρὶ)	= διαφωνῶ
disagreement	(ντιζαε-γκρίμεν-τ)	= διαφωνία
discover	(ντισκάβερ)	= ἀνακαλύπτω
discussion	(ντισκάchev)	= συζήτηση

at your disposal	(αετ γιὸρ ντισπόοζαλ)	= στὴ διάθεσή σου
distance	(ντίστανς)	= ἀπόσταση
distinguish	(ντιστίνγκουϊch)	= διακρίνω, ξεχωρίζω
distinguished	(ντιστίνγκουϊchτ)	= διακεκριμένος (famous)
distribute	(ντιστρίμπιουτ)	= μοιράζω
distribution	(ντιστριμπιούchεν)	= διανομὴ
district	(ντίστρικτ)	= περιοχὴ
divide	(ντιβάϊ-ντ)	= διαιρῶ, χωρίζω (separate) μοιράζω
donkey	(ντάνκι)	= γάϊδαρος (α)
doorbell	(ντόορμπελ)	= κουδούνι τῆς πόρτας
dormitory	(ντόρμιτόρι)	= οἰκοτροφεῖο, ξενώνας, κοιτώνας
downstairs	(ντάουνστερζ)	= κάτω πάτωμα, πλατεῖα θεάτρου
dozen	(ντάζεν)	= ντουζίνα
draw	(ντρόου)	= ζωγραφίζω
drawer	(ντρόουερ)	= συρτάρι
drawing	(ντρόουϊνγ)	= ζωγραφική, ζωγραφιὰ
drown	(ντρόουν)	= πνίγω
druggist	(ντρά-γκιστ)	= pharmacist, φαρμακοποιὸς
drugstore	(ντρά-γκστορ)	= φαρμακεῖο
dry	(ντράϊ)	= ξερός, στεγνὸς -ὴ-ὸ
dry	(ντράϊ)	= στεγνώνω
due	(ντιοὺ)	= ὀφειλόμενος, κατάλληλος
Dutch	(ντατch)	= Ὁλλανδὸς

Ee

earn	(ερν)	= κερδίζω (gain)
earn my living	(ερν μάϊ λίβινγ)	= κερδίζω τὴ ζωή μου

east	(ιστ)	= ἀνατολὴ
eastern	(ίστερν)	= ἀνατολικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
edge	(εντj)	= ἄκρη
efficient	(εφίchev-τ)	= ἱκανὸς - δραστήριος -α -ο
elect	(ιλέκτ)	= ἐκλέγω
election	(ιλέκchev)	= ἐκλογὴ
electricity	(ελεκτρίσιτι)	= ἠλεκτρισμὸς
elevator	(ελιβέϊτερ)	= ἀνελκυστήρας, ἀσανσὲρ
embrace	(εμπρέϊς)	= ἀγκαλιάζω
emphasize	(εμφασάϊζ)	= δίνω ἔμφαση
emphasizing (pronoun)	(εμφασάϊζινγ)	= ἐμφατικός -ὴ -ὸ
empty	(έμ-πτι)	= ἀδειάζω
engagement	(ινγκέϊ-ντjμεν-τ)	= πρόσληψη, ὑποχρέωση
enjoyable	(ιντjόιια-μπ'λ)	= εὐχάριστος -η -ο (pleasant)
enormous	(ενόρμες)	= τεράστιος -α -ο
enough	(ινὰφ)	= ἀρκετὰ
enter	(έν-τερ)	= μπαίνω (come in)
entertainment	(εν-τιρτέϊνμεν-τ)	= διασκέδαση (amusement)
entertain	(εν-τιρτέϊν)	= διασκεδάζω (amuse)
entrance	(έν-τρανς)	= εἴσοδος, εἰσαγωγὴ
equal	(ίκουαλ)	= ἴσος -η -ο
equipment	(ικουΐπμεν-τ)	= ἐξοπλισμὸς
equivalent	(ικουΐβαλεν-τ)	= ἴσον
eroneous	(ιρόνεες)	= λανθασμένος
escape	(ισκέϊπ)	= δραπετεύω
especially	(εσπέchαλι)	= εἰδικὰ
estate	(εστέϊτ)	= περιουσία
even	(ίβεν)	= ἀκόμη
even if	(ίβεν ιφ)	= ἀκόμη κι ἂν
examination	(ε-γκζαμινέϊchev)	= ἐξέταση
examine	(ε-γκζάμιν)	= ἐξετάζω
examiner	(ε-γκζάμινερ)	= ἐξεταστὴς
for example	(φορ ε-γκζάμ-πλ)	= παραδείγματος χάριν

exchange	(ἐξτchέϊντj)	= ἀνταλλάσσω (teade) ἀνταλλαγὴ
excellent	(ἐκσελεν-τ)	= ἄριστος -η -ο
except	(εξέπτ)	= ἐκτὸς
exclusive	(ἐξκλούζιβ)	= ἀποκλειστικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
excuse	(εξκιοὺζ)	= συγχωρῶ, ἀπαλλάσσω
exhibit	(ἐξι-μπιτ)	= ἐκθέτω
exist	(εγκζίστ)	= ὑπάρχω
expense	(εξπένς)	= ἔξοδα
explore	(εξπλὸρ)	= ἐξερευνῶ
export	(εξπὸρτ)	= ἐξάγω
exportation	(εξπορτέϊchev)	= ἐξαγωγὴ
exporter	(εξπόρτερ)	= ἐξαγωγέας
expression	(εξπρέchev)	= ἔκφραση
extraordinary	(ἐξτρα-όρντινερι)	= ἔκτακτος, ἀσυνήθιστος -η-ο

Ff

abulous	(φέϊ-μπιουλες)	= μυθώδης -ης-ες
facility	(φασίλιτι)	= εὐκολία
fact	(φακτ)	= γεγονὸς
in fact	(ιν φακτ)	= πράγματι (really)
factory	(φάκτερι)	= ἐργοστάσιο
fail	(φέϊλ)	= ἀποτυγχάνω
faint	(φέϊν-τ)	= λιποθυμῶ
fame	(φέϊμ)	= φήμη
famine	(φάμιν)	= λιμός, πεῖνα (starvation)
famous	(φέϊμes)	= φημισμένος -η-ο
fan	(φαν)	= ἀνεμιστήρας
fare	(φέερ)	= ναῦλος, εἰσιτήριο μεταφορικοῦ μέσου, π.χ. λεωφορείου
farewell	(φέεργουελ)	= ἀντίο

farther	(φάρδερ)	= μακρύτερα, πέραν
fascinate	(φάchiνέϊτ)	= θέλγω, μαγεύω
favor or favour	(φέϊβερ)	= χάρη, ἐκτίμηση, βοήθεια
favorite	(φέϊβεριτ)	= εὐνοούμενος -η -ο
feed	(φι-ντ)	= τρέφω
feel	(φιλ)	= νιώθω, αἰσθάνομαι
ferry	(φέρι)	= πορθμεῖο
ferry boat	(φέρι μπόουτ)	= πορθμεῖο, φέρι-μπότ
fever	(φίβερ)	= πυρετὸς
few	(φιοὺ)	= λίγοι -ες-α
fields of studies	(φίλντς οφ στά-ντιζ)	= τομεῖς μελέτης
fierce	(φίερς)	= ἄγριος -α-ο
fig	(φιγκ)	= σύκο
fight	(φάϊτ)	= μάχη, πολεμῶ
fill	(φιλ)	= γεμίζω
film	(φιλμ)	= φίλμ
final	(φάϊναλ)	= τελικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
finally	(φάϊναλι)	= τελικὰ
firearm	(φάϊραρμ)	= πυροβόλο ὅπλο
fire insurance	(φάϊρ ινσούρανς)	= ἀσφάλεια πυρὸς
fireplace	(φάϊρπλέϊς)	= τζάκι
firm	(φερμ)	= σταθερὸς -ὴ-ὸ
firmly	(φέρμλι)	= σταθερὰ
fix	(φιξ)	= στερεώνω
flash	(φλαch)	= λάμψη
flier	(φλάϊερ)	= πιλότος, ἀεροπλάνο
float	(φλόουτ)	= πλέω, ἐπιπλέω
flood	(φλούου-ντ)	= πλημμύρα
floor - lamp	(φλόορ - λαμ-π)	= λαμπατὲρ (πατώματος)
florist	(φλόριστ)	= ἀνθοπώλης
flour	(φλάορ)	= ἀλεύρι
flow	(φλόου)	= ρέω
flunk	(φλα-νκ)	= ἀποτυγχάνω (λαϊκὴ ἔκφρ.)
be fond of	(μπι' φοντ οφ)	= ἀγαπῶ κάτι

fool	(φουλ)	= τρελλὸς
foolish	(φούλιch)	= ἀνόητος
foreigner	(φόρεϊνερ)	= ξένος
form	(φορμ)	= σχηματίζω
form	(φορμ)	= μορφή, φόρμα
formal	(φόρμαλ)	= τυπικός, σωστὸς
forth	(φορθ)	= ἐμπρὸς
fortunately	(φόρτchouνεϊτλι)	= εὐτυχῶς
fortune	(φόρτchev)	= τύχη
free	(φρι)	= δωρεάν, ἐλεύθερος -η -ο
freedom	(φρίντομ)	= ἐλευθερία
freeze	(φρίιζ)	= παγώνω
freighter	(φρέϊτερ)	= φορτηγὸ βαπόρι
fresh	(φρεch)	= φρέσκος -η -ο
freshness	(φρέchves)	= δροσιὰ
front	(φραν-τ)	= μπροστινὸς -ὴ -ὸ
in front of	(ιν φραν-τ οφ)	= μπροστὰ ἀπὸ
frost	(φροστ)	= κρύο, παγωνιὰ
funny	(φάνι)	= ἀστεῖος -α -ο
furious	(φιούριες)	= μανιώδης
furiously	(φιούριεσλι)	= μὲ μανία
furnish	(φερνιch)	= παράγω

Gg

gain	(γκέϊν)	= κερδίζω (earn)
gallon	(γκάλεν)	= γαλόνι
gasoline	(γκάζολιν)	= βενζίνη
gate	(γκέϊτ)	= πύλη, αὐλόπορτα
gather	(γκάδερ)	= μαζεύω (pick up)
gay	(γκέϊ)	= χαρούμενος -η -ο
general	(ντjένεραλ)	= στρατηγὸς
German	(ντjέρμαν)	= Γερμανὸς
gift	(γκιφτ)	= δῶρο

gigantic	(ντjαϊ-γκάν-τικ)	= γιγαντιαῖος -α -ο
give up	(γκιβ απ)	= παραιτοῦμαι
given name	(γκίβεν νέϊμ)	= δοθὲν ὄνομα
glove	(γκλαβ)	= γάντι
God	(γκά-ντ)	= Θεὸς
gold	(γκολντ)	= χρυσός, χρυσάφι
good	(γκου-ντ)	= ἐμπόρευμα, τὸ ἀγαθὸν
go on	(γκόου ον)	= συνεχίζω
govern	(γκάβερν)	= κυβερνῶ
government	(γκάβερνμεν-τ)	= κυβέρνηση, κυβερνητικὸς
governor	(γκάβερνερ)	= κυβερνήτης
grace	(γκρέϊς)	= χάρη
graceful	(γκρέϊσφουλ)	= χαριτωμένος (pretty)
grade	(γκρέϊ-ντ)	= βαθμὸς
grain	(γκρέϊν)	= σιτηρά, σπόρος
grammar	(γκράμερ)	= γραμματικὴ
grass	(γκρας)	= χόρτο
grateful	(γκρέϊτφουλ)	= εὐγνώμων
greeting	(γκρίτινγ)	= χαιρετισμὸς (salutation)
grocer	(γκρόουσερ)	= μπακάλης
groceries	(γκρόουσεριζ)	= εἴδη παντοπωλείου
grocery	(γκρόουσερι στόορ)	= μπακάλικο
ground	(γκράουντ)	= ἔδαφος, earth
grow	(γκρόου)	= αὐξάνω, μεγαλώνω
grub	(γκρα-μπ)	= σκουλήκι
guard	(γκαρντ)	= φρουρὰ
guest	(γκεστ)	= ξένος - φιλοξενούμενος
guide	(γκάϊ-ντ)	= ὁδηγός, ὁδηγῶ
gulf	(γκαλφ)	= κόλπος

Hh

halfway between	(χαφγουέι μπιτουὶν)	= στὰ μισὰ τοῦ δρόμου
hang	(haeνγ)	= κρεμῶ
hang up	(haeνγ απ)	= κλείνω τὸ τηλέφωνο
happen	(hάπεν)	= συμβαίνει
hardly	(χάρντλι)	= δύσκολα
harvester	(χάρβεστερ)	= θεριστικὴ μηχανὴ
hat	(haeτ)	= καπέλο
have rather	(heβ ράδερ)	= προτιμῶ (prefer)
head	(he-ντ)	= κεφαλὴ
headache	(haé-ντεϊκ)	= πονοκέφαλος
health	(hελθ)	= ὑγεία
heart	(haρτ)	= καρδιὰ
by heart	(μπάϊ haρτ)	= ἀπ' ἔξω
heat	(hιιt)	= θέρμανση, ζεσταίνω
heaven	(hέβεν)	= οὐρανὸς (sky)
heavily	(hέβιλι)	= βαριὰ
heavy	(heβι)	= δυνατός, βαρὺς -ιὰ-ὺ
hero	(hίρο)	= ἥρωας
hesitate	(heζιτέϊτ)	= διστάζω
hide	(hάϊ-ντ)	= προβιὰ
hill	(hιλ)	= λόφος
hire	(hάϊρ)	= προσλαμβάνω (employ)
historically	(hιστόρικελι)	= ἱστορικῶς
history	(hίστορι)	= ἱστορία
hog	(χο-γκ)	= γουρούνι
hold	(hoλντ)	= κρατῶ
hole	((hόολ)	= τρύπα
honeymoon	(hόνιϊμουν)	= μήνας τοῦ μέλιτος
honor	(όνορ)	= τιμὴ
hope	(hόουπ)	= ἐλπίζω, ἐλπίδα
horrible	(hάρί-μπ'λ)	= φρικτὸς -ὴ-ὸ
horse	(hoρς)	= ἄλογο

horseback	(χόρσμπαεκ)	= καβάλα
horseshoe	(hόρσchιου)	= πέταλο ἀλόγου
hostel	(hόστελ)	= ξενοδοχεῖο, ξενώνας
hotel	(hοτὲλ)	= ξενοδοχεῖο (hostel)
how ever	(hάουέβερ)	= ὡστόσο, ἐν τούτοις
huge	(hιούτj)	= πελώριος -α-ο
hunger	(hάν-γκερ)	= πεῖνα
hunt	(hαν-τ)	= κυνηγῶ
hunter	(hάν-τερ)	= κυνηγὸς
to be in a hurry	(του μπὶ ιν ε hέρι)	= βιάζομαι
hurt	(hερτ)	= χτυπῶ, πληγώνω
hut	(hατ)	= καλύβα

I i

idea	(αϊ-ντία)	= ἰδέα
ill	(ιλ)	= ἄρρωστος -η -ο
illness	(ίλνες)	= ἀρρώστια
imagine	(ιμά-ντjιν)	= φαντάζομαι
imitation	(ιμιτέϊchεν)	= ἀπομίμηση
immediate	(ιμί-ντιϊτ)	= ἄμεσος -η-ο
immediately	(ιμίι-ντιϊτλι)	= ἀμέσως
immense	(ιμένς)	= ἀπέραντος -η-ο
impatience	(ιμ-πέϊchενς)	= ἀνυπομονησία
impatient	(ιμ-πέϊchεν-τ)	= ἀνυπόμονος
imperative	(ιμ-πέρατιβ)	= προστακτικὴ (ἔγκλιση), ἐπιτακτικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
impersonal	(ιμ-πέρσοναλ)	= ἀπρόσωπος -η -ο
impolite	(ιμ-πολάϊτ)	= ἀγενὴς -ὴς -ὲς
import	(ιμ-πόρτ)	= εἰσάγω
impose	(ιμ-πόοζ)	= ἐπιβάλλω
impression	(ιμ-πρέchεν)	= ἐντύπωση
incidentally	(ινσι-ντέν-ταλι)	= τυχαῖα
inconvenient	(ινκονβίνιεν-τ)	= στενόχωρος -η-ο
increase	(ινκρίϊζ)	= αὐξάνω

incredible	(ινκρέ-ντι-μπλ)	= ἀπίστευτος-η-ο
independent	(ιντεπέντεν-τ)	= ἀνεξάρτητος
indirect	(ιντϊρὲκτ)	= ὄχι εὐθύς, ἔμμεσος -η-ο
industrial	(ιντάστριαλ)	= βιομηχανικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
inhabitant	(ινheά-μπιταν-τ)	= κάτοικος
inland	(ἱνλαντ)	= ἐσωτερικὸ
inner	(ἱνερ)	= interior, ἐσωτερικὸς
insist	(ινσίστ)	= ἐπιμένω
insistence	(ινσίστενς)	= ἐπιμονὴ
inspector	(ινσπέκτορ)	= ἐπιθεωρητὴς
install	(ινστόολ)	= ἐγκαθιστῶ
installation	(ινστοολέϊchev)	= ἐγκατάσταση
instead of	(ινστὲ-ντ οφ)	= ἀντὶ (in the place of)
I am interested on...	(άϊ αεμ ἱν-τερεστι-ντ ον)	= ἐνδιαφέρομαι γιά...
intend	(ιν-τὲντ)	= σκοπεύω
interior	(ιν-τέριορ)	= ἐσωτερικὸ
international	(ιν-τερνέϊchionαλ)	= διεθνὴς -ὴς -ὲς
interrogative	(ιν-τερό-γκατιβ)	= ἐρωτηματικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
invitation	(ινβιτέϊchev)	= πρόσκληση
Irish	(άϊρich)	= Ἰρλανδὸς -ὴ
ironwork	(άϊρονγουερκ)	= σιδηρουργεῖο
irregular	(ιρέγκιουλερ)	= ἀκανόνιστος -η -ο

Jj

jazz	(ντjαζ)	= τζὰζ (μουσικὴ)
Jew	(ντjιού)	= Ἑβραῖος -α
jewelry	(ντjούελρι)	= ἀσημικά, χρυσαφικὰ
job	(ντjομπ)	= δουλειὰ
join	(ντjόϊν)	= ἑνώνω (unite)
joke	(ντjόουκ)	= ἀστεῖο
journey	(ντjέρνι)	= ταξίδι (trip)
juice	(ντjους)	= χυμὸς

junction (ντjάνκchev) = διασταύρωση
junior (ντjούνιερ) = νεώτερος

Kk

keep (κίϊπ) = φυλάγω
kick (κικ) = κλωτσῶ
kill (κιλ) = σκοτώνω (slay)
kind (κάϊντ) = εἶδος
kindly (κάϊντλι) = καλῶς, εὐγενικὰ
kindness (κάϊντνες) = καλωσύνη
knee (νίι) = γόνατο
knife (νάϊφ) = μαχαίρι
knock (νοκ) = χτυπῶ

Ll

lack (λακ) = στεροῦμαι
land (λαεντ) = ξηρὰ
land (λαεντ) = προσγειώνομαι, γῆ
lard (λαρ-ντ) = λαρδὶ
last (λαστ) = τελευταῖος -α -ο
lead (λι-ντ) = ὁδηγῶ
leading (λί-ντινγ) = σπουδαιότερος -η-ο
leaf (λιφ) = φύλλο (δέντρου)
leather (λέδερ) = δέρμα
lend (λέντ) = δανείζω
let (λετ) = ἀφήνω, ἐπιτρέπω
lettuce (λέτις) = μαρούλι
level (λέβελ) = ἐπίπεδο
lie (λάϊ) = ψέμα
lie (λάϊ) = κεῖμαι
lift (λιφτ) = σηκώνω (raise), ἀσανσὲρ (elevator)

light	(λάϊτ)	= ἀνάβω
light	(λάϊτ)	= φωτεινὸς -ἡ-ὀ
limit	(λίμιτ)	= ὅριον
line	(λάϊν)	= γραμμή, οὐρὰ
list	(λιστ)	= κατάλογος (catalogue)
load	(λόου-ντ)	= φορτώνω
loaf	(λόουφ)	= καρβέλι
local	(λόκαλ)	= ντόπιος, τοπικὸς-ἡ-ὀ
located	(λοκέϊτι-ντ)	= κείμενος -η-ο
location	(λοκέϊchiev)	= τοποθεσία
lock	(λοκ)	= κλειδαριά, κλειδώνω
locomotive	(λόκομοτιβ)	= ἀτμομηχανὴ
lofty	(λόφτι)	= ὑψηλὸς -ἡ-ὀ
ook	(λουκ)	= κοιτάζω, φαίνομαι
look after	(λουκ ἄφτερ)	= φροντίζω
look for	(λουκ φορ)	= ψάχνω
good - looking	(γκου-ντ λούκινγ)	= ὅμορφος (nice)
lovely	(λάβλι)	= ἀξιαγάπητος -η-ο
luck	(λακ)	= τύχη
lucky	(λάκι)	= τυχερὸς -ἡ-ὀ
lumber	(λάμπερ)	= ξυλεία

Mm

machine	(μαchìν)	= μηχανὴ
machinery	(μαchíνερι)	= μηχανήματα
magazine	(μάγκαζιν)	= περιοδικὸ
magnificent	(μα-γκνίφισεν-τ)	= μεγαλοπρεπὴς
maiden	(μέϊντ'ν)	= κορίτσι ἀνύπαντρο
by air mail	(μπάϊ έερ μέϊλ)	= μὲ ἀεροπορικὸ ταχυδρομεῖο
mailman	(μέϊλμαεν)	= ταχυδρόμος (postman)

majority	(μαντjόριτι)	= πλειονότης, πλειοψηφία
make up	(μέϊκ απ)	= ἀποτελῶ
manage	(μεάνετj)	= κατορθώνω, διευθύνω
manner	(μάνερ)	= τρόπος
manufacture	(μανουφάκτchιουρ)	= βιομηχανία, κατασκευάζω
march	(μαρτch)	= βαδίζω, ἐλαύνω
marriage	(μαέριντj)	= γάμος
master	(μάστερ)	= ἀφεντικὸ
match	(ματch)	= σπίρτο
material	(ματίριαλ)	= ὑλικὸ
building material	(μπίλ-ντινγκ ματίριαλ)	= οἰκοδομήσιμο ὑλικὸ
mayor	(μέϊγιορ)	= δήμαρχος
mean	(μιν)	= ἐννοῶ
melt	(μελτ)	= λυώνω
member	(μέμπερ)	= μέλος
mend	(μεντ)	= μπαλώνω
mention	(μένchev)	= ἀναφέρω
merchant	(μέρτchαν-τ)	= ἔμπορος
merry	(μέρι)	= χαρούμενος (gay)
meter	(μετερ)	= μέτρο
method	(μέθε-ντ)	= μέθοδος (manner, system)
middle	(μιν-τλ)	= μέσον μέση
middlename	(μιντλνέϊμ)	= μεσαῖο ὄνομα
mill	(μιλ)	= μύλος
mind	(μάϊντ)	= μνήμη, διανόηση, θυμᾶμαι
mirror	(μίρερ)	= καθρέφτης (looking glass)
miserable	(μίζερα-μπ'λ)	= ἄθλιος, δυστυχισμένος -η-ο
miss	(μις)	= μοῦ λείπει κάτι ἢ κάποιος, νιώθω τὴν ἔλλειψή του
mistake	(μιστέϊκ)	= λάθος
mistaken	(μιστέϊκεν)	= λανθασμένος -η -ο

mix	(μιξ)	= ἀνακατώνω
mixture	(μιξτchep)	= μίγμα
moment	(μόμεντ)	= στιγμὴ (instant)
just a moment	(ντjαστ ε μόμεντ)	= μιὰ στιγμὴ
monkey	(μάνκι)	= μαϊμοὺ
monument	(μόνιουμεν-τ)	= μνημεῖο
moon	(μουν)	= σελήνη
motoring	(μότορινγ)	= ὁδήγηση
mountain	(μάουν-τιν)	= βουνὸ
munition	(μιουνίchev)	= πολεμοφόδια
murderer	(μέρντερερ)	= δολοφόνος
music	(μιούζιχ)	= μουσικὴ
musical	(μιούζικαλ)	= μουσικὴ κωμωδία, μιούζικαλ

Nn

name	(νέϊμ)	= ὀνομάζω, διορίζω, ὄνομα
narrow	(ναέροου)	= στενὸς -ὴ-ὸ
national	(ναéchιοναλ)	= ἐθνικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
native	(νέϊτιβ)	= ντόπιος, ἰθαγενὴς
natural	(νέϊτchιουραλ)	= φυσικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
naturally	(ναέτchουραλι)	= φυσικὰ
navigable	(ναβι-γκέϊμπ'λ)	= πλωτὸς -ὴ-ὸ
navigation	(ναβιγκέϊchev)	= ναυσιπλοΐα
nearly	(νίιρλι)	= σχεδὸν
neadle	(νίιντλ)	= βελόνα
Negro	(νίγκρο)	= Νέγρος
neighbor or neighbour	(νέϊμπερ)	= γείτονας -ισσα
neighboring	(νέϊμπορινγκ)	= γειτονικὸς -ὴ- ὸ
neither...not	(νίδερ....νορ)	= οὔτε... οὔτε
nervous	(νέρβες)	= νευρικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
nickname	(νικνέϊμ)	= ὑποκοριστικὸ
noise	(νόϊζ)	= θόρυβος
noisy	(νόϊζι)	= θορυβώδης -ης -ες

none	(νάν)	= οὐδεὶς -μία-ἐν
nonsense	(νόνσενς)	= ἀνοησία
north	(νορθ)	= βορρᾶς
notice	(νότις)	= ἀνακοίνωση, παρατήρηση, εἰδοποίηση ἀπολύσεως
notify	(νότιφαϊ)	= inform by a note, γνωστοποιῶ
novel	(νόβελ)	= μυθιστόρημα
numerous	(νούμερες)	= πολυάριθμος, -η -ο

Oo

oats	(όουτς)	= βρώμη
object	(όμπντjεκτ)	= ἀντικείμενο
obtain	(ομπτέϊν)	= ἀποκτῶ
ocean	(óchev)	= ὠκεανὸς
ocean liner	(óchev λάϊνερ)	= ὑπερωκεάνιο
occupation	(οκιουπέϊchev)	= ἀπασχόληση
occur	(οκιοὺρ)	= συμβαίνει
offer	(όφερ)	= προσφέρω
official	(οφιchαλ)	= ἐπίσημος -η-ο, ἀξιωματοῦχος
oil	(όϊλ)	= λάδι, πετρέλαιο
O.K.	(ο-κέϊ)	= ἐν τάξει (all right)
omission	(ομίchev)	= παράλειψη
omit	(ομίτ)	= παραλείπω
operator	(οπερέϊτερ)	= χειριστὴς
opportunity	(οπορτιούνιτι)	= εὐκαιρία
order	(όρντερ)	= διαταγή, παραγγελία, διατάζω
in order to	(ιν όρντερ του)	= γιὰ νὰ
(it is) out of order	(άουτ οφ όρντερ)	= χαλασμένος -η-ο
ordinary	(όρντινέρι)	= τακτικός, κανονικὸς -ὴ-ὸ, συνήθης (usual, customary)

original	(ορί-ντjιναλ)	= ἀρχικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
overcoat	(όβερκοουτ)	= πανωφόρι
overflow	(όβερφλόου)	= ξεχύνομαι
overlook	(όβερλουκ)	= δεσπόζω
owner	(όουνερ)	= ἰδιοκτήτης

Pp

package	(πάκιντj)	= πακέτο (bundle)
pain	(πέϊν)	= πόνος
pair	(πέερ)	= ζευγάρι
parade	(παρέϊντ)	= παρέλαση
park	(παρκ)	= πάρκο
parenthesis	(παερένθισις)	= παρένθεση
party	(πάρτι)	= τὸ πάρτυ, κόμμα (πολιτικὸ)
pass	(pass)	= περνῶ
pasture	(πάστιουρ)	= βοσκὴ
patience	(πέϊchενς)	= ὑπομονὴ
patient	(πέϊchεντ)	= ὑπομονητικὸς
patio	(πάτιο)	= αὐλὴ σπιτιοῦ
patriot	(πάτριοτ)	= πατριώτης
pause	(πόουζ)	= παύω, σταματῶ, παύση (stop)
pavement	(πέϊβμεντ)	= δάπεδο,πλακόστρωτο
pea	(πίι)	= μπιζέλι
peninsula	(πενίνσουλα)	= χερσόνησος
perfect	(πέρφεκτ)	= τέλειος -α-ο
perhaps	(περhὰπς)	= ἴσως
period	(πίριο-ντ)	= περίοδος
permanent	(περμάνεν-τ)	= μόνιμος -η-ο
permit	(περμίτ)	= ἐπιτρέπω (allow)
person	(πέρσ'ν)	= πρόσωπο
personal	(πέρσεναλ)	= προσωπικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
persuade	(περσουέϊ-ντ)	= πείθω

petrol	(πέτρολ)	= βενζίνη (gasoline)
phone	(φον)	= telephone
dial phone	(ντάϊαλ φον)	= αὐτόματο τηλέφωνο
pickpocket	(πικπόκετ)	= πορτοφολάς, κλέφτης, λωποδύτης
pick out	(πικ άουτ)	= διαλέγω
pick up	(πίκαπ)	= τὸ πίκ ἄπ
pick up	(πικ απ)	= μαζεύω (gather)
pictures	(πίκτchepζ)	= κινηματογράφος (movies)
picturesque	(πίκτchιουρεσκ)	= γραφικὸς -ή-ὁ
pier	(πίιρ)	= ἀποβάθρα
pig	(πι-γκ)	= γουρούνι
pill	(πιλ)	= χάπι
pioneers	(παϊονιερς)	= ἄποικος, πρωτοπόρος
pity	(πίτι)	= οἶκτος
plain	(πλέϊν)	= πεδιάδα
plan	(πλαεν)	= σχεδιάζω
plan	(πλαεν)	= σχέδιο
plane	(πλέϊν)	= ἀεροπλάνο
plant	(πλαεν-τ)	= φυτὸ
plant	(πλαεν-τ)	= φυτεύω
plantation	(πλαν-τέϊchev)	= φυτεία
plate	(πλέϊτ)	= πιάτο
play	(πλέϊ)	= θεατρικὸ ἔργο
please	(πλίϊζ)	= προξενῶ εὐχαρίστηση
plenty	(πλέν-τι)	= ἄφθονος -η -ο
pocket	(πόκετ)	= τσέπη
poem	(πόεμ)	= ποίημα
point	(πόϊν-τ)	= σημεῖο, αἰχμὴ
poor	(πουρ)	= φτωχὸς (needy)
popular	(πόπιουλερ)	= δημοφιλὴς
populated	(πόπιουλέϊτι-ντ)	= κατοικημένος -η-ο
porch	(πορτch)	= πύλη, προπύλαια
port	(πορτ)	= λιμάνι
possess	(ποζὲς)	= κατέχω (own)

possession	(ποζέchev)	= κατοχὴ
possessive	(ποζέσιβ)	= κτητικὸς -ὴ -ὸ
post	(ποστ)	= ταχυδρομῶ, στρατιωτικὸ φυλάκιο, θέση (ἔμμισθη)
postman	(πόστμαεν)	= ταχυδρόμος
pot	(ποτ)	= δοχεῖον
pottery	(πότερι)	= ἀγγειοπλαστικὴ
pound	(πάουντ)	= λίτρα (454 γραμμάρια)
pour	(πόουρ)	= ξεχύνομαι
power	(πάουερ)	= δύναμη
water power	(γουότερ πάουερ)	= ὑδροηλεκτρικὴ ἐνέργεια, λευκὸς ἄνθραξ
practical	(πράκτικαλ)	= πρακτικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
prepare	(πριπέαρ)	= προετοιμάζω
preparation	(πρεπαρέϊchev)	= προετοιμασία
prescription	(πρεσκρίπchev)	= συνταγὴ
present	(πρέζεν-τ)	= παρών, -οῦσα -όν, Ἐνεστὼς
present	(πριζὲν-τ)	= παρουσιάζω, δῶρο (gift)
preserve	(πριζὲρβ)	= διαφυλάσσω
president	(πρέζι-ντεν-τ)	= πρόεδρος
price	(πράϊς)	= τιμὴ
primitive	(πρίμιτιβ)	= πρωτόγονος -η-ο
private	(πράϊβετ)	= ἰδιωτικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
probable	(πρόμπα-μπλ)	= πιθανὸς -ὴ-ὸ
probably	(πρόμπα-μπλι)	= πιθανὸν
problem	(πρό-μπλεμ)	= πρόβλημα
prodigal	(πρό-ντιγκαλ)	= ἄσωτος -η-ο
product	(προ-ντάκτ)	= προϊὸν
profession	(προφέchev)	= ἐπάγγελμα
professionall	(προφέchevαλ)	= ἐπαγγελματικός-ὴ-ό, ἐπαγγελματίας
professor	(προφέσερ)	= καθηγητὴς
profound	(προφάουντ)	= βαθὺς -ιὰ-ὺ (deep)

program	(πρό-γκραμ)	= πρόγραμμα
progress	(πρό-γκρες)	= πρόοδος
promise	(πρόμις)	= ὑπόσχομαι
promise	(πρόμιζ)	= ὑπόσχεση, ὑπόσχομαι
pronoun	(προνάουν)	= ἀντωνυμία
proof	(προυφ)	= ἀπόδειξη
property	(πρόπερτι)	= ἰδιοκτησία (ownership)
proposal	(προπόζαλ)	= πρόταση
propose	(προπόουζ)	= προτείνω
proposition	(προποζίchev)	= πρόταση
prosperous	(πρόσπερες)	= εὐημερῶν, εὔπορος
protect	(προτὲκτ)	= προστατεύω
proud	(πράου-ντ)	= περήφανος
province	(πρόβινς)	= ἐπαρχία
provide	(προβάϊ-ντ)	= προμηθεύω
publishing house	(πάμπλιchιvγ haους)	= ἐκδοτικὸς οἶκος
put off	(πουτ οφ)	= ἀναβάλλω

Qq

quality	(κουόλιτι)	= ποιότητα
quantity	(κουά-ντιτι)	= ποσότητα
quarrel	(κουόρελ)	= καυγαδίζω
quarter	(κουόρτερ)	= συνοικία
Queen	(κουὴν)	= βασίλισσα
question	(κουέστchev)	= ἐρώτηση, ἀνάκριση, ἀνακρίνω
questioner	(κουέστchevvερ)	= αὐτὸς ποὺ ὑποβάλλει ἐρωτήσεις
quick	(κουΐκ)	= γρήγορος -η-ο
quickly	(κουΐκλι)	= γρήγορα
quite	(κουάϊτ)	= σχεδὸν

Rr

race	(ρέϊς)	= ἀγώνας
radiator	(ρα-ντιέτορ)	= καλοριφὲρ
radical	(ρά-ντικαλ)	= ριζικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
ratio	(ράcho)	= ἀναλογία
radish	(ραέ-ντιch)	= ραδίκι
railing	(ρέϊλινγ)	= κάγκελλο
railroad	(ρέϊλρόου-ντ)	= σιδηρόδρομος
raincoat	(ρέϊν-κοουτ)	= ἀδιάβροχο
rainy	(ρέϊνι)	= βροχερὸς -ὴ-ὸ
raise	(ρέϊζ)	= καλλιεργῶ
raise	(ρέϊζ)	= ὑψώνω (lift)
ranch	(ραν-τch)	= κτῆμα
rapid	(ραέπιντ)	= γρήγορος -η -ο
rare	(ρεερ)	= σπάνιος
rarely	(ρέρλι)	= σπάνια (seldom)
rather	(ράδερ)	= μᾶλλον
razor	(ρέϊζερ)	= ξυράφι
ready - made	(ρέντι μέϊντ)	= ἕτοιμο (ροῦχο), δηλαδὴ ὄχι ἐπὶ παραγγελλία
real	(ρίαλ)	= πραγματικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
real estate company	(ρίαλ εστέϊτ κόμπανι)	= κτηματικὴ ἑταιρία
realize	(ριαλάϊζ)	= ἀντιλαμβάνομαι
really	(ρίαλι)	= πραγματικὰ
reason	(ρίζεν)	= ἀφορμή, αἰτία
receive	(ρισίιβ)	= λαμβάνω
receiver	(ρισίιβερ)	= δέκτης, ἀκουστικὸ τηλεφώνου
pick up the receiver	(πικ απ δε ρισίιβερ)	= σηκώνω τὸ ἀκουστικὸ
recent	(ρίσεν-τ)	= πρόσφατος -η-ο
recently	(ρίσεν-τλι)	= προσφάτως

reciprocal	(ρισίπροκαλ)	= ἀμοιβαῖος -α-ο (mutual) ἀλληλοπαθὴς (ἀντωνυμία)
record	(ρικόρντ)	= δίσκος γραμμοφώνου
record player	(ρικόρντ πλέγιερ)	= πὶκ ἄπ
refinery	(ρεφάϊνερι)	= διυλιστήριο
reflexive	(ριφλέξιβ)	= αὐτοπαθὴς -ὲς
refuse	(ριφιοὺζ)	= ἀρνοῦμαι
regard	(ρι-γκάρντ)	= παρατηρῶ, ἐκτιμῶ
regards	(ρι-γκάρντζ)	= χαιρετίσματα
region	(ρίντjιον)	= περιοχὴ
regularly	(ρέγκιουλαρλι)	= ὁμαλὰ
reign	(ρέϊν)	= βασιλεία
relative	(ρέλατιβ)	= ἀναφορικός -ή -ὸ σχετικός, συγγενὴς
remain	(ριμέϊν)	= παραμένω
remark	(ριμάρκ)	= παρατηρῶ (observe) παρατήρηση (observation)
remind someone of something	(ριμάϊντ σάμουαν οβ σάμθινγ)	= θυμίζω σὲ κάποιον κάτι
repair	(ριπέαρ)	= ἐπιδιορθώνω
reply	(ριπλάϊ)	= ἀπαντῶ (answer, respond), ἀπάντηση
represent	(ρεπριζὲν-τ)	= ἀντιπροσωπεύω
representative	(ρεπριζέν-τατιβ)	= ἀντιπρόσωπος
representative	(ριπρεζέντατιβ)	= ἀντιπροσωπευτικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
republic	(ριπάμπλικ)	= δημοκρατία
rescue	(ρέσκιου)	= σώζω
resemble	(ριζέμπ'λ)	= ὁμοιάζω
reservation	(ρεζερβέϊchev)	= κρατῶ θέσεις
rest	(ρεστ)	= ὑπόλοιπο
result	(ριζάλτ)	= ἀποτέλεσμα
retail store	(ριτέϊλ στορ)	= κατάστημα λιανικῆς πωλήσεως
return	(ριτὲρν)	= ἐπιστρέφω, ἐπιστροφὴ

revolution	(ρεβολιούchev)	= ἐπανάσταση
rich	(ριτch)	= πλούσιος -α-ο
ride	(ράϊ-ντ)	= ὀχοῦμαι, καβαλι-κεύω
right now	(ράϊτ νάου)	= αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμὴ
ring	(ριγκ)	= δαχτυλίδι
ring	(ριγκ)	= χτυπῶ (τὸ κουδούνι), σημαίνω
rise	(ράϊζ)	= ὑψώνομαι
robe	(ρόουμπ)	= χιτώνας
rock	(ροκ)	= βράχος
roll	(ρολ)	= κυλῶ
roof	(ρουφ)	= στέγη
rose	(ρόουζ)	= τριαντάφυλλο, τὸ χρῶμα ρὸζ
rough	(ραφ)	= ἄγριος, τραχὺς-ιὰ-ὺ
route	(ρουτ)	= δρόμος
rub	(ρα-μπ)	= τρίβω
ruin	(ρούϊν)	= καταστρέφω
run	(ραν)	= τρέχω
runner	(ράνερ)	= δρομεὺς
rye	(ράϊ)	= σίκαλις, βρύζα

Ss

sad	(σα-ντ)	= λυπημένος-η-ο
safe	(σέϊφ)	= ἀσφαλὴς
sail	(σέϊλ)	= πλέω
sailor	(σέϊλορ)	= ναύτης
ame	(σέϊμ)	= ἴδιος -α-ο
save	(σέϊβ)	= σώζω (rescue)
scissors	(σίζερζ)	= ψαλίδι
scrambled [eggs]	(σκράμπλντ) ([ε-γκζ])	= ὀμελέτα μὲ αὐγὰ
seaside	(σίισάϊντ)	= ἀκροθαλασσιὰ
seem	(σίϊμ)	= φαίνομαι

seize	(σίϊζ)	= πιάνω
select	(σιλέκτ)	= διαλέγω
selection	(σιλέκchev)	= ἐκλογή, διαλογὴ
senate	(σένιτ)	= γερουσία
senator	(σένατερ)	= γερουσιαστὴς
send	(σεντ)	= στέλνω
sense	(σενς)	= αἴσθηση, νοῦς, λογικὴ
separate	(σέπαρέϊτ)	= ξεχωριστὸς -ὴ -ό, ξεχωρίζω
serious	(σίριες)	= σοβαρὸς -ὴ-ὸ
servant	(σέρβαν-τ)	= ὑπηρέτης
serve	(σερβ)	= ὑπηρετῶ
service	(σέρβις)	= ὑπηρεσία
settle	(σέτλ)	= ἐγκαθίσταμαι
settlement	(σέτλεμεν-τ)	= ἐγκατάσταση
settler	(σέτλερ)	= ἄποικος
sex	(σὲξ)	= φῦλο
shadow	(chaé-ντοου)	= σκιὰ
shake	(chéϊκ)	= τινάζω, κλονίζω
shake hand	(chéϊκ haεντζ)	= ἀνταλλάσσω χειραψία
shame	(chéϊμ)	= ντροπὴ
shameful	(chéϊμφουλ)	= ντροπιαστικὸς
shameless	(shéϊμλες)	= ἀδιάντροπος, ξετσίπωτος
shape	(chéϊπ)	= σχῆμα
share	(chéαρ)	= μοιράζομαι μερίδιο
shave	(chéϊβ)	= ξυρίζω, ξύρισμα
sheep	(chίιπ)	= πρόβατο, α
shelter	(chéλτερ)	= καταφεύγω, προφυλάγω
shine	(cháϊν)	= λάμπω
ship	(chiπ)	= καράβι
shipping lines	(chίπινγκ λάϊνς)	= ἀτμοπλοϊκὲς γραμμὲς
shirt	(chepτ)	= πουκάμισο
shoe	(chou)	= παπούτσι

shoot	(chouτ)	= πυροβολῶ, σκοτώνω
shore	(chop)	= ἀκτὴ
shrine	(chpάϊν)	= βωμός, τέμενος
shot	(choτ)	= ἔνεση, πυροβολισμὸς
shoulder	(chóλντερ)	= ὦμος
show	(chóου)	= δείχνω
sideways	(σάϊ-ντγουέϊζ)	= λοξὰ
sight	(σάϊτ)	= ὄψη, θέα
sign	(σάϊν)	= ὑπογράφω
sign	(σάϊν)	= σημάδι
signal	(σίγκναλ)	= σύνθημα
signature	(σίγκνετchep)	= ὑπογραφὴ
significant	(σι-γκνίφικαν-τ)	= σημαντικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
silk	(σιλκ)	= μετάξι, μεταξωτὸς-ὴ -ὸ
silver	(σίλβερ)	= ἀσήμι
simple	(σιμ-πλ)	= ἁπλὸς -ὴ-ὸ
simply	(σίμ-πλι)	= ἁπλῶς
sin	(σιν)	= ἁμαρτία, ἁμαρτάνω
sincere	(σινσίιρ)	= εἰλικρινὴς -ὴς-ὲς
sincerely	(σινσίιρλι)	= εἰλικρινὰ
size	(σάϊζ)	= μέγεθος
in size	(ιν σάϊζ)	= σὲ μέγεθος
skirt	(σκερτ)	= φούστα
sky	(σκάϊ)	= οὐρανὸς
slow	(σλόου)	= ἀργὸς -ὴ-ὸ
slowly	(σλόουλι)	= ἀργὰ
smart	(σμαρτ)	= κομψὸς
smile	(σμάϊλ)	= χαμογελῶ, χαμόγελο
soap	(σόουπ)	= σαπούνι
social	(σόchαλ)	= κοινωνικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
society	(σοσάϊετι)	= κοινωνία
sofa	(σόφα)	= καναπὲς
soil	(σόϊλ)	= ἔδαφος
soldier	(σόλντjερ)	= στρατιώτης
something	(σάμθινγ)	= κάτι
sorethroat	(σόορθροουτ)	= πονόλαιμος
sort	(σορτ)	= εἶδος

south	(σάουθ)	= νότος
souvenir	(σουβενίρ)	= ἐνθύμιον
sow, sowed, sown	(σοου)	= σπέρνω
space	(σπέϊς)	= χῶρος
spare	(σπέερ)	= βάζω στὴ μπάντα, ἐξοικονομῶ
speaker	(σπίκερ)	= ὁμιλητὴς
spectacular	(σπεκτάκιουλαρ)	= θεαματικὸς -ἡ-ὁ
speed	(σπι-ντ)	= ταχύτητα
spin	(σπιν)	= κλώθω
in spite of	(ιν σπάϊτ οφ)	= παρ' ὅλον ὅ,τι, μολονότι
spread	(σπρε-ντ)	= ἁπλώνω
sport	(σπορτ)	= σπόρ, ἀθλητισμὸς
spot	(σποτ)	= τοποθεσία, σημεῖο
square	(σκουέερ)	= πλατεῖα
stair	(στέερ)	= σκαλὶ
stamp	(σταεμ-π)	= γραμματόσημο
stand	(σταεντ)	= στέκομαι
stand up	(σταεντ απ)	= στέκομαι ὄρθιος
star	(σταρ)	= ἀστέρι
stately	(στέϊτλι)	= ἐπιβλητικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
statement	(στέϊτμεν-τ)	= ἔκθεση
station	(στέϊchen)	= στάση, σιδηροδρομικὸς σταθμὸς
statue	(στέϊτchιου)	= ἄγαλμα
steak	(στέϊκ)	= μπριζόλα
steal	(στιλ)	= κλέβω
stealthily	(στέλθιλι)	= κλεφτά, κρυφά, ὕποπτα
stealthy	(στέλθι)	= κλεφτός, κρυφός, ὕποπτος
steaple	(στιπλ)	= καμπαναριὸ
stethoscope	(στίθοσκοοπ)	= στηθοσκόπιο
stick	(στικ)	= ραβδὶ
still	(στιλ)	= μέχρι τώρα, μέχρι τότε
stockyard	(στόκιαρντ)	= σφαγεῖον

stomach	(στόμαχ)	= στομάχι
stone	(στόουν)	= πέτρα
store window	(στορ γουΐντοου)	= βιτρίνα καταστήματος
storm	(στορμ)	= θύελλα
stormy	(στόρμι)	= θυελλώδης
straight	(στρέϊτ)	= κατ' εὐθείαν
strange	(στρέϊντj)	= παράξενος -η-ο
stream	(στρίιμ)	= ρεῦμα
stretch	(στρετch)	= ἐκτείνομαι
strike	(στράϊκ)	= χτυπῶ, προσκρούω, ἀπεργῶ, ἀπεργία
string beans	(στριγκ μπίινζ)	= φασολάκια πράσινα
strong	(στρογκ)	= δυνατὸς -ὴ-ὸ
stuff	(σταφ)	= ὑλικὸ
stupid	(στιούπι-ντ)	= ἀνόητος -η-ο
style	(στάϊλ)	= στὺλ
subway	(σάμπγουέϊ)	= ὑπόγειος ἠλεκτρικὸς σιδηρόδρομος, μετρὸ
sudden	(σά-ντ'ν)	= ξαφνικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
suddenly	(σά-ντενλι)	= ξαφνικὰ
suffer	(σάφερ)	= ὑποφέρω
sugar	(choú-γκαρ)	= ζάχαρη
suggestion	(σατjέστchev)	= ὑποβολὴ
suit	(σιοὺτ)	= κουστούμι
supply	(σαπλάϊ)	= προμηθεύω, προμήθεια
supply	(σαπλάϊ)	= προμήθεια
suppose	(σαπόουζ)	= ὑποθέτω
sure	(choup)	= σίγουρος (certain)
surface	(σάρφεϊς)	= ἐπιφάνεια
surname	(σερνέϊμ)	= ἐπώνυμο
surprice	(σερπράϊζ)	= ἔκπληξη, ἐκπλήσσω
suspend	(σασπὲντ)	= παραμελῶ, ἀναβάλλω
sweater	(σουέτερ)	= πλεκτὴ φανέλλα
Sweden	(σουΐντεν)	= Σουηδία

sweep	(σουìπ)	= σαρώνω, σκουπίζω
sweet	(σουὶτ)	= γλυκὸς -ιὰ -ὸ
symbolize	(σίμπολάϊζ)	= συμβολίζω

Tt

table lamp	(τέϊ-μπλ λαμ-π)	= λαμπατὲρ (τραπεζιοῦ)
tail	(τέϊλ)	= οὐρὰ
take off	(τέϊκ οφ)	= βγάζω ἀπὸ πάνω μου
take no notice	(τέϊκ νόου νότις)	= δὲν δίνω σημασία
tailor	(τέϊλορ)	= ράφτης
tannery	(ταένερι)	= βυρσοδεψεῖο
tap	(ταπ)	= βρύση
tax	(ταεξ)	= φόρος
taxi	(ταέξι)	= ταξὶ
textile mill	(τέξτιλ μιλ)	= ὑφαντουργεῖο
Thames	(τέϊμς)	= ὁ Τάμεσις
thanks to...	(θενκς του...)	= χάρις εἰς ...
thick	(θικ)	= παχύς, πυκνὸς -ὴ-ὸ
thickly	(θίκλι)	= πυκνὰ
thin	(θιν)	= λεπτὸς -ὴ-ὸ
though	(δόου)	= ἂν καὶ (although)
thread	(θρε-ντ)	= κλωστὴ
thriving	(θράϊβινγ)	= εὐημερῶ
throat	(θρόουτ)	= λάρυγγας
thunder	(θάντερ)	= κεραυνὸς
ticket	(τίκετ)	= εἰσιτήριο
a long time	(α λόνγκ τάϊμ)	= πολὺν καιρὸ
tip	(τιπ)	= δίνω φιλοδώρημα
we should take	(ούϊ chou-ντ τέϊκ)	= θὰ ἔπρεπε γὰ πάρουμε
tobacco	(τομπαέκο)	= καπνὸς
tomb	(τοὺμπ)	= τάφος
tool	(τουλ)	= μηχάνημα, ἐργαλεῖο

toothbrush	(τούθμπραch)	=	ὀδοντόβουρτσα
toothpaste	(τούθπέϊστ)	=	ὀδοντόπαστα
top	(τοπ)	=	κορυφὴ
touch	(τaτch)	=	ἐγγίζω, ἀφὴ
tourism	(τούρισμ)	=	τουρισμὸς
tourist	(τούριστ)	=	τουρίστας
towel	(τάουελ)	=	πετσέτα
tulip	(τούλιπ)	=	τουλίπα
tendency	(τέντενσι)	=	τάση
tractor	(τράκτερ)	=	τρακτὲρ
trade	(τρέϊ-ντ)	=	ἐμπόριο
tradition	(τρα-ντίσhev)	=	παράδοση
traffic	(τράφικ)	=	κυκλοφορία, ἐμπόριο
train	(τρέϊν)	=	ἐξασκῶ, γυμνάζω
train	(τρέεν)	=	τραῖνο
transfer	(τρανσφὲρ)	=	ἀλλάζω θέση, ἀλλάζω λεωφορεῖο, μετατόπιση
translate	(τρανσλέϊτ)	=	μεταφράζω
means of transportation	(míινς οβ τρανσπορτέϊchev)	=	μέσα συγκοινωνίας
travel	(τραέβελ)	=	ταξιδεύω
traveller	(τράβελερ)	=	ταξιδιώτης
tree	(τρίι)	=	δέντρο
tribal	(τράϊ-μπαλ)	=	φυλετικὸς -ὴ-ὸ
tribe	(τράϊ-μπ)	=	φυλὴ
trouble	(τρα-μπλ)	=	φασαρία
truck	(τρακ)	=	φορτηγὸ αὐτοκίνητο
true	(τρου)	=	ἀληθινὸς -ὴ-ὸ
truth	(τρουθ)	=	ἀλήθεια
truthful	(τρούθφουλ)	=	φιλαλήθης, εἰλικρινὴς
turn	(τερν)	=	στρέφω, γυρίζω
type	(τάϊπ)	=	δακτυλογραφῶ
typewrite	(τάϊπράϊτ)	=	δακτυλογραφῶ
typewriter	(τάϊπράϊτερ)	=	γραφομηχανή, δακτυλογράφος

typical	(τύπικαλ)	=	τυπικὸς
typing	(τάϊπινγκ)	=	δακτυλογράφηση (typewriting)

Uu

ugliness	(ά-γκλινες)	=	ἀσχήμια
uncertain	(ανσέρτ'ν)	=	ἀβέβαιος -η-ο (indeterminate)
uncertainty	(ανσέρτι-ν-τι)	=	ἀβεβαιότητα
uncomfortable	(ανκόμφορτα-μπλ)	=	ἄβολος, στενόχωρος -η-ο
unexpected	(ανεξπέκτι-ντ)	=	ἀπροσδόκητος -η-ο
unfortunate	(ανφόρτchιουνεϊτ)	=	ἄτυχος -η -ο
unit	(γιούνιτ)	=	μονάδα
unload	(ανλόου-ντ)	=	ξεφορτώνω
unknown soldier	(αν-νόουν σόλντjερ)	=	Ἄγνωστος Στρατιώτης
unsafe	(ανσέϊφ)	=	ἐπισφαλὴς
upper	(άπερ)	=	ἀνώτερος -η -ο
upstairs	(άπστεεζ)	=	στὸ πάνω πάτωμα
urge	(ερτj)	=	προτρέπω, προτροπὴ
use	(γιοὺς)	=	χρήση
useful	(γιούσφουλ)	=	χρήσιμος —η -ο

Vv

varied	(βάριεντ)	=	ποικίλος
verb	(βερμπ)	=	ρῆμα
very	(βέρι)	=	πολὺ
vicinity	(βισίνιτι)	=	πέριξ, γύρω
victory	(βίκτορι)	=	νίκη

view	(βιού)	= θέα, ἄποψη
vitamin	(βάϊταμιν)	= βιταμίνη
voice	(βόϊς)	= φωνὴ
volume	(βόλιουμ)	= ὄγκος
vote	(βόοτ)	= ψηφίζω
vowel	(βάουελ)	= φωνῆεν
voyage	(βόγιεντj)	= ταξίδι

Ww

waiting room	(γουέτινγ ρουμ)	= αἴθουσα ἀναμονῆς
wait on	(γουέϊτ ον)	= ἐξυπηρετῶ
wander	(γουάντερ)	= περιπλανῶμαι
war	(γουὸρ)	= πόλεμος
warlike	(γουόρλαϊκ)	= πολεμοχαρὴς
warn	(γουὸρν)	= προειδοποιῶ
waste	(γουέϊστ)	= χέρσος, ἐρημώνω, σπαταλῶ
water front	(γουότερ φρον-τ)	= παραλία, προκυμαία
water way	(γουότερ γουέϊ)	= πλωτὸς δρόμος
way	(γουέϊ)	= δρόμος, τρόπος
by the way	(μπάϊ δε γουέϊ)	= μ' αὐτὴ τὴν εὐκαιρία
wear	(γουὲρ)	= φοράω
weave-wove-woven	(γουὴβ)	= ὑφαίνω
wedding	(γουέ-ντινγ)	= γάμος
weep	(γουίπ)	= κλαίω
well done	(γουέλ ντὰν)	= καλοψημένος (καλοφτιαγμένος)
weigh	(γουέϊ)	= βαραίνω
weight	(γουέϊτ)	= βάρος
welcome	(γουέλκαμ)	= καλωσορίζω
as well as	(αεζ γουὲλ αεζ)	= ὡς ἐπίσης καὶ
west	(γουὲστ)	= δύση
westward	(γουέστγουορ-ντ)	= πρὸς δυσμὰς
wet	(γουὲτ)	= βρεγμένος, ὑγρὸς

wharf	(γουόρφ)	= ἀποβάθρα
what a pity!	(γουότ ε πίτι)	= τί κρῖμα!
wheat	(houῆτ)	= σιτάρι
whereas	(γουέεραζ)	= ἐνῶ
while	(houάϊλ)	= ἐνῶ, ἐνόσω
whip	(houίπ)	= μαστίγιο, μαστιγώνω
wholesale	(hoλσέϊλ)	= χονδρικὴ πώληση
wilderness	(γουάϊλντερνες)	= ἀγριότητα, ἐρημότοπος
will	(γουίλ)	= θέληση, διαθήκη
wind	(γουίντ)	= ἄνεμος
wine	(γουάϊν)	= κρασὶ
wire	(γουάϊρ)	= σύρμα
wish	(γουίch)	= ἐπιθυμῶ, εὔχομαι, εὐχὴ (desire)
without	(ουϊδάουτ)	= χωρὶς
wonder	(γουοντερ)	= ἀπορῶ
wood	(γου-ντ)	= ξύλο, δάσος
wool	(γουλ)	= μαλλὶ
workman	(γουέρκμαεν)	= ἐργάτης (worker)
worship	(γουόρchiπ)	= λατρεύω
worth	(γουὲρθ)	= ἀξία, ἀξίζω
worthy	(γουὲρθι)	= ἄξιος -α-ο
worker	(γουόρκερ)	= ἐργάτης
write, wrote	(ραϊτ, ρόουτ, ρίτ'ν)	= γράφω
it is written	(ιζ ρίτ'ν)	= εἶναι γραμμένο
wrong	(ρονγ)	= λανθασμένος -η-ο

Yy

yacht	(γιότ)	= γιώτ, θαλαμηγὸς

Zz

zero	(ζίροου)	= μηδὲν

ΠΕΡΙΕΧΟΜΕΝΑ ΤΟΥ Β' ΤΟΜΟΥ